

天珠变

唐家三少◎作品

Ⅱ 翡丽神将

天珠变出，箭定天下。
天珠十二变，一个修炼天珠变的弓箭手传说……



HEAVENLY JEWEL CHANGE

1ST COMPILATION

Tang Jia San Shao

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

Heavenly Jewel Change

(天珠变)

by

Tang Jia San Shao

(唐家三少)

Synopsis

Every human has their Personal Jewel of power, when awakened it can either be an Elemental Jewel or Physical Jewel. They circle the right and left wrists like bracelets of power.

Heavenly Jewels are like the twins born, meaning when both Elemental and Physical Jewels are Awakened for the same person, the pair is known as Heavenly Jewels.

Those who have the Physical Jewels are known as Physical Jewel Masters, those with Elemental Jewels are Elemental Jewel Masters, and those who train with Heavenly Jewels are naturally called Heavenly Jewel Masters.

Heavenly Jewel Masters have a highest level of 12 pairs of jewels, as such their training progress is known as Heavenly Jewels 12 Changes.

Our MC here is an archer who has such a pair of Heavenly Jewels.

Copyright

All rights reserved.

English Translation by Zen @ [Wuxiaworld](#)

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ [Hasseno Blog](#)

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

BOOK 1 – HEAVENLY JEWEL AWAKENS

Chapter 1 – Big Sis, I’m Afraid This Is A Misunderstanding! (1)

Heavenly Bow Empire Capital City, Heavenly Bow City, Official Roads.

Heavenly Bow Empire is a small country in the western regions of Boundless Mainland (Hao Miao Da Lu). It isn’t bound to any larger countries, and its environment and climate are extremely suitable for humans to live in.

The weather was great today, the vast expanse of the sky seemed like a large blue crystal, with nary a blemish in sight. The only issue one might find would be that the clarity of the air caused the sunshine to be rather glaring on the eyes. Luckily, the official roads were lined with 100-year or older Sycamore Trees, their thick branches massed with leaves sheltering the wide roadways. This formed the famous boulevard which everyone in Heavenly Bow Empire knew about, stretching for nearly 100 li (50km) into a forest.

Heavenly Bow City had a very unique geographical location, in fact it could be almost described as second-to-none. This was because this capital city was totally surrounded by huge forests, and Heavenly Bow City was just like a brilliant jewel in the midst of the forest. Although Heavenly Bow Empire wasn’t particularly strong, its capital city was still quite famous. The surrounding forests were called Stars Forest, because this was the only place in the whole continent where the Stars Trees grew. The heart of the Stars Trees were extremely valuable materials in making top end bows. As such, with such an important natural resource, one could

imagine the prosperity that Heavenly Bow City enjoyed.

Currently, a youth who looked around 15-16 years old was walking along the boulevard, muttering to himself.

“To be a playboy is to train the mind, to have an affair is to train the heart, chasing after girls will prevent old age, flirting is therapeutic, having a crush on someone means your heart will always be young, being lovesick is the cure for insomnia!

They often say that [Heroes are unable to cross the beautiful maiden barrier](#), but what hero will think like this? Should the hero leave the beauty to some useless fellow? And what would the beauty think, wouldn't she prefer to have the hero instead as well?

Another saying is that [Rabbits don't eat the grass near their nests](#), but why would rabbits do that? Should they let other rabbits eat the grass? Even the grass won't think like that, after all being eaten is being eaten, does it matter by whom? Why not let someone familiar eat them!

Yet another saying is that [if you have money, you can make the devil push the millstone for you](#), but the devil would think that it's a given thing – after all shouldn't labour of pushing the millstone be rewarded? Even money would think differently, after all, being given to the devil will not harm the devil, but if given to humans the scenario might be different! Hahahaha...”

The youth was tall, with broad shoulders, with a healthy strong look. He had black eyes and hair, and was dressed in a cloth shirt

with its sleeves rolled up, showing off his arms. His skin colour was a healthy sheen of bronze, and his features had a heroic spirit within. He might not be very handsome, but was overall pleasing to the eye. Just judging by outward appearance, the words simple and honest would be an apt description. However, the words that streamed out from his mouth were the total opposite of simple and honest. Of course, he only revealed his true colours when there was nobody else around.

“Sigh... not being able to cultivate heavenly energy is such a tragedy. In today’s day and age, looking good is useless, only heavenly energy and heavenly jewels are king. Ahhhh... Heavens! Earth! Gods! Why do you play me like this, letting I, Zhou Weiqing, be born with such a body with blocked meridians yet such a handsome face? Not letting me be a Heavenly Jewel Master is such a waste of great talent ah!” Of course, the handsome face he referred to was only of his own belief, and as he spoke the youth rudely gave the sky the finger.

Of course, he wasn’t the sort to just blame heaven, after pointing the middle finger he said comfortingly to himself: “Oh well, not being able to cultivate Heavenly Energy has its good side as well. That old geezer is already so strict, if I really awakened a Heavenly Jewel, maybe my life would be worse now by a hundred times? At least now the old geezer has given up on me, and leading the decadent life of a rich official’s son seems not a bad choice. I’ll go take a bath now!” As he spoke, his face revealed his trademark honest smile. Of course, those who really knew him, Zhou Weiqing’s honest smile hid his true rascally nature.

Even though Zhou Weiqing was unable to cultivate heavenly energy, his youthful body was still extremely healthy and strong.

He was only 13 years old this year, and yet he looked like a youth of 15 – 16. At least in this, he was following in his father's footsteps.

After walking about 5 li along the boulevard to the Stars Forest, Zhou Weiqing suddenly swerved into the woods. He had grown up in the woods, especially ever since he was 8 years old when he had tested out to have his meridians blocked and unable to cultivate heavenly energy. Zhou Weiqing's father no longer forced him to train, so his favourite thing to do was to run alone into the forest to play. There were no Heavenly Beasts in the Stars Forest, and it was one of the safest forests on the continent.

After entering the Stars Forest, Zhou Weiqing could practically navigate his way around with his eyes closed, after all he knew the place like the back of his hand. After walking for about an hour, he finally heard sounds of running water as he neared his destination. Thinking about the sweet, clear lakewater, Zhou Weiqing hastened his steps. It was a hot day and he was eager to relax in the cooling waters of the lake.

Not far from the path in the Stars Forest there lay a lake, and its waters originated from an underground ice spring. It was only about 100m in diameter, and was surrounded by large thick trees. As a result, not many people knew about this lake, but Zhou Weiqing had come across it by accident in the past. He had a natural liking for water and since he had no friends, he spent a lot of time bathing and relaxing in the lake.

Moving around a large tree, the Ice Spring Lake was right ahead. Zhou Weiqing did not rush to dive into the waters, but first took off his clothes and laid them at the side, before squatting down at

the edge of the waters to look at his reflection, muttering to himself: “Damn! I’ve become more handsome again!”

Just as he was reflecting on his own looks narcissistically, he suddenly heard a splash, causing him to look up, and the sight that greeted him caused him to gape in surprise.

From the other end of the lake, someone else had just jumped into the water, causing the waters to splash out. As the rays of sunshine shone upon the lake, the refraction of light causing the area to seem to be bathed in gold. In the midst of the water ripples, a head of pink hair captured Zhou Weiqing’s attention.

The Ice Spring Lake’s water was pretty shallow, only a metre or so deep, and the young girl who had leapt into the lake had her back facing Zhou Weiqing, and the lake waters just covered her buttocks. Still, Zhou Weiqing was able to see her slim waist and alluring figure.

“This... this...”

With a light pooh sound, 2 lines of blood streamed down from Zhou Weiqing’s nostrils. Even though this fellow often had sexual fantasies, he was after all still a 13 year old virgin boy, no matter how precocious. Seeing a naked young girl at such close proximity for the first time was so exciting to him that his nose started bleeding.

“Wow, this is so awesome!” Zhou Weiqing quickly held his nose, but his eyes kept staring at the girl, completely forgetting how

exposed he was to being found, he could only chant in his mind
Turn around! Turn around!

As if the pink haired girl had heard his internal prayers, she actually slowly turned around, she seemed excited and her hands were on the top of the water as she turned towards Zhou Weiqing.

It's a chinese saying that means heroes are often susceptible to a pretty face, causing them to be fallen.

Literal translation of another Chinese idiom, it means that even villains won't commit sins close to home. However his rant here is talking on the literal meaning of it.

Money makes the world go round

Chapter 1 – Big Sis, I’m Afraid This Is A Misunderstanding! (2)

Zhou Weiqing’s eyes widened as his dreams were about to come true. Just at that moment, a feminine voice shouted out “Your highness, be careful! There’s someone here!”

Upon hearing the shout, the pink haired girl acted like a startled little bird, quickly ducking into the water up to her neck, as she looked around in panic.

Before Zhou Weiqing could react, he felt his body lighten, and the world spin around him. With a plopping sound, he landed on the ground.

“What happened?” Although Zhou Weiqing was unable to cultivate heavenly energy, but he had been training under his strict father since young, and his body was in a fit condition, definitely stronger and more agile than any commoner, and he executed a roll on the ground before standing up.

About 3 metres in front of him, a young lady of about 20 years of age stood glaring at him. She seemed rather plain looking, and was dressed in leather armor with a sword in hand, with a bow made of Star Wood holstered on her back.

Zhou Weiqing immediately recognized the symbols of Star Flowers etched upon her leather armor, it was reserved only for the Royal household – could this young lady in front of him be a Royal Guard?

What really drew Zhou Weiqing's attention was the 3 Jewels surrounding the lady's right wrist. The 3 jewels were a type of jade, and with Zhou Weiqing's good vision and the radiance of the jade, he could see clearly that it was about 30% Waxy Jade, 30% Ice Jade and 40% Dragonstone Jade.

Even though Zhou Weiqing personally could not cultivate, but he knew that those 3 jewels on her right wrist were no mere ornaments, but a sign of power.

In the Boundless Mainland, a person's actual strength could be determined in 3 ways, and if you stood out in any particular way, you could be considered a strong person. The 3 ways were Heavenly Energy, Physical Jewels and Elemental Jewels.

Humans believed that they were the highest ranked species in the world that the gods have created, and that the human body was truly a gift from the gods. There were many different types of cultivating methods, and the strength achieved from that was known as heavenly energy. Heavenly energy was divided into 4 large hierarchies, Heavenly Jing Energy, Heavenly Xu Energy, Heavenly God Energy, and Heavenly Dao Energy.

Each of those hierarchies were further divided into 12 levels. It was rumoured that someone who had reached the highest level of the Heavenly Dao Energy was able to harness the energies of the universe, able to destroy and create and be extremely long lived. In any case, no matter Physical Jewel Masters or Elemental Jewel Masters, the basics of everything was Heavenly Energy. Without sufficient Heavenly Energy, it did not matter how good the quality

of the Power Jewels were.

In the huge Boundless Mainland, when humans were born, they all had their own inborn Power Jewel. However, nobody could tell in advance what their Jewel was, and only when Heavenly Energy had been cultivated till the 3rd level of Heavenly Jing Energy, would their Power Jewels be Awakened.

The cultivation of Heavenly Jing Energy was extremely difficult, especially the introductory stages, one had to have the talent to communicate with their own Power Jewels to be able to cultivate successfully. The first 3 levels of Heavenly Jing Energy was tantamount to being reborn 3 times, and less than 1% of the population could actually complete it.

Once someone could complete the first 3 levels of Heavenly Jing Energy cultivation and Awaken their Power Jewels, then they would finally break out of being a commoner and take the first step into being a powerhouse. As Zhou Weiqing had blocked meridians and could not cultivate, thus he was doomed to be unable to complete the first 3 levels and Awaken his Power Jewels, and could only be an ordinary person.

Power Jewels had 2 forms after Awakening. Those that appeared around the right wrist were known as Physical Jewels. Those that appeared around the left wrist were known as Elemental Jewels. Physical Jewels and Elemental Jewels were inherently different. In general those with Physical Jewels were strong warriors, and each Physical Jewel could not only strengthen the physical attributes of the Physical Jewel Master, but also coalesce into a weapon or armor piece, which greatly strengthened the Physical Jewel

Master. On the other hand, those with Elemental Jewels were gifted with greater brain energy, and they could make use of their Elemental Jewels to control the various elements they were aligned to, and they could also seal skills into their Elemental Jewels.

For both Physical Jewel Masters and Elemental Jewel Masters, the basic way to tell their strength was the number of jewels. For them, there was a max of 9 Power Jewels, those who had 1-3 Jewels were known as Shi Stage, 4-6 Jewels were known as Zun Stage, and 7-9 Jewels were known as Zong Stage. Each Stage also had an lower, middle and upper level. As such, the lady Royal Guard in front of Zhou Weiqing now was a upper level Shi Stage Physical Jewel Master.

Although Shi Stage was only the first stage, it would be a big mistake to underestimate the 3 Jewelled upper level Shi Stage Physical Jewel Master in front of him. After all, for a small country like Heavenly Bow Empire, the number of Jewel Masters numbered less than a hundred! This lady Royal Guard in front of Zhou Weiqing was probably ranked within the top 50 strongest in the whole country! As such, you can see how rare a Jewel Master was. Having 3 Physical Jewels also meant that her Heavenly Jing Energy was cultivated to at least 10th Level, possibly even already break-through to the Tian Xu Energy hierarchy. With her power, it would be easy for her to defeat a hundred skilled normal soldiers.

Physical Jewels and Elemental Jewels were formed by different types of jewels. For Physical Jewels, they were all formed by different types of Jade, which also meant different types of physical enhancements. There were 6 different type of jade and enhancements, namely: Ice Jade which boosted strength, Waxy

Jade which boosted flexibility, Yellow Jade which boosted toughness, Dragonstone Jade which boosted agility, Red Jade which boosted coordination, and Black Jade which boosted stamina.

All Physical Jewel Masters' jade were a mixture of the different type of jades. With reference to the lady Royal Guard, with 30% Waxy Jade, 30% Ice Jade and 40% Dragonstone Jade, it meant that if the physical enhancement from one Jewel was 100, she would get boosted 30 flexibility, 30 strength and 40 agility. It was quite a good mixture indeed.

Feeling the anger in her eyes with some killing intent, Zhou Weiqing felt his back covered in cold sweat, and he exclaimed quickly: "Big Sis, I'm afraid this is a misunderstanding!"

"Misunderstanding?" The lady Royal Guard shook her wrist and drew her sword . Although she did not activate her 3 Physical Jewels, but her sword shone bright with Heavenly Energy. Her heavenly energy was still unable to be released from the sword, so she was likely still in the Heavenly Jing Energy Hierarchy, as those who had broken through to Heavenly Xu Energy would be able to release heavenly energy from their weapons. Of course, she had not even used her Physical Jewels as they would increase the amount of Heavenly Energy expended. Of course, facing Zhou Weiqing who was an unarmed commoner, it was definitely unnecessary to do so.

With a cold flash, the tip of the sword was resting on Zhou Weiqing's throat, just a small movement forward would end his life.

“Physical Jewel Master Big Sis, this is really a misunderstanding! Besides, I really didn’t see anything! Please let me go” Zhou Weiqing looked pitifully at the lady Royal Guard, and with his honest looking features, it did seem very convincing.

Chapter 1 – Big Sis, I’m afraid this is a misunderstanding! (3)

The lady royal guard was clearly bamboozled by his honest appearance, and the anger in her eyes lessened, and she said in a cold voice: “It is not up to me to let you go, Her Highness will decide on your punishment.”

“Highness? Oh my god! Are you referring to Princess Difuya?” Zhou Weiqing said in shock.

“You recognize me?” A proud, cold voice sounded out from behind the lady Royal Guard, a note of anger in the voice was clear as well.

With a flash in front of Zhou Weiqing’s eyes, another person appeared beside the lady Royal Guard, wet pink hair across the shoulders, with an alluring figure covered in a pink outfit, her fine features showing off a pair of deep blue eyes. Her young bosom was heaving with her anger and emotions.

As their gazes met each other, they both exclaimed simultaneously “It’s you?”

Zhou Weiqing was red in embarrassment, thinking to himself that he was in deep trouble now. He said abashedly: “Hello Princess Difuya, I didn’t expect to see you here.” To escape this crisis ahead of him, he tried his best to sound and look as sincere as possible.

Unfortunately, this Princess Difuya was not so easily swayed. After a short surprised, her beautiful face twisted in anger and her fists gripped together, “So it’s you, you piece of trash, how dare you follow me here to peek on me! Niya, kill him!”

The lady Royal Guard Niya unhesitatingly stepped forward to obey the princess’ instructions. Although she also believed it was an error, after all how could this common boy follow the princess without her detecting anything. However, he had looked at the Princess’ naked body, and that was definitely punishable by death.

“Wait!” Zhou Weiqing had not seen Princess Difuya many times, and hadn’t spoken to her before, though he had heard of her proud nature. He did not expect her to suddenly order his death, and if he didn’t speak out he would definitely be killed now.

As Niya’s sword slowed a little, Zhou Weiqing said quickly: “Stop, I’m her fiance!”

Niya paused in confusion and looked towards Princess Difuya, only to see the princess’ ashen face.

“Who says I have such a trash fiance, furthermore you are so wretched and disgusting, how dare you peek at me... Niya kill him now, I will take responsibility!” Difuya shouted out in anger, like a little lioness. She was especially infuriated for a reason, just yesterday she had asked her father to dissolve this marriage, and today that Zhou Weiqing came here to peek at her. In her mind, Zhou Weiqing had heard the news of her request, and came here to

do such indecent things. Furthermore, she had always looked down on him who was unable to cultivate, and naturally her anger grew further.

Niya looked at the princess again, then looked towards Zhou Weiqing, and said hesitatingly: “You are Commander-In-Chief Niu’s son, Viscount Zhou?”

Zhou Weiqing had a helpless look on his face, and said self-mockingly: “Yes! I am Zhou Weiqing! [The notorious Dog Son of the Tiger Father Dog Son pair](#), and also Princess Difuya’s fiancé. I really did not mean to peep. I often come here to take a bath, and this was just a coincidence.”

The lady Royal Guard Niya looked back at Princess Difuya, “Your Highness, perhaps this is really a misunderstanding. The Viscount did not mean to do so, furthermore he is your...”

“Shut up!” Difuya’s brows were raised in anger, and with a step she pulled Niya away and stood directly in front of Zhou Weiqing: “I don’t have such a fiancé. I, Difuya, aims to be an Elemental Zong, to be among the strong of the world. My husband has to be a hero who is above all others. How can such a despicable, shameless trash be worthy of me?”

The fawning expression on Zhou Weiqing’s face which he had put on for survival was slowly being replaced with anger. Even the most good natured person had his limit, and his eyes bulged in anger as he swept Princess Difuya with his gaze. “So what if I look at you? According to empire law, you are my fiancé, even if I take you now, the Emperor himself wouldn’t punish me! Hmph, I may

be despicable and shameless, but I'm despicable and shameless towards my own fiancée, what law can govern that? And you, will still have to marry this despicable and shameless trash! What do you have to be proud of? You were just born into royalty and had the luck to be born with talent. If I wasn't born with blocked meridians, maybe you are now begging me to watch you bathe, even coming on to me. [Such a brainless woman with your eyes on top of your head](#), do you really think that I want to marry you?" After ranting, he turned around and walked away. Although this fellow was usually quite smooth and sly, but when his temper came, he was just as stubborn as anyone can be.

If they were just comparing status, although Difuya was a princess, Zhou Weiqing was not afraid of her. Although he personally was considered a joke by most of Heavenly Bow Empire, but still his father was the one and only Commander-in-Chief of Heavenly Bow Empire's armies, and furthermore he was the strongest person in the whole empire, and could be called the pillar of the entire empire. The Emperor Di Fengling and Zhou Weiqing's father called each other brothers in private, this was also the reason why Zhou Weiqing and Difuya were promised to each other in marriage since birth.

Zhou Weiqing's words struck a nerve in Difuya. Just as he said, although she did not want to marry this Empire's joke, but she could not disobey her father's orders. In a sudden rush, her old grievances and fresh anger combined together and Difuya's face paled in anger.

Raising her left hand, a sheen of red appeared around her wrist, and 2 Jewels appeared. As compared to Niya, Difuya's 2 Power Jewels on her left wrist were 2 bright red rubies, and were her

Elemental Jewels. Difuya was 16 years old this year, and was considered one of a rare geniuses in the royal family, her Heavenly Energy had already cultivated to Heavenly Jing Energy 7th level, and she had already gotten her 2nd Elemental Jewel.

Elemental Jewels were different from Physical Jewels; instead of getting physical boosts, they were instead able to control elemental energy. While Physical Jewels were various types of Jades, Elemental Jewels were different types of coloured gems, and their power and type meant different types of elemental affinities. For example, Difuya's red rubies signified a fire elemental affinity. Besides that, there were sapphires for water affinity, diamonds for earth affinity, tourmaline for wind affinity, emerald jade for light affinity, black pearls for darkness affinity, cat's eye gems for spatial affinity, and lastly green jade for life affinity. As such, it was much easier to differentiate what affinity that an Elemental Jewel Master was.

There is a Chinese idiom 虎父无犬子 meaning that a tiger father will not beget a dog son, but he has been mocked that his father is a tiger yet he is a dog son.

Eyes grown on top of your head is a Chinese idiom meaning overly proud person who looks down on others.

Chapter 1 – Big Sis, I’m afraid this is a misunderstanding! (4)

“Your highness, no!” Niya shouted out in horror, trying to stop Difuya. However, Difuya was too enraged, her right hand holding Niya away, and her left already pointed towards Zhou Weiqing.

Although Niya was a 9th level Heavenly Jing Energy Hierarchy Shi Master, higher than Difuya by 2 levels, but without activating her Physical Jewels, and being afraid of harming Difuya, she was still stopped by Difuya’s right hand momentarily, and in that short moment, Difuya released an attack towards Zhou Weiqing.

Difuya’s left wrist’s first ruby released a bright light, and a head-sized fireball shot out leaving a trail of fire behind as it slammed viciously into Zhou Weiqing’s back and exploded. Zhou Weiqing cried in agony as the explosion threw him 5 metres before he landed on the ground in a roll, his whole back was a mess of burnt flesh and blood with a terrible scorched odour.

“You... you...” Zhou Weiqing looked up with all his strength and looked towards Difuya who was in shock. He had never imagined that Difuya would actually lift a hand against him so viciously.

Difuya’s face was pale in shock, after attacking in anger she had realized what she had done. She knew how powerful her first ruby’s fireball was, and was in a fluster. After all, Zhou Weiqing was the Commander-in-Chief’s son, but now it was too late for regrets.

As Difuya's personal royal guard, Niya was also shocked. She was covered in cold sweat. If the princess killed the commander-in-chief's son, Zhou Weiqing, who had been awarded the title of Viscount since birth, it might cause the whole empire to erupt in chaos. Yet, neither she nor Difuya were skilled in healing, and the 2 females were at a loss.

Suddenly, out of nowhere, the fine skies turned dark, and lightning flashed above followed by the loud sound of thunder. In a matter of moments, the skies had turned pitch black and the 2 ladies were struck by a sudden chill in their hearts.

"I... I ... didn't mean to..." Difuya muttered to herself.

Niya came to her senses, and pulled Difuya along while running, saying: "Your highness, the weather is turning bad. Let's hurry back to the palace and look for a Life affinity Elemental Jewel Master to save Viscount Zhou." She knew that the odds of Zhou Weiqing, who did not have any Heavenly Energy, surviving were miniscule. At this time, they had to leave the scene immediately, or if any other people spotted them then they would be finished.

Although there weren't many Fire Elemental Jewel Masters in the Heavenly Bow Empire, but at least it wasn't only Princess Difuya alone. As long as they weren't caught at the scene, there was still hope.

Zhou Weiqing lay on the ground paralyzed, but he could hear the departing footsteps of the two. At this point, he felt like his whole body was soaked in magma, his blood felt like it was boiling, and every breath he took was a red mist. The impact area on his back

did not hurt anymore, it was totally numb, but the fire venom was spreading through every inch of his body. If a Life Elemental Jewel Master had administered aid right after the attack, he might still be able to survive. However, now that the fire venom was invading his internal organs, his life was ticking away.

Zhou Weiqing was by nature an optimistic person, after all he was a Grand Marshal's son yet could not cultivate, yet he could maintain his life without falling into depression. He did not want to die, and he still had many things he wanted to do. Never in his wildest imagination did he think that he would die at the hands of his fiancée. In fact, he didn't particularly hate Difuya, but hated the heavens why they did not gift him with a body that could cultivate. If only he could become a Jewel Master, then everything would be different. The sheer hatred and malice in him seemed to coalesce around Zhou Wenqing. He swore viciously in his heart: "Difuya, if I don't die today, one day I will make sure you kneel in front of me, and beg for me to take you as wife. Then I'll reject you like you have today."

After swearing his last curse, Zhou Weiqing was on the verge of unconsciousness. Even the burning sensations were dimming. Is my life just going to end like this – Was his last thought.

All of a sudden, there was a loud sound of an explosion above him, causing the semi-conscious Zhou Weiqing to be shocked awake. He opened his eyes weakly, only to see a strange scene in front of him.

A strange black gash split apart the air 3 feet away from him, as if a huge black eye opening in the air. Zhou Weiqing's mouth gaped

open, and blood spurted out from his mouth.

At this moment, a strange light emitted from the black opening. A ball-shaped object, as large as an infant's fist, black as coal but with green, blue and silver colours swirling around it, shot out. Zhou Weiqing's blood which had spurted out of his mouth just happened to land upon it. Suddenly, a burst of unbelievable cold burst forth from the black object, dashing into Zhou Weiqing's body in a flash.

His body started to shudder as the previous burning sensation vanished and he felt as if he had been suddenly thrown into an ice cellar. He was jolted awake and suddenly everything seemed crystal clear to him.

The black pearl seemed to be attracted by something within his body, and with a swoosh, it flew right into his mouth. Zhou Weiqing felt a sudden cold in his throat, then his whole body seemed to turn into ice, and his senses were all sealed suddenly, and he blacked out.

The opening above Zhou Weiqing slowly closed, and just as suddenly as it had appeared, the dark skies stilled and cleared, and the sun shone brightly once again in the Star Forest, the rays of sun once again returning to the Ice Spring Lake.

Chapter 2 – Weird Black Pearl (1)

Stars Forest, Ice Spring Lake side.

Zhou Weiqing's body was lay on the ground in a t-shape, deeply unconscious. At the same time, his body was undergoing a strange change.

A layer of black light appeared around his body. Despite the bright sunlight in the sky, the darkness emitted from within his body covered it like a cocoon. The torn flesh of his back from Difuya's fireball was starting to heal up at a speed discernable to the naked eye. What was most shocking was that while his flesh was healing, his bones, muscles, internal organs and even meridians were being infused with a layer dark grey energy.

It was a nearly indescribable grey colour, giving an impression that was even colder than the black cocoon surrounding Zhou Weiqing, yet still filled with a strange vibrancy and life. However, as this layer of grey slowly spread out from within his body to replace the layer of black covering him, there was a strange change in the vegetation around his body. One could clearly see the vegetation getting infected by the grey, starting from Zhou Weiqing's body and spreading out in a 5 metre radius, causing a quick withering in the vegetation as Zhou Weiqing's body healed faster. There seemed to be an evil influence in the air.

The dark grey mixing with the black light started getting thicker and thicker, and the atmosphere grew colder, domineering, evil and demonic, the 4 different auras surrounding Zhou Weiqing's body. He started to shudder slightly as 3 rays of light emitted from

within the black cocoon, flickering above his body. The 3 rays of light were the green, blue and silver colours from the black pearl he had swallowed earlier.

The warm rays of the sun were not able to enter the surrounding of Zhou Weiqing's body, and on his forehead, a black word "King" slowly appeared. On his skin, a layer of black tattoos slowly formed, below that a layer of grey, similar tattoos could also be seen. The 2 layers of tattoos seemed to have form a 3D image, and they covered his whole body all the way to his face even.

This phenomenon carried on for almost an hour, until all the colours slowly faded away, sinking back into Zhou Weiqing's body, and the tattoos on his body also disappeared consequently.

The healthy bronze skin colour of Zhou Weiqing seemed a lot paler than before, and his facial features seemed to be a lot more handsome now. His back, which had been torn apart by the exploding fireball, was now totally healed, with not a scar to be seen, as if he had never been injured there before.

After a while more, Zhou Weiqing's fingers twitched, as he slowly regained consciousness.

As he opened his eyes, he couldn't help but shiver in a sudden chill. Although he didn't know what had happened as he was unconscious, he still felt a chill in his whole body after awakening. His heart was cold, and that icy feeling was extremely uncomfortable for him, causing almost an indescribable emotion in him.

“I’m... not dead?” Zhou Weiqing sat up in a sudden start. He felt his body was a lot lighter than usual, and he hurriedly lifted his hand to touch his back, and on feeling the whole, smooth skin, he couldn’t help but widen his eyes in shock.

“Was that all just a dream?” Zhou Weiqing looked around the him, and then spotted the tattered remains of his clothing, as well as the circle of shrivelled dead plants around him. It was not a dream after all.

Giving himself a facepalm, Zhou Weiqing’s memories slowly returned as clarity returned to his mind.

“That weird black pearl seemed to have entered my body?” Quickly, Zhou Weiqing recalled his last memory before fainting. At that time, he had felt a gust of cold rushing into his belly, and he had passed out from the cold and had no further memory. As for the dead vegetation around him, he subconsciously passed it off as collateral damage from Difuya’s fireball.

As Zhou Weiqing was born with blocked meridians, although he was a noble, but he only attended an ordinary commoner school which did not give explicit lessons on the powers of Jewel Masters, hence he made such a judgement error. If the first skill on Difuya’s Elemental Jewel was that strong as he had imagined, she would not simply be just an ordinary genius. Furthermore, to be able to deal that kind of damage, that fireball would have blown him into smithereens.

“What on earth was that black pearl?” Although his judgement was fully accurate, but one thing Zhou Weiqing knew for sure – he had been critically wounded by the fireball, and it was the black pearl which had healed him.

Is my moral character that good? Did a karmic miracle just happen to me? Zhou Weiqing grew more excited as he thought. Although he had quite an optimistic character that could dismiss the misfortune of his birth, but being born in such a prestigious family, he naturally had a strong desire to be strong.

As he swiveled his neck looking around, he immediately locked onto the huge Star Tree beside him as a test target.

The reason for Star Trees’ name was because their leaves were shaped in a 5-corner pentagon manner, just like a star. A 100-year Star Tree was considered full grown, and its wood was extremely strong and tough, yet did not lack in flexibility – that was why it was renowned as one of the best materials for crafting bows.

Zhou Weiqing moved towards the chosen Star Tree, and waving his fist around, he slammed his fist into the thick trunk with all his might.

“PENG!” “Ahhhhhh!” The first sound naturally was the sound of his fist hitting the tree, and the latter was like a cat which had its tail stepped on, an almost inhuman screech.

Zhou Weiqing had been afraid of pain since he was young, the thick Star Tree stood immobile, yet he was hopping up and down

clutching his right fist. The intense pain in his right fist made it almost numbing, and the surface skin of the fist was scraped badly, the sheer pain causing him to hop around for almost 10 minutes before getting slightly better.

“F*ck!” The young fellow cursed as he blew on his fist. “Damned, looks like [pies dropping from heaven](#) is not something that will happen to me.”

Luckily, he was still young, and the strength of his fist wasn't that huge, so he did not harm the bones of his fist. After the pain subsided, he draped on the remnants of his clothing, and his outer robe from the side of the lake, before departing crestfallen.

Unknown to him, about 15 minutes after he had left the scene, on the Star Tree that he had struck with his fist, where some of his blood had been left after his skin had scraped away. The surrounding tough bark of the Star Tree started to rot, and thin layer of dark grey air seemed to dissipate into the air. 3 days later, this 50 plus year old Star Tree vanished totally from the forest. Of course, this would never be known to Zhou Weiqing.

Sudden windfall

Chapter 2 – Weird Black Pearl (2)

Back on the Star Forest's Boulevard, Zhou Weiqing grew angrier and angrier as he thought about what happened. Although he had managed to survive by some miracle, but his impression of his fiancée had already dropped to rock bottom. If he had not chanced upon the black pearl, he would probably have perished in the forest then.

“Difuya, just you wait. One day, I will have my revenge and make you regret this day.” Zhou Weiqing said viciously. He had never hated anyone so much, even those who had mocked him since young, at least they had never taken direct action against him. Yet, Difuya had been so vicious towards him, furthermore the reason for doing so was in fact just a misunderstanding. Clearly, Zhou Weiqing was someone who could hold a grudge.

As he neared Heavenly Bow City, Zhou Weiqing slowly calmed down. He was wearing only an outer robe with nothing inside. Luckily, he still had a few pieces of gold in the robe. His father was very strict with him, so he did not have a huge allowance.

“Should I go home?” Zhou Weiqing stopped to think. “No, I definitely can't go home like this. That damned Difuya will certainly complain to her father the Emperor about me peeping on her. If that old fellow hears about it, then it won't be just a simple beating for me.” Thinking of the stern fierce eyes of his father, he couldn't help but shudder. He had grown up to many a beating, any time he got into any kind of mischief meant a beating from his father. This time, if his father knew about him peeping at the princess bathing, he wouldn't be able to defend his actions. For his own safety, he better not go home.

However, if he did not head home, where could he go especially with only a few pieces of gold? Zhou Weiqing was in a dilemma. Although he was tall and well built, he was still a 13 year old kid, and did not have any particular professional skill he could live on. Even if he ran away from home, how could he survive for more than a few days outside and alone.

For a time, Zhou Weiqing looked extremely gloomy. Despite his misgivings, he continued shuffling towards the gates of Heavenly Bow City.

“Eh? Why are there so many people ahead?” Just as the city gates were up ahead, Zhou Weiqing suddenly realised there was an uncommonly large crowd at the side of the gates, almost several hundred people, and there were soldiers guarding the perimeter.

What is going on here? Filled with curiosity, he quickly walked over to have a look. Luckily although the area was crowded, it was not tightly packed, and he was able to squeeze his way to the front to look.

Just ahead of the crowd, here was a row of long desks surrounded by people. Behind the desk was a notice with the large words “Military Recruitment” displayed clearly. Below that was written: To protect the borders of our empire, Heavenly Bow City is now recruiting 3000 fresh troops. Looking for healthy males of 16 to 26 of age, with priority to those with great inborn strength or heaven energy. Country first then home, to join the army and protect your country and home is the manly thing to do.

The Heavenly Energy referred to here was those who were level 1 or 2. If someone was able to cultivate to level 3 and awaken their Power Jewel, they would not need to join via this recruitment, and could directly apply to military schools or even Jewel Master schools, which would mean a much brighter future.

Normally, Jewel Master's Power Jewels were awakened before the age of 16, if not, it was likely that it would be impossible to do so in the future. Thus, the recruitment here was for ordinary soldiers.

Join the army? Looking at the notice, Zhou Weiqing was highly tempted. Of course, if he signed on to the army, he wouldn't need to go home! He would be fed and paid, and perhaps he could forge a name for himself in the army, lest his old man kept calling him a useless bum. Haha, this was a heaven-sent opportunity!

This fellow was still very young, and caught up in the moment of excitement, he did not think things through and consider the difficulties of joining the army. After all he was at an age where impulses ruled decision-making. Furthermore, after being called useless and trash everyday, and with his father being so strict with him, he did not want to stay at home anymore.

Having made up his mind, Zhou Weiqing squeezed to the front and told an old recruiting soldier : "Big bro, I want to apply, I want to apply."

Although there were several hundred people in the surrounding crowd, but the actual number of applicants weren't actually high. After all, Heavenly Bow City was the prosperous capital city of the

empire, and the living standards of the commoners here were much higher than the norm. Also, since Heavenly Bow Empire was a small country, there were frequent border clashes with the other small surrounding countries. As a result, joining the army was quite a dangerous occupation. As such, it was not a normal occupation of choice for most people, let alone the nobles of the land.

There were around 20 soldiers in charge of recruitment sitting behind the desks, and they were all veterans, having at least of the rank of squad leader or higher. The one which Zhou Weiqing was currently facing looked to be around 30 years of age, and though he was just sitting there, his tall and strong physique was clear. From the lazy look that was currently on his face, those who had been in the army long enough would easily recognize and experienced and slick soldier.

“Hey brat, you want to join the army?” Seeing that someone finally approached him, the squad leader was overjoyed. After all, there were 20 soldiers here, and Zhou Weiqing had chosen to approach him, letting him feel that he had a lot of face.

“Yes! I want to join the army!” Zhou Weiqing exclaimed clearly. Looking at all the squad leaders dressed smartly in their armor giving off an awe inspiring aura, further firmed his resolve to join.

The squad leader nodded in satisfaction and asked: “That’s great, which branch of the service do you want to join?”

“Ah?” Although Zhou Weiqing’s father was the commander-in-chief of the army, but he personally did not know much of the

inner workings of the army, and he asked weakly: “What’s the difference?”

“Of course there is a difference, although the treatment of all basic soldiers are the same, but the requirements, tests and training of the various branches are quite different. For example, those in the light infantry would be more focused on stamina; on the battlefield they are the busiest, having to run around everywhere. With higher stamina and being good at running, it will improve their chances of survival on the battlefield. In fact, most of the other branches all started out from light infantry, many of the recruits do start training in the infantry. Of course, there are also other basic branches, like wagon supply units, logistics, army cooks etc. However, most of those do not have much future advancement.” As he went on speaking, his mouth twisted in scorn as he mentioned the latter.

As soon as he heard about survival on the battlefield, Zhou Weiqing’s earlier enthusiasm was somewhat extinguished. Oh yes, joining the army would mean having to fight on an actual battlefield, and he did not have that much skills, if he were to die as cannon fodder in a fight, that would definitely not be worth it.

“Ahem, Officer Bro, Can I consider a bit more?” Being afraid of death was human nature, especially for someone like Zhou Weiqing who was only 13 years of age, even though he looked like he was 16.

Chapter 2 – Weird Black Pearl (3)

“What? Are you playing with me?” The squad leader suddenly stood up angrily. His 1.9m frame towered over Zhou Weiqing, giving off an intimidating aura as he grabbed Zhou Weiqing’s cuff and brought his angered face closer.

“Uhhh... No what I meant was that I need more time to think what branch I should apply for...” Zhou Weiqing said quickly with a bitter smile on his face. As the saying goes, a wise man knows better than to fight when the odds are against him, Zhou Weiqing certainly did not want to get beaten up. In truth, if he had revealed his background, it was likely that all of them would be kneeling in front of him right now. However, although Zhou Weiqing’s character was sly and cunning, but he had always been extremely obedient towards his father’s instructions. Since young, his father had always drilled into him that a real man will work and live on his own merits, and not just depend on his family background. As such, although Zhou Weiqing had one of the highest ranking noble backgrounds in the empire, he had never used it to take advantage of anyone, unlike Princess Difuya.

In fact, even if Zhou Weiqing really reneged on applying, the squad leader couldn’t do anything about it. Too bad he was young and inexperienced and had been scared into agreeing without knowing that.

Upon hearing Zhou Weiqing’s reply, the squad leader sat back down with a satisfied smile, crooking his head to look at him before saying: “Alright, hurry up and decide and then fill up this form and you can take your test. Let me tell you brat, you are very lucky as this is the first of recruitment so we’re still rather lax in

our testing. Otherwise, do you think joining the army is that easy?”

Zhou Weiqing asked a sullen expression: “Officer Bro, uhm, can I ask, on the battlefield which unit branch can stand at the back and will not have much contact with the enemy?”

Zhou Weiqing had his own thinking, after all every boy dreamed of being a hero when they were young. He was not willing to just join logistics or to be a cook, if he had to be a soldier he had better be a proper one. If not, if his father heard about it, he would likely be beaten to death! He himself also didn’t want to throw face. But then as a soldier who would have to enter the battlefield, Zhou Weiqing still wanted to look for a role that would be relatively safer, after all in his mind, safety was always number one. To him, being afraid of death was a natural human state, and he wasn’t so heroic that he could just stare death in the face.

The squad leader’s eyes glinted with a sly look, and said quickly: “That’s easy, of course that would be archers. Archers are generally put in the backlines, even if they had to fire from the front, but when both sides clash they would retreat back behind to fight. Unless the entire army is wiped out, otherwise archers usually will not have direct contact with the enemy.

Upon hearing that, Zhou Weiqing was delighted and immediately said, “Great, this is great! Of course, why didn’t I think of our Heavenly Bow Empire’s most well known unit. Officer Bro, I want to be an archer!” Archers were usually positioned behind the other close combat units for protection, this much he did know at least.

The squad leader saw that his cunning plan had succeeded, and gave a laugh of delight before standing up and grabbed his pen: “Name, age?”

“I’m called Zhou...” Zhou Weiqing almost gave out his actual name before catching himself in time. “I’m called Little Fatty Zhou. 16 years of age.” Although Zhou Weiqing was only 13 years old, but he had after all been born in a noble family and was the only son, as such he had some knowledge of the worldly ways of the world, at least a bit more than an ordinary kid. Since he had already decided to join the army, in order to hide the fact from his father, he decided to give himself an alias, it was his kid nickname which hadn’t been used for more than 10 years. It was unlikely that his father could discover him from it.

“Little Fatty Zhou? You’re not fat at all though!” The squad leader muttered to himself while writing down the details. He did not doubt for a second that Zhou Weiqing was younger than his proclaimed age of 16.

Very soon, the registration was complete, and he passed the form to Zhou Weiqing and pointed to a corner of the area and said: “Okay, go over there to take the test for archers. As long as you pass the test, you will be an official soldier of our empire.”

“Thank you Officer Bro.” Zhou Weiqing happily took the form. In his mind, this was the best possible outcome, joining an actual combat unit which would not put him in too much danger. Perfect.

Rushing excitedly to the test area, there were about 4-5 soldiers there dressed in black and grey uniforms, with light leather armor,

custom protective wrist guards, head adorned with a large hat to cover the sun, with a longbow on their backs, and a quiver of arrows slung on each side. This was the normal equipment for archers, and did seem rather valiant looking. Currently, there was no one taking the test, but the few archers were standing at attention. Zhou Weiqing knew how strict his father was by nature, and if he was so fierce towards his own son, naturally his army had to have strict discipline as well. As such, even though Heavenly Bow Empire was quite small, with an army strength of a few tens of thousands, but they were all very elite and were more than able to hold their own against enemies of similar or higher numbers. Zhou Weiqing knew that his father had never lost a battle, and was very well renowned in the surrounding countries.

“Hi big bros, I’m here to take the test.” Zhou Weiqing handed his form over to one of the archers, who looked at him and said “Little bro, well done, congratulations on choosing to join us, the units with one of the best prospects in the army. Here, take this to try pulling it.” The archer unlimbered his bow and passed it to Zhou Weiqing.

Zhou Weiqing took the long bow and examined it closely. It was made out of high quality Star Wood, was around 1.8m long and 0.9m wide. The front of the bow frame was in a circular arc, while the back was straight. The centre grip was about 4 cm wide, getting gradually thinner towards the ends which were wrapped up in sinew.

This sort of long bow had been developed over the ages, across years and years of wars, from the various mixed materials of ancient times in the Boundless Mainland to crossbows which were less than 1.2m long, having a max range of less than 200m and

effective range of less than 100m, and a much lower penetrating power. As time passed, bows gradually were developed to be larger, especially with the discovery of top grade materials like Star Wood, allowing the use of longbows to be more widespread. This long bow which was common for the archers of Heavenly Bow Empire was extremely deadly, even the most ordinary ones had a max range of less than 400m, an effective range of less than 250m, almost double that of the old crossbows. Their firing rate was as high as 10-12 arrows per minute which was also better than the crossbow. In the hands of a skilled archer, the accuracy was way higher. Since the long bow was lighter due to its material, it was also easier to wield despite its increased range and damage, suitable for both skirmishes and direct clashes, and thus its appearance had meant crossbows had been rendered obsolete. It could be said that the longbow was the king of the battlefield for ranged weapons.

The sheer rate of fire of the longbow could cause the effect like an artillery barrage, when their own infantry were charging forth, the archers in the backline could fire upwards in a high arc to hit the enemies. This was also the weakness of light cavalry where the mounts were not armored. Fired at max range, the sharp arrows could even pierce through light armor.

Chapter 2 – Weird Black Pearl (4)

Of course, there were also shortcomings of the longbow, namely that the archer had to have a strong body and constitution, have great skill on many different fronts, as well as the ability to cooperate well with each other. This meant a long time spent training and fighting together before an archery unit was mature.

The importance of archers in an army was undisputed, especially so for Heavenly Bow Empire. In fact, when Zhou Weiqing's father was younger and still a commander, he led troops of archers in a model battle of success for archers. At that time, their opponent was the Kalise Empire on their southern front, whose army was mainly made of cavalry.

At that time, Admiral Zhou had chosen a gentle slope which the Kalise Army would pass by and set up an ambush.

At that time, Heavenly Bow Empire's archer troops consisted of only 2000 men, divided into 3 units. The unit covering the left used trees and trenches as cover, and the unit covering the right had a river as a natural barrier cover; the last unit was behind the other two and personally led by Admiral Zhou himself. In front of each unit, there were around 150 dismounted heavy cavalry troops equipped with heavy tower shields in a protective formation of 6 rows. With such a formation numbering mostly archers, and facing more than 3 times their number in enemy cavalry, they had won in a convincing slaughter-fest. This was also the battle that propelled Admiral Zhou to fame, and brought him into the upper echelons of the Heavenly Bow Army ranks.

Knowing his father's history, when Zhou Weiqing held the bow, he couldn't help but feel a rush of passion and excitement. As his father's son, he had been trained with a longbow previously, but holding such a longbow which had been on the battlefield just felt different.

Taking a deep breath, Zhou Weiqing held the bow in his left hand, while expertly using his thumb, index and middle finger to pull back the drawstring, using his strength to unwaveringly draw the bow into a perfect crescent, taking aim in front.

The soldier's eyes lit up, and he exclaimed in praise: "Nice! Little bro, you have used a bow before right, very standard actions, but let's see how your accuracy is. For us archers, as long as we have good accuracy, we are extremely important in the army."

With such a proper posture, how could Zhou Weiqing not be accurate? After all, as long as Zhou Weiqing's father was at home, he took pleasure in "torturing" his son with training. Although Zhou Weiqing was not able to cultivate, but in terms of training in different weapons and combat, he definitely had the best possible training. Even when the Admiral was out at work, he would still assign training for Zhou Weiqing to complete, and would even check afterwards. If he failed the check.... hehehehe..

As a result of that, Zhou Weiqing not only knew how to shoot, but was also very accurate, which was also one of the reasons why he had been so happy to choose to join the archer unit. After all, Heavenly Bow Empire was renowned in the region for its archers, and Admiral Zhou had definitely given him a lot of training in that area.

After taking the position for a while, Zhou Weiqing slowly put down the bow, not even out of breath and his back straight. He was after all still 13 years old, and although his strength was no weaker than an ordinary adult, he still could not sustain that position for too long.

“Alright, that’s enough. Little bro, from now on you are one of our brothers in the archery battalion. Our battalion is part of the 5th Regiment of the army, and the 5th Regiment has a total of 10 battalions out of which 4 are archers, and we are of the 3rd battalion.

In Boundless Mainland, the formation of armies in the various countries were pretty much the same.

10 men to a Squad

10 Squads (100 men) to a Company

10 Companies (1000 men) to a Battalion

10 Battalions (10k men) to a Regiment

10 Regiments (100k men) to a Field Army Group

Of course, Heavenly Bow Empire’s army did not consist of Field Army Groups, its entire army was made up of 5 Regiments,

totalling 50k soldiers.

“Ah? Is that it for the test?” Zhou Weiqing asked in surprise.

The archer replied with a laugh: “Why? Did you think it would be harder? We’re recruiting fresh troops not picking a son-in-law, as long as the recruit is healthy and in good shape, and is able to draw the longbow, it is considered a pass. You foolish youngling, probably just reached 16 years old right, and you will continue growing in stature so there won’t be any issues there. More importantly, all the recruits will be having a 3 month basic training. Of course we will not be sending fresh recruits into the battlefield. Alright, now go over to that side to collect your equipment. Little bro, let me tell you that you are extremely lucky to be able to enter our 3rd battalion, you will know why when you see our battalion commander who is personally giving out the equipment over there.” As he spoke, he put a tick on Zhou Weiqing’s form before returning it to him.

The archer gave Zhou Weiqing directions to the temporary battalion headquarters which was situated not far from the field, it had likely not been set up for long, and there were still wagons delivering goods there.

Was he about to become a real soldier now? Since young, Zhou Weiqing had been scolded by his father for being a useless bum, and he had never felt such a sense of accomplishment as today. Even though the test earlier had been extremely simple, but he had passed it on his own merits. Zhou Weiqing thrust his chest forward in pride as he strode towards the Battalion headquarters.

As he entered the headquarters, the form in his hands was his entrance permit across the various sentry checkpoints, and with the directions from the sentries he was able to easily find the 3rd battalion's headquarters. In front of a large warehouse there was a sign which read: New Recruits report here.

Zhou Weiqing was so excited by now, and hurried towards the warehouse and raised his hand to move aside the curtain to get in. In an unbelievable coincidence, just as he raised his hand forward, someone was walking out at the same time. It was summer time at the moment, and the curtain on the headquarters was extremely thin, and was mostly just to ward off mosquitoes. Due to Zhou Weiqing's excitement, his actions were very large, and in grabbing the curtain, he also grabbed onto something round, soft, yet springy. Zhou Weiqing subconsciously squeezed, and at the same time there was a loud hmph from the other end before he was kicked away.

The kick was not that heavy, but Zhou Weiqing was still knocked back 7 steps, almost landing on his butt. The curtain was shoved aside and someone strode out.

It was a beautiful young girl, looking to be around 16 years of age, around 1.7m in height and very slender. She had a head of blue hair tied in a ponytail, and was dressed in a suit of black uniform, which Zhou Weiqing recognized as the uniform of a battalion commander. Of course, she was not wearing the armor which would complete the whole battalion commander gear.

Princess Difuya was already very pretty, but was no match in comparison to this young lady who was a whole level ahead in

terms of looks. Her skin was as fine and smooth as milk, and her most dazzling feature was her pair of large enchanting light blue eyes which were gentle and nigh perfect. Her features were blemishless, giving anyone who looked upon her an impression of being as gentle as still water.

As he looked upon the young girl, Zhou Weiqing was stunned as he realised he knew her. Although he had only seen her once from far, but she had definitely left an impression on him then. The reason for that was because the girl in front of him was Heavenly Bow Empire's top genius on the young generation, and was also known as the top beauty of the empire. Her name was Shangguan Bing'er.

Chapter 3 – Battalion's Commander Chest

Muscles are not bad! (1)

Zhou Weiqing had only seen Shangguan Bing'er once, and that was during her award ceremony. The countries in Boundless Mainland had very similar titles for nobles, the six titles in order of nobility from low to high – Lord, Baron, Viscount, Count, Marquis, Duke. Of course, for different countries, the various noble titles might have varying amount of power.

Shangguan Bing'er was born from a common family, but she had been awarded a title of Lord at the age of twelve, Baron the next year. This year she was 15 years old, older than Zhou Weiqing by 2 years, but her noble title was already the same as him at Viscount. However, in comparison, her title was truly earned by herself unlike Zhou Weiqing's titles, which were only because of his father. Even though Princess Difuya was a rising star in the royal family, she paled in comparison to Shangguan Bing'er.

Although Shangguan Bing'er was a year younger than the princess, she already possessed 2 sets of Power Jewels, furthermore she had both Elemental and Power Jewels. At the age of 12, Shangguan Bing'er already managed to cultivate to level 3 Heavenly Energy and Awakened her Twin Power Jewels, which were known as Heavenly Jewels. Such a phenomenon was much rarer than giving birth to twins in families. Especially in such a small country like Heavenly Bow Empire where the number of Heavenly Jewel Masters they have are honestly really pathetic. The reason why Shangguan Bing'er is held in such regard by the Empire, given the rank of viscount as such a young age, is because she is actually the second Heavenly Jewel Master in the whole empire! And the first Heavenly Jewel Master is actually Zhou

Weiying's father, Admiral Zhou.

Although Zhou Weiying's father was a Heavenly Jewel Master, but the class was still a mystery in Zhou Weiying's heart. As he had blocked meridians since young, Admiral Zhou looked down upon him and thus never discussed anything regarding Heavenly Jewel Masters. The only thing that Zhou Weiying knew was that on the surface, Heaven Jewel Masters seemed to be the combination of a Physical and Elemental Jewel Master. However, while there were definitely many similarities, there was actually also a lot of differences in terms of cultivation, promotion of Heavenly Jewel Masters. In fact, even the look and abilities of their jewels also differed in some ways as compared to the individual Elemental or Physical Jewel Masters. However, he had no idea what the differences actually were; all he knew was that Heavenly Jewel Masters were known as having much greater strength in comparison. Many a time had he daydreamed that he was a Heavenly Jewel Master.

The one and only time that Zhou Weiying had seen Shangguan Bing'er previously was the day that she had been awarded with the title of Viscount. The one who had awarded her the title was the Emperor himself, and at that time Admiral Zhou had brought him along to view the procession. As such, even though he had seen Shangguan Bing'er before and could recognize this top beauty of the empire at a single glance, she did not recognize him.

Unfortunately, right at this very moment, the facial expression on this top beauty was extremely ugly, her perfect features were ice cold, brow furrowed in anger and her hands were clasped protectively in front of her chest.

At this time, Shangguan Bing'er was rather despondent. She had just been walking out of the headquarters when the youth in front of her had suddenly recklessly grabbed the curtains, and had even grabbed her sensitive areas! In fact, from a young age, no male had ever touched any part of her body, she had no idea who her father was, and had been brought up singlehandedly by her mother. In fact, if she had not been protecting herself reflexively from the grasp just now, the kick on Zhou Weiqing would have been a lot harsher.

Zhou Weiqing also awoke to reality at this point, and recalling and associating the words of the archer earlier, he realised that this top beauty in front of him was clearly his superior officer, the battalion officer of the 3rd battalion, the very officer who was supposed to issue him his gear. Also, looking at Shangguan Bing'er's face and actions, it was clear to him where he had grabbed earlier.

In the Star Forest earlier, he had only seen the naked back of Princess Difuya and had been exceedingly excited. Now, he had actually touched Shangguan Bing'er! [Could this be his lucky day?](#) In this one single day, he had had 'ambiguous relations' with the 2 of the most famous young ladies in the whole empire! Thinking about where he had grabbed earlier... Pooh Once again, twin rows of blood spurted out of his nose. Although his face was arranged in an honest expression, that nosebleed betrayed the dirty thoughts he was currently having.

"Who are you?" Looking at Zhou Weiqing's nosebleed, Shangguan Bing'er's expression got even angrier, and she drew her sword and shouted in rage while pointing it at him.

“Ah! It is a misunderstanding, I’m a new recruit. I’m here to report and get my new equipment.” Zhou Weiqing quickly waved his form in front of her.

Shangguan Bing’er took a swift step forward towards Zhou Weiqing, grabbing the form from him to take a look. Her face softened a little, as she knew that it truly had been a coincidence previously, though she was still very angry at Zhou Weiqing.

“Why are you bumbling around clumsily for?” With a qiang sound, Shangguan Bing’er sheathed her sword, the killing intent in her eyes had disappeared but her tone was still cold and angry. After all, what girl would be able to keep her temper after being grabbed that way.

Zhou Weiqing had been observing her expressions, and was very impressed in his heart. Look at Shangguan Bing’er! She was born from a common family, and clearly her moral character was way better than the princess. The grievance she had suffered was no smaller than Princess Difuya’s, but the reaction was just so different. If only she was my fiancée instead, how great that would be?

“Follow me inside.” Shangguan Bing’er pushed aside the curtain and re-entered the headquarters.

Zhou Weiqing was about to enter, when someone sidled up next to him. Only then did he realise that a male soldier had actually been following Shangguan Bing’er out of the headquarters previously. He was wearing light armor covering the vital spots of the body, and with a helmet with a yellow feather, this was the

mark of a Company Leader. Previously, all of Zhou Weiqing's attention had been focused on the alluring Shangguan Bing'er and he had not noticed his presence.

A voice sounded out in his ear, as soft as a mosquito's buzzing, "Hey Boy, how was the feeling like?"

Zhou Weiqing was at this point gloating inwardly, and he subconsciously praised out loud: "The battalion commander's chest muscles are not bad!"

The Company Leader had only been teasing him, with a bit of envy mixed in, little did he expect that this young rascal would actually reply him out loud; this seemed rather at odds with his honest outlook. Regarding Zhou Weiqing's reply, he could only think of one phrase: How intrepid!

A cold light flashed, and Zhou Weiqing felt the ends of his hair stand up suddenly as the curtain in front of him was suddenly cut into two. In front of him, at the doorway, with her sword quivering in her hands, Shangguan Bing'er stood glaring coldly at Zhou Weiqing: "If you talk some more rubbish, I'll make sure you become an eunuch."

"Eh, Battalion Commander, I'm so sorry I was wrong." Zhou Weiqing had regretted his words earlier the moment they had left his mouth, after all he had been so loud and Shangguan Bing'er was so close. He hurriedly admitted his mistake with a apologetic smiling face.

Shangguan Bing'er gave an angry hmph, before turning back to head into the headquarters. The Company Leader seeing the situation, gave Zhou Weiqing a big thumbs up before he ran off quickly. Although Shangguan Bing'er did not put on any airs and had a very good temperament, as soon as combat started she was definitely more valiant than anyone else. He did not want to end up becoming an excuse for her to vent her anger.

Lol, of course he forgot it almost got him killed earlier

Chapter 3 – Battalion's Commander Chest Muscles are not bad! (2)

“Little Fatty Zhou, come here.” Shangguan Bing'er's severe voice came from within. Zhou Weiqing was blank for a while, before remembering that it was addressed to him, and hurriedly proceeded inside.

The huge building was filled with all sorts of army supplies, mostly meant for archers. Shangguan Bing'er did not sheathe her sword, instead slamming it down onto a table, before saying to one of the logistics soldiers: “Give him a set of equipment and then get him to scram.”

There were more than 10 logistics soldiers in charge of taking care of the equipment and also giving it out. They had not witnessed the earlier debacle, and were really curious why the normally kind battalion commander was acting so angry. One of the veteran soldiers quickly took out a set of archer's equipment and handed it over to Zhou Weiqing.

Zhou Weiqing quickly took his equipment and looked through it. There were 2 sets of army uniforms, including socks, shoes and clothes, as well a set of leather armor, a longbow which was even taller than Zhou Weiqing, 2 quiver of arrows and a large hat.

In the whole army, only the archers were issued the hat, and its purpose was not to block the wind, but rather to shade them from the glare of sunlight. After all, archers needed good vision in order to aim, and if they were in a position where they had to stare into the sun, it would adversely affect their aim. As such, all of the

archers were issued such a hat to shade their eyes and increase their aim.

The veteran soldier then gave Zhou Weiqing 3 gold coins, telling him: “This is your first year’s pay. You have one day leave to return home and settle everything. Gather back here by noon tomorrow. Remember, do not abuse your army supplies, when you gather back here tomorrow you will need to be dressed in your uniform. Understood?”

“Understood.” If not for what happened with Shangguan Bing’er earlier, Zhou Weiqing would probably be very excited with receiving his equipment. However, he was still immersed in the memory of the feel just now, thinking in his head that he would not be washing his hands for a while now.

According to the normal procedures, Shangguan Bing’er should be saying some encouraging words now as a battalion commander. However, at this moment, how could she? The only thing she could do was to glare menacingly at Zhou Weiqing, who was rather spooked by the glare and did not dare to stay for long, grabbing things and rushing out of the headquarters.

Shangguan Bing’er looked at his retreating back, and thought to herself: Little Fatty Zhou, Little Fatty Zhou, just you wait, I’ll make you pay for that!

If Zhou Weiqing knew what Shangguan Bing’er was thinking, that despicable rascal will certainly answer: Sure, I’ll let you touch me back anywhere! Or perhaps even: My chest muscles aren’t as developed as yours!

As he exited the headquarters, Zhou Weiqing noticed that there wasn't anyone around, and looking around he spotted an area with a toilet signage, which had a strange symbol he did not recognize.

He hurriedly grabbed his gear and rushed to the toilet, which was a lot cleaner and pleasant smelling than he had expected, though it only had one cubicle and a wooden door.

Zhou Weiqing found a clean spot to place his equipment, then removed his clothes. Earlier on, most of his clothes had been destroyed besides his over coat, and it was extremely uncomfortable. Since he had already gotten his army uniform, he decided to change into it as soon as possible.

Removing his overcoat, he was now totally naked. He was in no rush to change, but stood there relaxed to take a piss.

At this time, he heard the door opening. Zhou Weiqing was still urinating, and he subconsciously looked back, only to see Shangguan Bing'er walk in.

As Shangguan Bing'er entered the toilet, the first thing she saw was Zhou Weiqing's naked butt, and he was still shaking his 'tool' after finishing up. That sight sent her into a shock, and that was the moment that Zhou Weiqing turned around. Their gazes met, and two shrill shrieks sounded out at the same time. The weirdest thing was that Zhou Weiqing's despicable scream was even more exaggerated than Shangguan Bing'er's.

Shangguan Bing'er's lovely face was red with embarrassment, and she backed out in a flash. Zhou Weiqing hurriedly shook his 'tool' to finish up, and put on his uniform quickly, thinking that he was done for now. Holstering his longbow onto his back, shouldering the quivers and putting on the hat, he took quick steps toward the exit, thinking to himself: I better make a quick run for it and hope for the best.

"Stop!" Shangguan Bing'er shouted in anger towards Zhou Weiqing, her face pale in anger. "You perverted flasher! Just wait there and I'll deal with you." As she said that she rushed towards the toilet.

It was truly another unbelievable coincidence. The reason Shangguan Bing'er barged in without checking was because that toilet was actually for her personal use, hence the unknown symbol on the signage, which actually referred to the Battalion Commander's personal use. After all, she was a girl, and also as a Heavenly Jewel Master it was safe to say that she was the hope of the Empire, and it was easy for the Regiment Commander to give her some simple special benefits like a private toilet.

In the first place, she had actually been heading for the toilet when Zhou Weiqing groped her, thus the long delay. After he had left, after she had finally calmed down, she had then heading out to the toilet again. Who knew that she would once again bump into him in such a circumstance to see him in his birthday suit. As such, she was not only both embarrassed and angry, but also confused. Added on to that was her need to use the toilet, although she wanted to beat Zhou Weiqing savagely, but she really needed to finish her own 'business' first!

Wait here? Zhou Weiqing thought to himself. Only a fool would wait here, maybe your anger will have dissipated by tomorrow.

This fellow totally disregarded his battalion commander's orders, and ran off quickly with his bow. Quickly exiting the camp area, he dashed off into Heavenly Bow City. By the time Shangguan Bing'er came out from the toilet, the Pervert (in her eyes?), Zhou Weiqing, was already long gone. This made her gnash her teeth in hate to no avail.

After returning to Heavenly Bow City, Zhou Weiqing looked for an inn to stay for the night, and got some pen and paper to write a letter to his father:

Father, you always said that I'm useless, and I do feel that way myself, so I will not stay at home to trouble you further. As the saying goes, Reading 10000 books is incomparable to traveling 10000 li, I've decided to go out and make a living traveling by myself, to make a name for myself. Also, please help me break off my engagement with Princess Difuya, after all I am just a useless trash while she is a genius, I do not want to hold up her life, especially since she does not like me at all. That's all I have to say, do take care of mother and do not try to look for me. You know I'm more afraid of death than anyone, I'll come back alive and kicking, so don't worry about me.

After writing the letter, he went out to look for a shop providing delivery services, and paid for the letter to be delivered home tomorrow. After which he headed for a blacksmith's shop – since he was about to become a soldier, his priority was definitely his own safety. As mentioned in his letter, he was more afraid of dying

than anyone else. Today was his only free day in a while, so he decided to prepare himself properly before he had to return to the camp tomorrow.

Having grown up in Heavenly Bow City, Zhou Weiqing was extremely familiar with its layout. As he was still young, and had spent his life being scolded severely at home, leaving home this time gave him the enjoyable feeling like a bird let out of its cage; the feeling of homesickness will currently not be felt yet.

Before long, Zhou Weiqing had entered the nearest blacksmith shop.

Chapter 3 – Battalion's Commander Chest Muscles are not bad! (3)

“Hi officer, what would you like to order?” The manager of the shop immediately greeted Zhou Weiqing upon seeing his army uniform. In Heavenly Bow Empire, although the profession of blacksmith was not considered low, but it was still far from a soldier. Here, the most respected profession besides Jewel Masters were the soldiers of the army. After all, the mere 50k strong army of the Heavenly Bow Empire had withstood countless invasions from surrounding countries, and thus they were greatly beloved by the citizens. Although Zhou Weiqing looked very young, but he still looked very smart in his army uniform.

Zhou Weiqing asked: “Are you the boss here?”

“Yes, I am. Our shop might not be very large, but we are a time-honored brand in Heavenly Bow City, and have a good reputation. Whatever you wish to order, I'll give you a discount since you are defending our country!”

Zhou Weiqing grinned, and lifted his hand to pluck off the hat off his head, looked out the window carefully, before moving closer to the boss and whispering mysteriously: “Boss, I'm from the 3rd Archery Battalion of the 5th Regiment of the army. I'm actually here on a secret mission from my Battalion Commander to forge something. If you do this well, needless to say you will be well rewarded.”

The boss hesitated for a moment, looking over Zhou Weiqing in evaluation. Although this archer looked very young, but he had an

honest face and did not look like a cheat.

Zhou Weiqing continued in a low voice: “Don’t you know our 3rd Battalion? As soon as I mention our Battalion Commander you should understand; it’s our Empire’s top beauty, Viscount Shangguan Bing’er herself. You can go ask around and check for yourself.”

Upon hearing the name Shangguan Bing’er, the boss’ eyes brightened immediately, “Officer, what does Viscount Shangguan Bing’er wish to forge?” To the commoners of the empire, Shangguan Bing’er was like a legend, after all she was also common-born, and was known as the Goddess of Commoners. This unsuspecting boss never expected that anyone would use her name to cheat someone, otherwise that person would be spurned with scorn by everyone. How would he know that the person in front of him was also a viscount. If Shangguan Bing’er actually found out that Zhou Weiqing was actually making use of her name, who knows if she might just castrate him!

Zhou Weiqing said: “I need a extremely durable, strong but light metal to forge something. And it needs to be in a rush, I need it by today. Money is not a problem, but I need it to be hastened immediately.” As such, he took out the gold coins he had and laid them on the table.

Although Zhou Weiqing was not able to cultivate from young, but his thinking was definitely much more cunning and wily than anyone of his age. The reason why he used Shangguan Bing’er’s name was because he could not afford to wait for the usual time that such a forging order would take.

The boss immediately nodded and said: “No problem, we happen to have a valuable titanium alloy which has to be refined by a Fire Jewel Master. Although the price is high, it suits your requirements perfectly. It costs around 10 gold coins per kg of the alloy, but since this is for Viscount Shangguan Bing’er, I’ll give it to you at cost price of 7 gold coins per kg. How’s that?” As soon as Zhou Weiqing took out his gold, the boss had believed his tale.

Upon hearing the words titanium alloy, Zhou Weiqing’s eyes brightened. He had heard of the metal before, as his father had a suit of armor forged with titanium alloy. It was extremely tough and durable, yet extremely light and easy to manoeuvre in, and was considered one of the best materials for forging equipment. As such, he was overjoyed and immediately replied, “Great, that’s it. I want to forge this.” As he said that, Zhou Weiqing handed over his hat to the boss.

The boss was confused momentarily, “Isn’t this the hat for archers?”

Zhou Weiqing nodded, saying: “Exactly, we are looking to forge it like the hat. Just imagine, on the battlefield, the danger that we archers face are usually from enemy arrows. If the hats were made out of titanium alloy, the arrows that the enemy rain down upon us will not be able to hurt us. Furthermore, I require that a handle made from thick canvas be created inside of the hat. In that way, I can also hold it in my hand like a shield.”

Upon hearing Zhou Weiqing’s explanation, the boss was very impressed by the feasibility of the plan. However, titanium alloy

was so rare and expensive, how could it be issued to all archers?

Actually, Zhou Weiqing had thought about such an idea a long time ago. In the past when he was bored at home, he used to spend some time coming up with weird crazy ideas. Earlier, when he had been applying to join the army and the squad leader in charge had told him that archers were the safest unit, he knew that it had been bullshit. As the son of Admiral Zhou, how could he not know about the dangers of the archer units, especially those of Heavenly Bow Empire, which had one of the highest turnover rates. Due to the fact that the damage dealing capability of the archers were so high, they were also often focused heavily upon by enemies. Exchanging fire between archer units were also highly common. The only reason Zhou Weiqing still chose to join the archer unit was because he already had a few ideas on how to increase his safety, and it was also true that they would not engage much in melee combat.

He already had such an idea to turn the archer's hats into a shield at the age of eleven. To use it in the battlefield would be extremely easy, when they were under fire from the enemy, he would just need to crouch down, and huddle in a little with his head down, and the enemy arrows would likely all be blocked by the hat. Of course, such an idea would not be easy for commoners to think of, only someone like Zhou Weiqing who was inborn with such a fear of death, and had such a sly, cunning way of thinking, would be able to come up with such an idea. At that time, he had wanted to tell his father about the idea, but every time he looked at the stern face of his father he just could not speak up. Who knows if his father would approve or reject his idea, after all trying to outfit titanium alloy hats to the whole army of archers would be impossible.

“Respect! This must be Lord Viscount’s idea. How creative! Alright, we will take up this job, I’ll get everyone on it and rush it out by tonight. I’ll also only charge you the cost of the materials and not the service charge, so it should come up to around 6 gold coins per kg of titanium alloy.

This was the great part about tricking someone, not needing to ask for a discount, and the boss had automatically given one. Zhou Weiqing was rather proud of himself. As for the boss thinking such a sly idea came from Shangguan Bing’er, he didn’t care. After all, safety first was his motto.

“Boss, do you have any completed products made out of titanium alloy? Preferably for defence.” Zhou Weiqing had never heard of being able to get titanium alloy at the price of 6 gold coins per kg, as far as he knew the usual price was 10-12 gold coins per kg. Since he would be going onto the battlefield in the future, he wanted to prepare as much as possible.

“You’ve asked the right person, I have a set of internal armor made out of titanium alloy, and stitched together with the sinew of the heavenly beast Magic Tenacious Snake. It’s light but extremely durable, definitely more than enough for archers.” As he said that, the boss walked to the back of the counter and took out a silver shining internal armor.

Zhou Weiqing grabbed it in his hands and shook it open. It was a half-body armor, able to cover the entire top half of the body up to the hands. It was so extremely light, less than 2kg in weight, that was the benefit of the titanium alloy.

Zhou Weiqing was euphoric to see such an item, “Great, this is great, I want this. I estimate that this should be slightly more than one kg, but boss don’t worry, I won’t let you suffer a disadvantageous loss, I’ll count this as 2 kg. Here’s another 12 gold coins.” As he said that, Zhou Weiqing grabbed 12 coins and laid them down on the table at lightning speed.

Chapter 3 – Battalion's Commander Chest Muscles are not bad! (4)

The boss stared aghast at Zhou Weiqing, “Officer Sir, this... this... You can't count it like this! It took 2 experienced blacksmiths more than half a year to complete this, not to mention the cost of the sinew of the Magic Tenacious Snake.” He had priced this internal armor at 60 gold coins, which was nearly 20 years of an ordinary soldier's salary.

Zhou Weiqing widened his eyes in surprise, saying with an honest expression on his face: “Boss, didn't you say it was 6 gold coins per kg earlier? You also said you won't be charging me for the service. I'm buying this as a gift to our Battalion Commander, you wouldn't be so stingy right? You should have sincerity when running a business ah! How about this, if you really need to increase the price I can't argue, but I don't have enough money at this time, after I gift this to our Battalion Commander, I'll get her to reimburse you the remaining amount, is that okay? After all, our Battalion Commander is a pillar of our state ah! For her safety, I'm giving up the pay that I have saved for a few years, I really have nothing left already.” As he continued his story, this despicable rascal gave a look of pity and with tangled emotions.

“This... this...” Upon hearing that this was a gift for Shangguan Bing'er, the boss had a bizarre expression on his face. Meeting up with Zhou Weiqing really made him feel like weeping but he had no tears, and he finally gave up with a sigh, “Alright alright. Since it's for Lord Viscount, then I have nothing to say. But officer sir, do remember to look for me next time when you have any other bulk orders!”

Zhou Weiqing was laughing in his heart, and didn't dare to stay any longer, "Thanks so much! I'll come back later tonight for the hat. Oh yes, please add layers of cloth around the hat so that it looks just like a normal hat, if possible make the brim of the hat larger so that there will be more protection." After saying that, Zhou Weiqing grabbed the internal armor and left, feeling so pleased with himself.

After leaving the blacksmith, Zhou Weiqing turned around a corner into a quiet alleyway. He then took off his outer uniform, and wore the body-fitting internal armor. Although it was still a little large for him, but the elasticity of the sinew was very good, so he could tighten it a little, and after putting back his uniform, the internal armor was unnoticable.

"Such a great item ah! Sigh, unfortunately titanium alloy is unable to conduct Heavenly Energy, and is also unable to be enchanted with any further attributes, otherwise in addition to its unique qualities, its price would be sky high. Zhou Weiqing sighed with feeling. Titanium alloy had a lot of great points, but it was not perfect and had its own flaws as mentioned. Those flaws alone made it so that it was not a prime weapon for Jewel Masters, thus lowering the price.

After settling his things, Zhou decided to head towards the Stars Forest to retrieve a treasure he had hidden there. That was the most valuable thing he had in the thirteen years he had lived.

.....

Just as Zhou Weiqing was joining the army to become a cunning archer, in the Palace of Heavenly Bow Empire, another nervous atmosphere was prevalent.

“Father Emperor, please don’t be angry. It’s all my fault.” Princess Difuya was kneeling down in chagrin, sobbing.

In front of her, a middle aged man of around forty dressed in a gold robe was pacing back and forth, a golden crown on his head, his complexion as clear as jade, the aura of a man used to be in power was tangible in the air, causing the servants around to barely be able to breathe. At this moment, his brow was furrowed and his eyes were full of anger. On hearing Princess Difuya’s words, he stopped suddenly and shouted in anger: “Let me tell you! If Weiqing is alright then that’s fine, but if he really died from your actions, you will have to accompany him in death!”

When Difuya had returned to the palace earlier, she became more and more afraid as she thought about what happened. After a while, her reason finally overcame her fear, and she told her father, Emperor Di Feng Ling, what had happened. At first, she kept swallowing her words haltingly, but as soon as Di Feng Ling heard that it was regarding Zhou Weiqing, he immediately called the guard Niya over for questioning, until he finally got all the details straight. As soon as he knew the truth of the matter, he flew into a rage, and immediately sent the 4 Life Elemental Jewel Masters to go with Niya to find Zhou Weiqing and heal him.

Difuya stared in shock at her father. She had not expected Zhou Weiqing to have such importance in her father’s heart.

“Father Emperor, he is just an official of yours, but I’m your only daughter!” Di Feng Ling had one son and one daughter, the daughter of course was the 16 year old Difuya, and she also had a younger brother. Di Feng Ling was a great and illustrious leader, and after having a son and ensuring his health, he decided not to have any more children. The reason was simple, he did not want his children to end up fighting over his throne in the future, so he would just groom his only son with all his effort instead.

Di Feng Ling said in anger: “You still know you’re my only daughter? In the past, at our borders with the Kelise Empire, if not for Big Bro Zhou risking his life to save me, using his body to shield me from the enemy arrows, you would not be alive right now! At that time, Big Bro Zhou was hit by 26 arrows, and it took the combined might of our 4 Life Elemental Jewel Masters a whole month to be able to rescue his life. For the past 20 years, Big Bro Zhou has risked his life countless of times, shedding blood and tears in his deeds of valour over countless battles. Without him, there would be no Heavenly Bow Empire, and would you be a Princess then? As a member of the royal family, you aren’t putting any effort into improve our empire, instead always daydreaming about a prince charming riding into your life. Let alone today Zhou Weiqing probably saw you by accident or coincidence, even if he peeped on you on purpose, so what? You are his fiancée, to put it in blunt ugly terms, even if he you, it’s also nothing. But you... you actually attacked him, and with your Elemental Jewel skill. I can tell you that I’m not joking, if Weiqing really dies, you will have to accompany him in death, else I can’t answer to Big Bro Zhou.

Difuya was really afraid now, especially since Di Feng Ling had twice said that she would be buried together with Zhou Weiqing, she knew that her father had made up his mind no matter how

much she didn't want to believe it.

“Your Majesty.” At this moment, 5 people entered the room, bowing to Di Feng Ling. It was the 4 Life Elemental Jewel Masters he had sent out.

“How is it? How is Weiqing?” Di Feng Ling asked worriedly.

The leader of the Life Elemental Jewel Masters said respectfully: “Do not worry your Majesty, we did not manage to find Viscount Zhou, but upon careful examination of the area, we found his footsteps leading away. We can conclude that Viscount Zhou managed to leave safely.”

Di Feng Ling's brow furrowed, “How is that possible? Weiqing is an ordinary person without Heavenly Energy, enduring a blow from a Fire Elemental Jewel, I'm afraid...”

The Jewel Master said: “Viscount Zhou is Admiral Zhou's son after all. Perhaps, the admiral gave him some defensive items that could save his life.”

Di Feng Ling's expression finally eased up, and he turned to Difuya and said: “Get up, follow me to the Admiral's mansion to apologise to Weiqing.”

At this point, how could Difuya dare say anything in contrary? Although she was scolding Zhou Weiqing in her heart, but she still got up and followed her father, feeling like she was being wronged.

.....

Of course, Zhou Weiqing did not know what sort of trouble he had brought to the capital city. The next dawn, he had an enjoyable breakfast in his inn before shouldering his longbow and heading towards the army camp.

Chapter 4 – The secrets of Heavenly Jewel Masters (1)

The camp was just outside the city gates, and Zhou Weiqing walked into the camp excitedly, touching his brand new internal armor and his freshly custom made 1 kg hat. It seems it had totally forgotten what trouble he had gotten himself into yesterday.

As he entered the camp, he bumped into someone familiar. It was the the Company Leader who had asked him how the feeling was like. However, at this time, this fellow's face was all serious, and he held out a hand to stop Zhou Weiqing.

“You're Little Fatty Zhou right?”

Zhou Weiqing gave a honest smile, “Yes! Company Leader Big Bro, I'm Little Fatty Zhou.”

The Company Leader said with a stern voice: “What Big Bro? In the army, there is only our posts and ranks. I'm Mao Li, Company Leader from the 5th Regiment, 3rd Battalion, 4th Company. From now onwards, you are a member of my 4th Company, understood?”

Zhou Weiqing replied: “Understood”. Although he said that, but in his heart he was slandering the Company Leader: Mao Li? Donkey? Company Leader Donkey?

TL: 毛利 Mao Li is the name, sounding similar to 毛驴 Mao Lu

which means donkey.

Company Leader Mao Li did not know that a moment of solemnity had caused that rascal to give him such a nickname, a nickname that would follow him throughout his entire military career.

“Follow me.” Mao Li turned and headed towards the main tent.

Zhou Weiqing followed him rather perplexedly, wondering why the Company Leader would personally look after him. After all, he was just a fresh new recruit, normally a squad leader would be handling him. After all, a Company Leader was leading 100 men, and for Heavenly Bow Empire whose army was rather small, they were considered as mid-ranked officials in the army, while a Battalion Commander like Shangguan Bing'er was already considered a high ranking general.

Mao Li brought him deeper and deeper into the camp, into a more desolated area, before finally entering a small tent at the very edge of the camp site.

Zhou Weiqing followed him in. The tent was only 10 metres or so in size, and there was only one bunk in it, without any other decorations or equipment.

Mao Li stood in the tent, saying: “Before the recruitment ends and we head to the recruit training, you will be staying here. This time, our 5th Regiment will be recruiting a thousand men, and our 3rd Battalion alone will be recruiting a hundred, and I estimate

we'll probably take at least half a month to finish recruitment.

Zhou Weiqing said in surprise: “Wow, Company Leader, the treatment of our soldiers are so good, we all have our own personal tents?”

“Heh heh” Mao Li laughed, saying: “Of course not, this is specially for you. You rascal, I can't help you here, you'll have to take responsibility for your own actions. Alright, you just rest for now. The army mess is at the left quadrant of the camp, and should be very easy to find. When it is time for us to head for the recruit training, someone will inform you.” With that, he turned and left the tent.

After Mao Li had left, Zhou Weiqing had a very bad feeling about the current scenario. He took off his longbow and quiver and left them on the floor before exiting the tent as well.

Previously, he had not examined the area closely. Now, with a wary heart, he took a more detailed survey of his surroundings, and realised that the closest tent to him was 50 metres away. It could be said that his tent was on the very edge of the camp.

Could it be that his real identity had been discovered? That shouldn't be possible! He had been so careful. Suddenly, an beautiful but angry face flashed into Zhou Weiqing's mind, and his heart sank, muttering to himself: “Shangguan Bing'er that chick is the top genius in the Empire, she shouldn't be a big-boobed bimbo and be so fussy and vindictive against me right?”

“Zhou....Little.... Fatty....!!!!” At this time, an angry voice which clearly was with teeth gritted sounded in his ear. The voice was as enchanting as an oriole’s chirp, but the tone in it did not bode well for Zhou Weiqing.

Zhou Weiqing spun around quickly, to see Shangguan Bing’er dressed in army fatigues with a dark purple longbow on her back. Zhou Weiqing couldn’t help but stare at her in a daze; her air was tied up in a ponytail, and she was not wearing any armor, allowing the dark purple fatigues she was wearing to further accentuate her curves. Coupled with the longbow on her back, she was a lovely picture of a valiant warrior. Unfortunately, the expression on her lovely face was extremely black, almost as if she were about to spit out fire, clearly she had heard him say the words ‘big-boobed bimbo’.

Ugh, what sort of luck is this? Zhou Weiqing sighed in his heart, quickly putting on his signature honest smile, “Lord Battalion Commander! I was just uh praising you .. uhm .. on your growth uhh.. development” Having been caught red-handed, even the glib Zhou Weiqing had no idea how to talk his way out of this one.

Shangguan Bing’er was furious! She had originally asked Company Leader Mao Li to assign Zhou Weiqing to this isolated tent so that she could take some revenge on him. At first, she was feeling a bit guilty about it, questioning if she was being too hard on him; after all Zhou Weiqing was just a new recruit, and while he was infuriating, his previous ‘misdeeds’ had all been accidental. But after listening to his words just now, how could she still be fooled by his honest outlook.

“Private Zhou, Attention!” She shouted loudly.

Zhou Weiqing hurriedly stood at attention, there was no comparing the two of them, after all Shangguan Bing'er was not only his commanding officer with a much higher rank, she was also a Heavenly Jewel Master. As the saying goes, a wise man does not fight when the odds are against him.

Shangguan Bing'er reached out with her right hand and took out a horse whip from around her waist, and glared at Zhou Weiqing coldly, saying: “Private Zhou, for insulting a superior officer, your punishment is 10 whips, the penalty will be administered by Shangguan Bing'er. Little Fatty Zhou, turn around now.”

Zhou Weiqing looked mournfully at the whip in Shangguan Bing'er's hands, crying in his heart. He did not imagine that he would be whipped on the first day in camp, but now he was under her command and he could only turn around with an unwilling, heavy heart.

Shangguan Bing'er gave an angry hrmph, with a quick stride she was behind Zhou Weiqing, and Pah sounded resounded as it whipped across Zhou Weiqing's back.

“AHHHHHHHHH!!” Zhou Weiqing's shrill screams sounded like he was being castrated, his whole body fell onto the floor face first, rolling around in agony.

Shangguan Bing'er looked at the whip in her hands questioningly, thinking hesitatingly: Was it that painful? I didn't

use any Heavenly Energy in that blow! This Little Fatty Zhou looks so stout, who knew he is so frail?

Zhou Weiqing's acting was actually so realistic, his body writhing around in pain as he rolled on the ground as if he was about to die.

If we were talking about getting beaten up, who had more experience than him? Since young, he had been punished by beatings countless of times by his father, and he was fully experienced in all sorts of trickeries when he was being beaten.

When Shangguan Bing'er whipped him, he had already dove forward in perfect timing to reduce the impact on his back, and then acted out the scenario to use his pain to win sympathy. He had a lot of experience using this tactic, and was extremely skilled in pulling it off, to the point where it was almost second nature. In truth, this rascal was gloating in his heart, after all he was wearing the titanium alloy internal armor, added to the fact that Shangguan Bing'er had not used any Heavenly Energy, he pretty much did not even feel anything. As such, his act of pain was only a subconscious act that he had performed, and since he had started with it he might as well milk the situation.

Looking at Little Fatty Zhou's pain, Shangguan Bing'er couldn't bring herself to hit him a second time. After rolling around for a while, Zhou Weiqing finally quietened down, but still lay there twitching, as if he couldn't make it already.

Chapter 4 – The secrets of Heavenly Jewel Masters (2)

Shangguan Bing'er hrmphed in anger, "Little Fatty Zhou, I'll administer the remaining 9 whips another time. With your weak physique, how can you be a proper soldier? Before the recruit training starts, this Battalion Commander will be giving you some personal tough training. If you can't finish it, just get lost from here and don't throw our 3rd Battalion's face! I'll come and find you after lunch." After saying that, she spun around and stalked off.

Zhou Weiqing watched her leave, after which he leapt to his feet, the sly expression on his face gone. "There is such a difference between people's personalities. From now on, I shall not anger this Battalion Commander already. Compared to Difuya, she is such a kind soul." Honestly, he had not imagined that he would be let off so easily, he could easily foresee that if the person administering the beatings had been Difuya, he would definitely have to suffer all the remaining 9 blows. Zhou Weiqing had clearly seen the expression on Shangguan Bing'er's face after the first blow, that she couldn't bear to hit him a second time, and he had a very good impression and liking of her. Of course, for this rascal, that liking caused him to slyly think back of the feeling in his hands from the previous day, causing him to drool again.

Soon it was noon; the lunch in the army was nothing special, it was simple and only meant to ensure stomachs were filled. Since Zhou Weiqing wasn't used to any special treatment or foods at home, he was fine with just filling his stomach with the standard fare. Of course, he was eating at the ordinary soldier's mess, the officers had a separate mess area. By the time he got back from

lunch, he saw that Shangguan Bing'er was already standing outside his tent waiting for him, dressed in the same outfit as earlier in the morning. Zhou Weiqing was secretly thinking, how great it would be if she were his girlfriend waiting for him. Of course, it was just a passing thought – Zhou Weiqing's greatest strength was that he knew his limits, he would not really expect that the top genius in the empire would fall in love with such a trash who could not cultivate like him.

“Greetings Battalion Commander.” Zhou Weiqing quickly walked up towards Shangguan Bing'er and gave her a smart salute.

Although Shangguan Bing'er had a very kind nature, but she was also very intelligent. In the morning, after she had left Zhou Weiqing after the whipping, she realised that she had been fooled. After all, she had not used much strength, how could he be in such pain? That rascal had clearly been acting. He might look very honest but that Little Fatty Zhou was definitely not a good person, if she did not punish him for that she would not be able to assuage her anger. To think that the first man to ever touch her body was such a rascal, Shangguan Bing'er almost couldn't control her anger.

“Little Fatty Zhou, let me ask you, to an archer what is the most important?” Shangguan Bing'er asked solemnly.

Zhou Weiqing answered unhesitatingly: “Speed, strength and accuracy.”

Shangguan Bing'er heard his swift and accurate reply and was rather surprised, “Very good, you're right. From your conduct this

morning, your physique is in bad shape and not up to standard for an archer. As such, from now onwards, I will be conducting special training for you.”

Upon hearing that, Zhou Weiqing’s face changed, “Lord Battalion Commander, can we start later? I just ate lunch, and need an afternoon nap.”

Shangguan Bing’er said angrily: “Do you have the qualification to bargain with me? A soldier has to follow orders, I hope you remember that point, or you will never be a good soldier, let alone an officer. I’m going to prepare some things, the special training will start in an hour.”

After Shangguan Bing’er left, Zhou Weiqing laughed and said, “Although this girl acts tough, but her heart is really soft. She has given me an hour of rest, haha in front of this young master there is no point acting. Alright, I’ll go take a nap. Afternoon naps are a good habit, good for the complexion.”

When Shangguan Bing’er returned in an hour carrying a heavy duffel bag, all she heard was the snoring sounds of Little Fatty Zhou.

Shangguan Bing’er was both amused and vexed at the same time. This Little Fatty Zhou rascal really just ate and slept, couldn’t he tell that she was using her rank to take revenge on him? It was unbelievable that he could still sleep so soundly.

“Little Fatty Zhou, Wake up!” Shangguan Bing’er shouted loudly

outside the tent, she naturally would not enter his tent, what if that rascal was sleeping naked?

The snores continued.

A sly light flashed in Shangguan Bing'er's beautiful eyes, and she suddenly shouted loudly: "FIRE!! FIRE!!"

"Aaaahhh..." A loud screech resounded from within the tent, preceding Zhou Weiqing rushing and stumbling clumsily out of the tent. Luckily, although he was dishevelled, at least he was still clothed.

"Where, Where?" shouted Zhou Weiqing as he rushed out, face was filled with panic.

Shangguan Bing'er said exasperatedly: "Are you so afraid of death?"

By now Zhou Weiqing had finally fully woken up, and looking around, he realised that there wasn't any sight of flames around and immediately knew that he had been tricked. His face full of indignation, he said: "It's human nature to be scared of death, those who aren't scared of death are fools. If there's nothing else, I'm going back to sleep." Having said that, he actually turned around and headed back to his tent.

"You wretch, stop right now!" Shangguan Bing'er realised that every time she faced Little Fatty Zhou she would always fall into a

rage.

“Battalion Commander, is there anything else?” Zhou Weiqing asked impatiently.

“Special training.” Shangguan Bing'er gritted her teeth as she looked at the rascal, and she lifted her hand and threw the duffel bag into Zhou Weiqing's arms. She had already decided that no matter what, she would teach him a lesson today and assuage her anger.

Zhou Weiqing felt his hands filled with a sudden weight, and upon opening the bag, he saw it was filled to the brim with rocks, weighing about 20kg in total. Immediately, he didn't dare to act anymore and said with a pitiable expression: “Battalion Commander, this is too harsh right.”

Shangguan Bing'er said coldly: “As an archer, your speed and strength are far from passable, if you don't get a large amount of physical training, how can you survive?”

Zhou Weiqing said: “But, shouldn't being accurate at shooting be enough?”

Shangguan Bing'er asked suspiciously: “Is your archery very accurate?”

Zhou Weiqing had some confidence in his archery, and immediately nodded.

Shangguan Bing'er said: "Okay, if your archery is more accurate, or at least equal, to mine, then you won't have to undergo my special training. Take your equipment and follow me."

Zhou Weiqing shouldered his bow and brought his quiver, and followed Shangguan Bing'er out of the camp.

Once they were out of the camp, Shangguan Bing'er stopped, and pointed towards a large tree, whose trunk was about as thick as a human, about 200 yards away: "See that tree? To be a passable archer, you need to be able to shoot a human figure at least 200 yards away. Your target now is the centre of the tree trunk. Go ahead."

Zhou Weiqing took down his longbow, and took out an arrow of around 90 cm long from his quiver, nocking it to the bow. He drew the bow and took aim – the tree at 200 yards away was but a slim figure – before releasing the arrow.

Chapter 4 – The secrets of Heavenly Jewel Masters (3)

With a swooshing sound, the arrow flew out and embedded itself firmly with a thud into the tree trunk, just a little left of the centre mark. The shot was already considered quite accurate, in the 3rd Battalion, it was mostly only the Company Leaders who could do so well. Although the passing mark of 200m accuracy on a human sized target was true, but the number of soldiers who could actually pull it off was not many.

“Haha! I hit!” Zhou Weiqing waved his bow at Shangguan Bing’er smugly. He actually did not have a 100% confidence in hitting the target, for his skill it was likely he would hit 7 out of 10 times, which was one of the reasons why he chose to join the archer unit in the first place.

“Is that even counted as a hit? I asked you to hit the centre of the trunk. I can shoot more accurately than you even using my feet.” Shangguan Bing’er said scornfully.

Zhou Weiqing immediately seized upon her words, “Using your feet? Prove it! If you can use your feet to shoot the centre of the trunk, I’ll listen to you and do the training.”

“I’m your Battalion Commander, you’re supposed to listen to my commands anyway! Give me your bow and arrow.” Shangguan Bing’er said with some anger.

Zhou Weiqing handed over his longbow and arrow, and

Shangguan Bing'er said coldly, "Watch this." As she said that, she kicked off her army boots, revealing a pair of white soft feet. Before Zhou Weiqing could react, she used her foot to grasp the bow's handle, her right leg moving back to raise the whole bow up. Next, she supported herself upside down with both hands, and used the other foot to grasp an arrow from the quiver.

What made Zhou Weiqing gape in awe was that, Shangguan Bing'er's (reversed-side) body was arched in a bow-shape, right foot in front, left foot nocking the arrow to the bowstring and pulling it in a crescent shape. Her shapely buttocks were almost pressed upon her own head, and her long legs were right in front of Zhou Weiqing.

Her right foot released the string, and with a swoosh, the arrow shot out like lightning. Zhou Weiqing followed it with his eyes, to see the arrow slam into the tree trunk – right smack in the middle.

That was possible? That skill of using her legs to shoot was unbelievably graceful. Zhou Weiqing praised in his heart. She is truly worthy of being the top youthful genius in the whole empire! What Shangguan Bing'er displayed earlier was totally her body's flexibility and control, and she did not use a single bit of Heavenly Energy or her Heavenly Jewels, but followed Zhou Weiqing and only used ordinary physical abilities to shoot the arrow.

With a flip, Shangguan Bing'er righted herself to stand in front of Zhou Weiqing, before throwing him back the bow and quiver. She said quietly: "Now are you convinced?"

Zhou Weiqing looked at her earnestly and said: "Battalion

Commander, I think that the next time if you are wearing a dress, you shouldn't use such a skill, else you will reveal everything. But really, your legs are very beautiful." He also had a sentence he kept to himself: Your buttocks are really shapely too!

Shangguan Bing'er had seen his dazed look earlier and thought he had been impressed by her, little did she expect that he would say something like that, making her eyes blaze in anger again, her face flushed in embarrassment. "What is your head is filled with, always thinking such dirty thoughts? Now, Immediately, without delay, carry this bag and run around the camp until I say stop or I'll change the training to sparring with me!!!"

"I'll run now.." Zhou Weiqing said with a wronged look, and he shouldered the bag and started running slowly. Unfortunately for him, no matter how pitiful he acted now, in Shangguan Bing'er's eyes he had a provoking look that made her want to hit him.

"Faster!" Shangguan Bing'er gave him a kick to the behind, before wearing her boots and following him. She would personally oversee his running, and not give him a chance to slack off.

Zhou Weiqing turned his head to look at Shangguan Bing'er, and realised that she now had 2 bright red gems around her wrists.

Are those heavenly jewels? Zhou Weiqing looked on in wonder. Although running while carrying a weight of 20kg was not easy, but he could still handle it for now. Towards Heavenly Jewels, he had a lot of natural curiosity and yearning, and he couldn't help asking: "Battalion Commander, are those your Heavenly Jewels? I've heard that Heavenly Jewel Masters have both Physical and

Elemental Jewels, your Elemental Jewels are of the Fire alignment rubies?” The 2 red gems were indeed very similar in look to the fire elemental jewels of Difuya, the only difference he could see was the brightness of the glows. Compared to Difuya’s Jewels, the Jewels Shangguan Bing’er’s left wrist were much brighter, almost twice so. Also, as compared to the more costly feel of the rubies of Difuya, the 2 red Jewels on her wrist now had a more softer, agile look that gave a comfortable peaceful feeling.

Shangguan Bing’er said: “If you run faster, I’ll tell you.” Although she was angry with Little Fatty Zhou, she did not have any guarded feelings against him. As a Heavenly Jewel Master, she could tell that Zhou Weiqing did not have any Heavenly Energy within him.

At this point, Zhou Weiqing did not bother trying to slack off anymore, and hurriedly picked up the pace. Although it would be more difficult, but his curiosity about Heavenly Jewels overcame all of that.

Shangguan Bing’er said: “Heavenly Jewel Masters are different from individual Physical or Elemental Jewel Masters. It isn’t just as simple as having both types of jewels. You seem to know the basics of Physical and Elemental Jewel Masters, can you tell how mine differs?” As she said that, she showed the Jewels on her right hand as well.

Around her right wrist were two Jade Jewels, both light green and translucent emeralds.

“Dragonstone Jade.... Pure?” Zhou Weiqing said in surprise.

Dragonstone Jade were considered high-grade for Jewel Masters, as they signified an improvement in agility. But this was not what gave Zhou Weiqing the surprise, instead it was the sheer purity of the gem. He could see that Shangguan Bing'er's physical gem had no other jades mixed in, and was purely the agility type Dragonstone Jade.

Shangguan Bing'er said: "The Physical Jewels of Heavenly Jewel Masters differ from those of Physical Jewel Masters in terms of purity. That is to say, Heavenly Jewel Masters only have one type of physical enhancement, for example mine is agility. However, the amount of enhancement is equivalent to 1.5 times that of a normal Physical Jewel. All these knowledge are taught in Jewel Master schools.

Purity, so it was purity. Zhou Weiqing was suddenly enlightened to the difference between Physical and Heavenly Jewel Masters. Although there was only one attribute that was enhanced, but a difference of 150% for every level meant that for the same level, no matter what physical attribute Heavenly Jewel Masters were boosted by, a normal Physical Jewel Master could never be of a match.

Shangguan Bing'er continued: "As for my Elemental Jewel, it isn't a ruby as you mentioned. My element is not fire, but wind." Actually, she had no need to explain everything to Zhou Weiqing; she didn't know why but she felt a sense of happiness looking at that fellow's shocked face.

"Wind? But Wind Elemental Jewels should be green tourmaline!" Zhou Weiqing was once again surprised.

Shangguan Bing'er shook her head and said: "Similarly, Heavenly Jewel Master's Elemental Jewels are also different from ordinary Elemental Jewel Masters'. This Elemental Jewel of mine is also a tourmaline, but it is the rarest of all tourmalines – a red tourmaline, also known as King Tourmaline. This is another difference between Heavenly Jewel Masters and Elemental Jewel Masters – although both are wind elementals, but my King Tourmaline's wind attribute is about 1.5 times that of an ordinary tourmaline. It's the same for other attributes, in simple terms, Heavenly Jewels are always the highest grade of Elemental Jewels."

Chapter 4 – The secrets of Heavenly Jewel Masters (4)

“Wow, so fierce? Does that mean that a single Jewelled Heavenly Jewel Master is stronger than a 2-jewelled Physical or Elemental Jewel Master?” Zhou Weiqing said in shock.

Shangguan Bing'er said: “In terms of raw strength, yes. However, Heavenly Jewel Master's also have a tougher time cultivating than ordinary Physical or Elemental Jewel Masters. Throughout the whole mainland, Physical or Elemental Jewel Masters who are able to cultivate to the 9th Jewel are still quite plentiful. However, we still have not heard of any Heavenly Jewel Master who has been able to cultivate to the maximum. In fact, Heavenly Jewel Masters should be considered a different profession altogether. Legend says that the strongest Heavenly Jewel Masters can train up to 12 Jewels, such a level is already against nature's law, able to change anything in the world.” As she continued speaking, her eyes revealed a yearning for such a level.

12 Jewels, so Heavenly Jewel Masters could actually cultivate up to 12 Jewels, and not the 9 of the ordinary Physical or Elemental Jewel Masters. Only after listening to Shangguan Bing'er's elucidation, did Zhou Weiqing finally realize how strong his father was. After all, his father was an 8-Jewel Heavenly Jewel Master!

As such, Zhou Weiqing asked probingly: “I hear that our Heavenly Bow Empire's Admiral Zhou is also a Heavenly Jewel Master, is he very strong?”

Without hesitation, Shangguan Bing'er said: “Of course he's

strong! Admiral Zhou is the person I respect the most! His level is considered strong even in those large countries, let alone in our Heavenly Bow Empire. His Majesty once said before, even all the Jewel Masters in our Heavenly Bow Empire together would not be able to defeat Admiral Zhou alone. After all, Admiral Zhou has already cultivated up to 8 Heavenly Jewels, and is a mid level Tian Zong. In the whole mainland, he is still considered a first class expert. Furthermore, Admiral Zhou's elemental alignment is one of the 4 top elemental alignments.

Although Shangguan Bing'er was praising his father, Zhou Weiqing somehow could not be overjoyed. The reason was simple, after his burst of exertion running quickly, his stamina was almost drained bare; he was totally drenched in sweat and panting, even speaking was too difficult now.

"Hurry up." The whip appeared in Shangguan Bing'er's hands, and looking at Zhou Weiqing's face streaming with sweat, she couldn't help but feel a sense of joy. This rascal actually had quite a good physical condition, after running so long with the load he was still able to persevere, it was clear that the pain he showed earlier in the morning after the one whip was all acting.

"Battalion Commander, I can't continue anymore, let me rest a while please." Zhou Weiqing wiped the sweat from his face, looking at her pleadingly.

Unfortunately, this time Shangguan Bing'er had already resolved to not fall for the same trick again, her beautiful face turned cold, and her whip lashed out like lightning to land on Zhou Weiqing's buttocks. The pain caused Zhou Weiqing to shudder, and his

slowing footsteps picked up speed again. His internal armor did not cover his buttocks after all.

On the other hand, Shangguan Bing'er who was running alongside Zhou Weiqing, was almost like a ghost, her feet lightly touching the ground and every step she seemed to float almost 10 metres; her running seemed almost effortless. Her Physical Jewel attribute was to increase agility and speed, and her Elemental Jewel was also the fastest attribute wind; it could be said that she had the perfect combination of attributes for an agility type Heavenly Jewel Master. If she ran at her top speed, even a 4-Jewel Physical Jewel Master would not be able to catch up with her.

“Ahh! The pain is killing me!” Upon getting the whipping, Zhou Weiqing subconsciously followed the momentum to try and fall down again. However, just as he was about to do so, a slim fine foot appeared in front of him, the toes hooking his chest and stabilizing his falling body. Following which, another whip fell upon his buttocks, causing him to yell in pain again.

“Try acting some more.” Shangguan Bing'er said with gritted teeth. She had barely used any strength on her first blow as a test, and just as she had expected, that fellow had failed the test miserably, proving he was acting all along.

In front of Shangguan Bing'er, Zhou Weiqing did not even have the chance to fall down. She was like a purple shadow following him, as soon as he slowed down, a whip would land; as soon as he pretended to fall, he would be stabilized followed by another whip. This time, he had really gotten the worst of it, his buttocks were burning in pain, and his body was getting more tired by the

second, and his lungs were like on fire, but he still could not slow down at all.

“Battalion Commander... I... I... I was ... wrong.” Sweet talking was Zhou Weiqing’s specialty, and he was no stranger to admitting his mistakes. After all, a wise man does not fight when the odds are against him. Alas, once bitten twice shy, after being fooled so many times, Shangguan Bing’er was not falling for his tricks once again.

“Now you know you’re wrong? It’s too late.” Shangguan Bing’er said angrily.

After 15 minutes, Zhou Weiqing’s army uniform was already totally drenched in sweat; after all he was carrying 20 kg weights while running! Furthermore, he was only 13 years old, how could he withstand such a high intensity workout.

His vision blurred and blacked out, and his body fell forward once again. Shangguan Bing’er’s foot reached him again as usual, but this time although she had hooked him up, but before her whip could fall once again, Zhou Weiqing’s body continued falling down. Shangguan Bing’er blanked for a moment, then with a flash she was behind him, supporting his body down onto the ground with her foot. Only then did she realise that this fellow had actually really fainted this time.

“Oi, Oi. Little Fatty Zhou.” Shangguan Bing’er nudged his body with his foot twice. The tourmaline on her left wrist flashed, and a pale red glow flew out to land on Zhou Weiqing’s wrist. She did not want to touch him, and thus used her energy to check his pulse.

“He really fainted?” Shangguan Bing’er’s Heavenly Energy was already at the 8th stage of Heavenly Jing Energy, although she was only using her Heavenly Energy from her Elemental Jewel to check Zhou Weiqing’s physical condition, but it was clear that this time he was not acting and had really fainted from exhaustion.

Chapter 5 – Immortal Deity Technique, Heavenly Jewel Awakens (1)

Admiral's Mansion.

In the parlor, 2 men sat at the head seats, one of them was the current Emperor of Heavenly Bow Empire, Di Fengling. On the other side was a sturdy man who was like an iron pagoda, looking around 50 years of age, with bronzed skin that seemed the shine with a healthy glow, with a squarish face, a set of tiger-like eyes, straight nose and squarish mouth. Although he was seated, anyone could easily see his tall, large frame. The muscles that seemed hard as rock were accentuated by his uniform, and his eyes were full of energy, the black irises seemed to glow from within. This man was the pillar of Heavenly Bow Empire, Admiral Zhou Shuiniu, also Zhou Weiqing's father.

Admiral Zhou was similar to Shangguan Bing'er, he was also born from a common family, and he grew up taking care of water buffaloes for a living, which was the reason for his name. Of course, no one dared to laugh at his name, anyone who did so was already dead.

“Your Majesty, look at this. Someone sent it to me this morning, it's that little brat's handwriting.” Zhou Shuiniu handed Di Fengling a letter.

“Big Bro Zhou, are you making this up to comfort me? I've made up my mind already, if anything happens to Weiqing, Difuya will accompany him in death.” Di Fengling said firmly. He had brought Difuya to the mansion yesterday to apologise personally, but had

then heard that Zhou Weiqing had not returned, and immediately sent a large number of men to search around the city to no avail.

Zhou Shuiniu said gravely: “Your Majesty, how would this official dare lie to you? You shouldn’t be tricked by that brat’s honest appearance, he’s actually more cunning than anyone, even I have been tricked by him many times. My guess is this time he knows that he has gotten in serious trouble and is afraid that I’ll beat him up that’s why he doesn’t dare to run home. He has described it so beautifully, hmph, going out and making a living by traveling; I call bullshit, it’s more likely he doesn’t dare to come home, we can just ignore him.”

Di Fengling said with a bitter smile: “As long as Weiqing does not come home safely, I can’t be at peace! This situation is Difuya’s fault after all, big bro, if Weiqing returns home you must not beat him. After all, this child, such a poor thing, he didn’t ask to be born with his meridians blocked, you shouldn’t make things more difficult for him already.”

“Hmph” Zhou Shuiniu gave a sound of displeasure, saying: “Tiger father, dog son. But that little rascal knows his own limits at least. He’s right, how can he be a match for Her Highness the Princess? In my opinion, we should do as he says and call off the engagement.”

Di Fengling’s face changed, “How can that be! Difuya is now part of your Zhou Family, and will die as a Zhou Family ghost. Big bro, you know that kings do not say things lightly. There should be no more discussion of this matter, if I look down on Weiqing just because he isn’t a Jewel Master and break the engagement, how

can I have the face to call you bro.”

.....

When Zhou Weiqing regained consciousness, he found himself back in his own tent. As soon as he awoke, he felt that his whole body was in pain, and his body was unbearable with the stench of sweat. His legs hurt especially so, feeling like they were made of lead, and any movement was as if a thousand needles were jabbing into him, causing him to moan in pain.

“Shangguan Bing’er you just wait, some day I will press you under me and ravage you.”

After resting for a while, Zhou Weiqing managed to crawl up from his bunk. As soon as he sat up, he saw that beside the bunk lay 2 large bowls as well as a handwritten note.

In the two large bowls, one of them held 3 large steam buns, and the other had 2 dishes of food, one fried vegetables and the other was stewed meat. Zhou Weiqing had expended all his energy in the afternoon and was starving, so he immediately helped himself to the food, thinking: At least she has some conscience. The steamed buns and dishes are still warm, and the taste is quite good, it definitely did not come from the normal soldiers’ mess. As he ate, Zhou Weiqing looked at the note, which only had 4 words on it: We will continue tomorrow.

“Damnit, it hasn’t ended! I just touched you once!” Zhou Weiqing said in exasperation, then wretchedly squeezed the steamed bun in

his hands with all his mind, as if trying to remember the feeling in his hands.

Zhou Weiqing made short work of dinner, then quickly left the tent, enduring with great difficulty the pain while taking a bath. Although this rascal was cunning and afraid of death, but he had one good point at least, he loved to be clean. He also washed his clothes; do not think that because he was of noble birth he did not know how to do household chores, in fact it was the opposite, he was experienced in all the various household chores from cooking to cleaning, mainly because of his strict father. In the Admiral's mansion, Zhou Weiqing stayed alone in a little courtyard, after the age of 6 he was forced to be self reliant, with no servants to wait upon him, although everything he needed was supplied. Because of this, Admiral Zhou and his wife got into many fights, but Admiral Zhou was stubborn about it, and in the end the Lady Admiral could only get the right to teach Zhou Weiqing to do the chores personally.

After cleansing himself and the uniform, Zhou Weiqing changed to a fresh set of uniform and returned to his tent. By now, the entire camp was quiet.

After returning to his tent, Zhou Weiqing opened the cloth bag that he carried with him, inside were the sundry goods that he had bought after leaving the blacksmith, including powdered cooking condiments, lamp oil etc, though they were trivial items but still necessary for living. The thing he was most worried about becoming a soldier was not being fed well, so he bought those condiments so it would make it easier for him to make some food if necessary. As for the lamp oil, that would come in handy right now.

Zhou Weiqing took out the rice bowl that he had washed, and poured some lamp oil into it before taking a few thin threads twisted together and soaked them in the oil for a while before making it into a wick. He then lighted it, thus creating a temporary lamp, lighting up his small tent.

After doing that, he stuck his head out of his tent and looked around to ascertain that he was alone, before bringing his head back in. He then reached into his shirt carefully and took out a oil-cloth bag that was kept there.

“Luckily I wrapped it carefully with this oil-cloth bag, I sweated so much today, if it had been ruined then I’d be in deep trouble.”

He carefully opened the bag to reveal an old book resting inside; it wasn’t even made of paper but was bound together using high quality goat leather, was around 2 inches thick and was around several tens of pages long. It definitely looked primitive in nature, and the edges were all frayed. On top of the book were 4 large words: [The Immortal Deity Technique](#).

This was the treasure that Zhou Weiqing went to retrieve in the Stars Forest yesterday. It was something he had found when he was ten years old and Admiral Zhou had thrown him into a deep old patch of forest to train his survival skills; he had found it on a skeleton then, and hadn’t told anyone else even Admiral Zhou, but hid it in a small hole in a tree within the Stars Forest since then.

As he opened the cover to reveal the first page, it showed a small

line of words: Immortal Deity Technique General Principles.

Those without strong willpower cannot learn this, those who do not have the will to die learning this cannot do so. Immortal Deity Technique is actually Definite-Death Deity Technique, but it is to turn the impossible into the possible, using the 36 Large Death Acupuncture Points as cultivation points, retrieving life from death, if not careful it will mark certain death. Be careful, be careful. Those who can break through the 36 Large Death Acupuncture Points will be able to receive and use the energy of the world, to live as long as the world.

不死神功 – Literally 不死 means Not dying or Undying – I used Immortal in place here

Chapter 5 – Immortal Deity Technique, Heavenly Jewel Awakens (2)

Originally, when Zhou Weiqing got this Immortal Deity Technique, he was scared off by the general principles, and thus never dared to start learning it. He had only merely glanced at the contents of the Immortal Deity Technique.

To cultivate Heavenly Energy, one had to have a training art, and using the training art to cultivate Heavenly Energy, absorbing the Heavenly Energy from the surroundings to strengthen one's body and improve their internal Heavenly Energy. Heavenly Energy was split into four large stages, Heavenly Jing Energy, Heavenly Xu Energy, Heavenly Shen Energy and Heavenly Dao Energy, and each stage was again split into 12 different levels. This Immortal Deity Technique was one such training art, but it was extremely unique and differed greatly from the normal training arts.

Normal training arts, no matter what class, were usually various styles of meditation or training the body; all different ways to stimulate the inner talent to absorb the surrounding energy as a foundation. However, the Immortal Deity Technique had carved a totally new path of cultivation instead, it could be said that at the very core of the technique it was very simple – to breakthrough the body's Great Acupuncture Points. There was no real need to absorb heavenly energy from the surroundings through meditation or body training – every time one broke through a Death Acupuncture Point, his Internal Heavenly Energy would raise a level. Collecting Heavenly Energy would be for the purpose of breaking through the Death Acupuncture Points. As such, it could be said that this training art was extremely simple, yet extremely hard to actually cultivate. If he could breakthrough all 36 of the body's Death

Acupuncture Points, then his Heavenly Energy could breakthrough to the 36th level, which would be the Heavenly Shen Energy stage, thus entering the last stage of cultivation. After all, his father Admiral Zhou, as the Empire's top expert, was only at the 32nd level of cultivation, the Heavenly Shen Energy Stage 8, and he had not been able to advance for the past 5 years.

When Zhou Weiqing was young, Admiral Zhou used to look for many different training arts to let him try cultivating, and at least throughout all the many arts that he had attempted using, none of them would ever pass by the important Death Acupuncture Points in the body.

That was the main reason why Zhou Weiqing had not dared to start trying out this training art. However, after all these years, almost every year Admiral Zhou would examine his body, but still there was no sign of his blocked meridians improving upon his growing older. At this rate, he would continue being a trash forever. Zhou Weiqing had struggled with this decision for a long long time, the decision whether or not to start learning this Immortal Deity Technique, and it was not only till today that he had finally made his decision and firmed his resolve.

Admiral Zhou was a Heavenly Jewel Master, and it was usually hereditary; most descendants of Heavenly Jewel Masters would also likely have Heavenly Jewels, as long as they could awaken it. However, on examining Zhou Weiqing's body, it was found that several of his blocked meridian passageways were actually passing through a few Death Acupuncture Points. That was the reason why Admiral Zhou had never dared to use his own Heavenly Energy to try and force open Zhou Weiqing's meridians, despite his aspirations that his son succeed him. At that time, Zhou Weiqing

had thought that if he could master this Immortal Deity Technique and break through those Death Acupuncture Points, he could also solve his blocked meridian issue and start cultivating Heavenly Energy.

Today, after listening to the secrets of the Heavenly Jewels from Shangguan Bing'er, the desire to become a Heavenly Jewel Master far surpassed the pain he was feeling in his body now. He had made up his mind to at least try out this Immortal Deity Technique; if he did not even try, how could he be reconciled to his fate so easily. He knew clearly that he did not have much time left – if humans did not Awaken their Power Jewels by the age of 16, they would forever lose the chance of doing so. By that time it would mean he would forever be a trash, and who really was satisfied being so forever given a choice? Even though Zhou Weiqing was afraid of death, but he was even more afraid of being a trash forever.

Taking a deep breath, the usual honest look on Zhou Weiqing face had disappeared, replaced with a look of serious determination. Making use of the dim light from his makeshift lamp, he turned the next page of the old manual. The 2nd page of the manual depicted the first of the Death Acupuncture Points to breakthrough for the Immortal Deity Technique.

On the old lamb leather it was inscribed : The human body has 52 Single Acupuncture Points, 300 Double Acupuncture Points, 50 Outside-Meridian Special Acupuncture Points, and a grand total of 720 Acupuncture Points. Of which, 108 were vulnerable points, and 72 were nonlethal and 36 were fatal, the Death points mentioned previously.

Immortal Deity Technique First Part, Upper, Lower Limbs Training Arts. First Death Acupuncture Point: Clavicle Point.

The Clavicle Point was situated at the upper part of the shoulder.

The page depicted clearly how to breakthrough the clavicle point, including pictures and labels to distinctly show the points.

The Clavicle Acupuncture Point was a double point, one for left and right each. Zhou Weiqing tried pressing softly on his own left Acupuncture Point, and felt his whole left side go numb for a while, scaring him – it was indeed formidable. It must be known that for the 36 Death Acupuncture Points, there were stronger and weaker ones, and after flipping through the Immortal Deity Technique, he found out that the later ones were all much stronger. The Technique was split into 4 parts; the first part were the Points on the limbs, consisting of 5 Points, the second part was the back, consisting of 8 Points, 3rd was the frontal chest portion, consisting of 14 points, and the last was the head area which consisted of 9 points. It could be said that it was from easy (relatively) to tough. Even so, even the easiest clavicle Acupuncture Point brought such a feeling, this made Zhou Weiqing shudder in fear. Could these Death Acupuncture Points really be broken through?

After hesitating for a while, he finally firmed his resolve again, as the saying goes, if it's meant to be yours, it will be yours; if he could pull it off he could finally have a chance to be a Heavenly Jewel Master, if he did not try he would be a trash forever.

To no longer be a trash. This was the conviction in his heart that

let Zhou Weiqing finally take his first step to his life of cultivation. He concentrated quietly, and started cultivating according to the Immortal Deity Technique.

Focusing his consciousness to his Clavicle Acupuncture Point, he started sensing his whole body quietly. The toughest part of any foray was the always the starting point, the first step. In this case, the most difficult first part was to sense the very weak Internal Heavenly Energy within his body, and start focusing the energy to breaking through the Acupuncture Point. According to the manual, the Clavicle Point was the easiest to breakthrough out of all the 36 points, and the true key was whether or not he could survive this. Once he survived the breakthrough, he would have gotten past the critical first stage.

After an hour, the fatigue and sore pain was causing Zhou Weiqing to be unable to maintain his calm, he also couldn't sense any hint of internal Heavenly Energy at all. However, although he was afraid of death, but he was also had a mental fortitude in him, as long as he decided to do something, he will definitely follow through to the end.

2 hours passed... it was already late at night by then and only the occasional cricket sound would interrupt the absolute silence of the night.

Am I really fated not to be able to cultivate? Even this Immortal Deity Technique seems impossible for me? Zhou Weiqing was on the verge of giving up, it was already 2 whole hours, and his back and waist was already aching badly, and his feet going numb, from sitting still for so long, yet he still could not sense any Heavenly

Energy.

Chapter 5 – Immortal Deity Technique, Heavenly Jewel Awakens (3)

All of a sudden, just as he was thinking of giving up, he suddenly felt an icy feeling in his lower gut, the exact description in the manual.

He could sense the Heavenly Energy! Zhou Weiqing rejoiced in his heart, and hurriedly focused all his attention at the lower gut area, gingerly feeling the stream of cold there and guiding it upwards.

What seemed to surprise him was that, after the stream of cold had appeared, it started growing more and more obvious, unlike what was described in the Immortal Deity Technique of it only being a tiny trace. As soon as it reached his chest area, it had since grown into a small ball; the whole process seemed very smooth, and it appeared that it was about to reach the Clavicle Death Acupuncture Point.

I must succeed! Zhou Weiqing screamed in his heart, he was at the point of no return now, and he gritted his teeth and willed with all his might, causing the stream of cold to viciously smash into his left Clavicle Acupuncture Point.

Zeng As soon as the cold stream rushed into the point, Zhou Weiqing felt as if his entire left side was struck by a bolt of lightning, losing all sensation there. Moments later, the numbness started to spread from his left side to the right, and soon his entire body had lost its feeling except for his head.

A violent, maniac air seemed to burst forth from his left Clavicle Acupuncture Point, running amok through his body. However, at this point, Zhou Weiqing did not feel any pain, but instead felt his consciousness start blurring, and with a “FWAH” sound, he spat out a mouthful of blood. He did not know that in cultivating Heavenly Energy, pain was actually not the scariest thing, but what was happening to him was indeed. Numbness, usually signified that cultivation had gone terribly wrong. The Principles outlined earlier had stated that the Immortal Deity Technique could be likened to a Certain-Death Technique, and it certainly seemed that way. However, in the cultivation world, a lot of things also depended on luck, and it could be said that success usually comes only to one in 10 thousand people. It seemed obvious that Zhou Weiqing was not such a person.

Failing to break through the Death Acupuncture Point, there would only be one result – Death.

This poor fellow did not know what he was about to face, and was still trying his best to carry on. He only felt like his left Clavicle Acupuncture Point felt like a funnel point, funneling out all his life energy from his body. At this point nearing death, he did not feel any pain but instead felt a sense of pleasure.

As his consciousness started fading away, Zhou Weiqing still had hopes that he had gotten lucky – Have I succeeded?

At this point, a small stream of cold erupted from his lower gut again, as if a large ice ball had shattered in his stomach, splitting apart into countless shards of ice arrows, shooting into his various

meridian passageways crazily.

A second ago, Zhou Weiqing was still floating around in pleasure, and the next moment, it was as if he had fallen into an ice cellar. The numb sensation was replaced by an unbelievable cold. At this point, his heart was overwhelmed by a strong sense of bloodlust, his eyes turned bloodshot instantly, his short black hair all standing up, and his body seemed surrounded by a greyish-black aura.

The energy gushing out from his Clavicle Acupuncture Point had stopped with the appearance of the black aura. If we were to liken the breaking-through of the point as Zhou Weiqing puncturing a hole in a football, then the black aura had sealed the hole.

Zhou Weiqing's body began shaking uncontrollably; the cold was not from the surrounding, but rather from deep within the bones, it permeated his bloodstream, down to the marrow of his bones. All he could feel was waves of cold emitting out from his body repeatedly, and along with the cold he could clearly see a black – grey layer of dust forming around his skin. The extreme cold caused him to lose control of his body, and he fell down to the ground, his mouth opened involuntarily, and every breath he took caused a gust of black-grey airstream to gush out from his body, and it seemed like the outer layer of his skin was soon covered with 2 sets of tattoos – black and grey.

Zhou Weiqing starting to learn the Immortal Deity Technique was tantamount to suicide, after all a one in ten thousand chance was certainly not high. Still, though he did not seem to have much luck on the innate talent training side, but he seemed to be

extremely lucky in other ways. And this luck stemmed from the black pearl that he had swallowed in the Stars Forest.

If successfully training the Immortal Deity Technique was a one in ten thousand chance, then swallowing the black pearl was a unique chance that could only happen once. Due to him activating the Immortal Deity Technique, causing his Clavicle Acupuncture Point to break open, it somehow also stimulated and awoke the black pearl which had been lying dormant in his body. The scenario happening now was indeed caused by the black pearl's awakening.

Originally, when the black pearl entered his body, it only exerted a subtle influence in improving his body slowly, but when he started on the Immortal Deity Technique this night, it had triggered the energy within the pearl in advance.

An unspeakably evil presence seem to swell up in his body, the ice cold feeling was actually the black pearl's immense energy; energy which was invading every corner of Zhou Weiqing's body without any hesitation – it was indeed domineering.

If it were anyone else, perhaps he might have self-imploded by now, but Zhou Weiqing's body was greedily absorbing the energy of the black pearl in a frenzy.

In fact, this was the true reason why the black pearl had chosen to enter his body after appearing in this spatial region.

At that time, it had been drawn to Zhou Weiqing's anger and un-

resigned will after he had been struck down by Difuya's fireball. It had just broken through the spatial dimensions into this world, when Zhou Weiqing had coincidentally spat out a mouthful of blood onto it. Zhou Weiqing's blood itself contained a dark energy, which was also aligned with the black pearl's own energy, and thus it had chosen Zhou Weiqing.

As for why Zhou Weiqing's blood contained the dark alignment energy, it was simple – because Admiral Zhou's Elemental Jewel Alignment was Darkness. Since Zhou Weiqing was of the Admiral's bloodline, he naturally inherited the same alignment, as such he was able to attract and fuse together with the black pearl.

However, the energy within the black pearl was too domineering. Besides the darkness attribute, it also contained several other elemental attributes, of which included the spatial attribute which it had used to arrive in this world, along with many other hidden attributes. The sheer amount of energy and various elemental attributes mixed together and entering his body was now changing Zhou Weiqing's internal elemental attributes, which was the reason why the pain he was experiencing was so strong. It was definitely a much greater suffering than the muscle fatigue and soreness that he had been experiencing earlier.

Chapter 5 – Immortal Deity Technique, Heavenly Jewel Awakens (4)

Although Zhou Weiqing was afraid of death, but his willpower was also a lot more tenacious than most, he had to thank his father for that; if his father had not given him such a tough training and treatment from young, he would certainly not have turned out this way.

As the minutes passed, Zhou Weiqing felt his body turning hot and cold randomly, at times feeling all numb and sore, at times unbearably itchy, causing him to roll around in the tent uncontrollably. Layers of black grey dust kept seeping out from his skin, spreading around in the tent until it was almost fully permeated in it.

His eyes were turning more and more bloodshot, and his consciousness was fuzzy from the pain. In his mind's eye, he seemed to see a strange image, or perhaps to say a strange creature.

It was a huge black tiger, fully pitch-black without any other colours, its whole body was also covered with a black-gray aura, and its bloodshot eyes filled with death. A green blue airstream also swirled around its body, but the strangest thing was its tail which wasn't a usual tiger's tail, but instead was a large scorpion's tail.

What was that creature? Zhou Weiqing was filled with surprise and uncertainty. He was no fool, in fact he was a very intelligent person, if by this time he did not realise that the changes in his body was due to the black pearl that he had swallowed, he would

not be Zhou Weiqing. However, all of this was not under his control and he could only lie back and accept it.

What he did not know was that the blocked meridians that had plagued him for 13 years was now cleared out by the domineering black-white energy swirling around his boy, and the impurities of his body were also being quickly expelled in his body as he withstood the extreme pain. He was going through a whole body-remoulding that was the benefit of cultivating the first 3 levels of Heavenly Energy.

There were only 2 companies consisting of 200 soldiers stationed at this camp outside of the Heavenly Bow City. One company was archers and the other was infantry. After all, they were only here for recruitment purposes, thus 200 soldiers were sufficient.

As the Battalion Commander, Shangguan Bing'er was the highest ranking officer in the camp, and her tent was situated right in the middle of the camp. At this moment, she was seated cross-legged on her bed cultivating Heavenly Energy.

No matter Elemental, Physical or even Heavenly Jewel Masters, Heavenly Energy was the basic core necessity, if you wanted to level up your Jewels, you needed to cultivate Heavenly Energy first.

All of a sudden, Shangguan Bing'er's eyebrows twitched. A pale green airstream emitted from her mouth before being sucked back slowly through her nose, and her hands slowly rested back down onto her knees, and her eyes opened.

“What is that aura? Such cold; Elemental and Physical? Heavenly Jewel Master? There’s a Heavenly Jewel Master Awakening in the camp?”

With a swoosh, Shangguan Bing’er got out of bed swiftly, her eyes uncertain. As a Heavenly Jewel Master, her senses were 10 times sharper than a normal persons’, especially towards fellow Heavenly Jewel Masters.

When Heavenly Jewels Awakened, there was usually a loud burst of energy, as both Physical and Elemental Jewels formed. Towards such a phenomenon, it would induce a strong reaction in Heavenly Jewel Masters in the vicinity. Of course, the range of this was limited, at least Admiral Zhou who was in the Admiral’s Mansion could not sense it.

Pausing a while to regain her composure, Shangguan Bing’er concentrated her focus on the source of the aura. Quickly, her gaze locked on upon one direction. She had determined clearly that it was definitely a Heavenly Jewel Master Awakening, and rejoiced in her heart.

The whole Heavenly Bow Empire only had 2 Heavenly Jewel Masters – Admiral Zhou and herself, and to a country, especially one so small like Heavenly Bow Empire, every Heavenly Jewel Master was a huge deterrent. The reason why Kalise Empire was always suppressing Heavenly Bow Empire was because they had 3 Heavenly Jewel Masters. If not for the fact that Admiral Zhou’s cultivation level was higher than them, Heavenly Bow Empire might already have been wiped out by Kalise Empire. After all, the

Kalise Empire had lusted after their territories for quite a long while, especially the Stars Forest.

Shangguan Bing'er did not stop moving as she thought, she knew that it was very dangerous for Heavenly Jewel Masters when they were Awakening. If they were not careful, their bodies could be destroyed by the immense energy brought about by the twin Jewels Awakening. One of the reason why there were so few Heavenly Jewel Masters was also because of this reason – almost 3 out of 10 Heavenly Jewels would perish from that reason alone. As such, she needed to find the person who was Awakening immediately and do her best to assist and ensure success.

Following her senses, Shangguan Bing'er quickly found the source. As she passed through the various tents in the camp and reached the small tent on the outskirts, she couldn't help but pause, numbed in surprise.

It's him? How can it be him? Isn't that the tent where Little Fatty Zhou fainted in exhaustion this afternoon? In actuality, she did not hate or have a sense of disgust towards Zhou Weiqing, it was just a coincidence that Zhou Weiqing had angered her so many times that she had decided to punish that rascal once. In her eyes, Zhou Weiqing was just a small soldier in her Battalion, one who was outwardly honest but inwardly sly and cunning, and there wasn't anything strange about him. After seeing him faint from fatigue earlier that day, she had already decided to reduce the weight of the stones tomorrow. Of course, the reason why she was doing this was not just to punish Zhou Weiqing, but also she was impressed with his talent in archery. If Zhou Weiqing knew this, who knows what he would think.

Shangguan Bing'er was very kind by nature, and although she was dazed outside of the tent by shock for a while, but she quickly recovered herself. After all, Zhou Weiqing was her subordinate, without mentioning the fact of the benefits to her Battalion for bringing up a Heavenly Jewel Master – personally as a Heavenly Jewel Master, since both were members of Heavenly Bow Empire, she would definitely help Zhou Weiqing.

As such, she did not hesitate any further, and sped towards Zhou Weiqing's tent. Before she even entered the tent, Shangguan Bing'er already felt a large burst of ice cold airstream. Even for her at the eighth stage of Heavenly Energy, she could not help but shiver with the cold, as if her whole bloodstream was frozen. She quickly circulated her Heavenly Energy to resist against the cold.

What a strong burst of energy, in the day she had not noticed that this fellow had any sign of Heavenly Energy, how could he Awaken his Power Jewels at night? Could it be that in this short period of time, he had raised 4 stages of Heavenly Energy? Heavenly Jewel Masters were different from Elemental or Physical Jewel Masters – they had to raise to stage 4 before their Jewels Awakened as compared the 3 stages for Elemental or Physical Jewel Masters. As she thought about all that, Shangguan Bing'er was filled with confusion. What made her even more surprised was the extreme cold that chilled to the bone. Even a Water Elemental Heavenly Jewel Master would not emit such energy, even their ice powers would only be icy cold, but not this sort of dark coldness. Could it be that his Elemental Attribute was Darkness?

When comparing Heavenly Jewel Masters, the Elemental Attribute of their Elemental Jewels was a large factor in determining strength. Amongst all the attributes, the strongest

attributes were Darkness, Light, Spatial and Life. These four elements were considered the 4 Great Attributes. Not only were they extremely rare, but they were also much stronger than ordinary attributes. Amongst them, Darkness Attribute was considered the most mysterious. If this Little Fatty Zhou was really Darkness Attribute, then his future prospects was extremely promising, and he might even exceed her.

Upon thinking about this, Shangguan Bing'er dared not prolong any further, and immediately entered the tent. As soon as she entered, the first thing she saw were a pair of deep red bloodshot eyes.

Chapter 6 – Tourmaline Sacrifice, Alexandrite Cat's Eye (1)

What sort of eyes were those? When Shangguan Bing'er stared into the pair of bloodshot eyes, she was suddenly dazed, and a sense of cold ten times stronger than outside the tent assaulted her.

In the pair of bloodshot eyes lay many negative emotions, ice cold, evil, violence, demonic, and many others she couldn't identify. Even though her Heavenly Energy Level was not very high, but she was after all a Heavenly Jewel Master. Even so, when she saw the pair of eyes, she felt the world spinning around her, as if her soul was being sucked away by those evil orbs.

During that moment of being stunned, a great strength was applied onto her, and Shang Gong Bin Er felt her body instantly enveloped in an unyielding embrace. A lady's inborn protection of her body caused her to clear her mind a little, and as she opened her eyes, she realised that the owner of the pair of bloodshot eyes was indeed Little Fatty Zhou.

At this moment, Zhou Weiqing's body seemed to have grown larger by a full size, all his muscles had expanded considerably, and the surface of skin was glowing with a demonic black-grey tattoo. He seemed to be giving off an unruly and wild aura. The army fatigues he had been wearing had long since been vaporized, only the shiny inner armor was left, supported by his tough muscles. Luckily, the snake sinew was extremely tough and flexible, and the inner armor had not been destroyed by his enlarged body.

“Let go of me.” Shangguan Bing’er said angrily, trying to make use of her Heavenly Energy to break free of Zhou Weiqing’s embrace. However, at that instance, an evil light flashed in Zhou Weiqing’s eyes, and he lowered his head and kissed her on her lips.

Shangguan Bing’er felt a surge of icy cold energy invade her body, and the Heavenly Energy she had been gathering seemed to freeze up and she was unable to manipulate it. What caused her to sink into fear and despair was that within that ice cold, there was a unique animal desire within, that made her whole body to go limp and aching. As her body turned colder, her inner heart suddenly started feeling hotter, the base human desires were sparked by the energy breathed within her.

Sacrificial Offering. In that instance, although Shangguan Bing’er’s consciousness was not very clear anymore, but she subconsciously thought of the 2 words.

It was a legend; which said that there were a bunch of unique Heavenly Jewel Masters. Though their numbers were few, but they were among the strongest of all the Heavenly Jewel Masters. However, they were the very embodiment of evil. When their Heavenly Jewel Awakened, they would generate a unique attribute alignment which was above other Elemental Attributes. This attribute was called the Evil Attribute, and this Evil Attribute would ignite their own body, causing them to be overcome with bloodlust during their Jewel’s Awakening. At this moment, they required a sacrificial offering to appease the Evil Attribute and stop it from destroying their bodies. The sacrificial offering would usually be the person closest to them – which was likely their closest kin, friends or even lovers. As such, once they had gone through the sacrificial offering and successfully Awakened their

Heavenly Jewels, they would have the Evil attribute added to their elemental attributes, becoming a Heavenly Jewel Master who was way above average.

However, in doing so, the one close to them who was used as the sacrificial offering had no other outcome but death, sometimes even being raped brutally before being killed. This was not under the control of the Awakening Heavenly Jewel Master. In fact, many of these Heavenly Jewel Masters had committed suicide after Awakening and realising what they had done. Even those who did not commit suicide would experience a serious change in personality, becoming a deviant in the Heavenly Jewel Masters' ranks. Such a group were considered the most terrifying, definitely not people to be trifled with. Shangguan Bing'er had never in her wildest dreams ever imagined that one day this would happen to her.

Actually, this was because she had not been careful, after all she was only 15 years old. Although she had felt the large energy fluctuation inside the tent earlier, but she had naturally assumed that Little Fatty Zhou who was just Awakening his Jewels could not compare with herself who already had 2 Heavenly Jewels. As such, she did not even activate her Jewels before entering the tent, and had been caught by surprised and subdued by Zhou Weiqing instantly.

This is it, this is the end. Am I just going to die like this? Mommy... mommy... Shangguan Bing'er's last moments of lucidity was to think of her mother, and 2 rows of tears streamed down her cheeks. The next moment, her body, as well as that of Zhou Weiqing who was embracing her, were both enveloped in a bout of crazed desire.

The black-grey air-stream emitted out crazily from Zhou Weiqing's body, and seemed to form a huge cocoon, surrounding and covering his and Shangguan Bing'er's body.

Shangguan Bing'er's clothes were torn into shreds and tossed out of the cocoon one by one, and loud, heavy gasps and pants, as well as pained yet happy moans resounded from within the cocoon.

Creaks and groans issued from Zhou Weiqing's bones unceasingly, and his internal vital organs were wriggling around, the blood flow in his body was almost five times the usual speed while his body was being remoulded by the evil yet miraculous power. The black tattoos on his skin were now more dense, and green, blue, silver lights were now interlacing the black cocoon.

After an unknown amount of time, everything settled down, and the red bloodlust in Zhou Weiqing's eyes seemed to be even stronger. At that moment, he was overwhelmed with the desire to devour the innocent lamb in his arms. It was as if the black pearl wanted to swallow the King Tourmaline. However, just at that point, he saw the 2 gentle, beautiful blue eyes of Shangguan Bing'er.

No, No, I can't devour her. That was Zhou Weiqing's last thought, and the next instance he was holding her body tight, and both their bodies started trembling strongly. Zhou Weiqing then fainted from the pleasure of his Jewels Awakening, and everything seemed to fade away as the Jewels formed around his wrists.

When Shangguan Bing'er came to, the first thing she noticed was a queer smell, then as she started to regain full consciousness, the pain in her body caused her to moan out loud.

What happened to me? Her memories were vague from the time where her consciousness had been fading, and as she opened her eyes dazedly, she realised she was lying on a solid chest. In the next instance, she started to shudder uncontrollably as she realised that both she and the body below were totally naked, and pain was also coming in waves in her lower body.

As she struggled to support herself in climbing away from Zhou Weiqing, her memory started to return slowly.

Chapter 6 – Tourmaline Sacrifice, Alexandrite Cat's Eye (2)

I... I actually became the sacrifice for his Heavenly Jewel Awakening. Tears started to flow from her eyes, she never expected that her first time would be taken in such a dubious manner, by such a man. Kill him, I have to kill him.

As she tried to gather her Heavenly Energy, she woefully realised that she only had a shred of Heavenly Energy left, and she wasn't even able to summon her Heavenly Jewels. Without any other choice, she started to look around for a sharp weapon.

“En...” At this time, Zhou Weiqing made a sound as he started to wake up, mostly because when Shangguan Bing'er got up she just happened to land on his arm.

As he opened his eyes in a daze, the first thing he saw was the naked Shangguan Bing'er, and instantly his eyes widened. Shangguan Bing'er froze in place, her eyes filled with anger and killing intent, and she glared at him. However, to her utmost surprise, Zhou Weiqing's surprise quickly eased away, and he even closed his eyes immediately, muttering to himself: “That scared me to death, I must be having a wet dream. I must continue dreaming, who knows something might happen between the two of us.”

“I'm ... Going... To ... Kill.... You....!” The five words seemed to be squeezed out from Shangguan Bing'er's gritted teeth. By now, she had found the sharp weapon she had been looking for, as she struggled to move her body and draw an arrow from the quiver

lying there, then lunged with it towards Zhou Weiqing.

When Zhou Weiqing heard her cry, he had already cleared his head and came to, just in time to see Shangguan Bing'er lunging at him. In shock, he quickly flipped his body around, at a much faster speed than ever before, and instantly flipped away from the bunk and dodging Shangguan Bing'er's blow. After launching this attack, Shangguan Bing'er's last shred of energy was drained, and she couldn't attack any further.

"This... is real?" Zhou Weiqing stared in shock at Shangguan Bing'er. As his mind cleared, this time he really wasn't acting but was really shocked by the scene in front of him.

What he saw was not just the naked Shangguan Bing'er, but the fact that her soft skin was almost covered fully with ugly green-purple bruises, and her long legs were still blood-stained.

Zhou Weiqing's first thought was that he was doomed, he had finally remembered some of what had happened last night, but his last clear memory was seeing a strange tiger with 2 pairs of wings on its back and a scorpion's tail, after which he had lost control of his body and lapsed into semi-consciousness, immersed in inhuman agony. However, the feeling had changed later on, as if he had found a relief outlet, and a comfortable feeling had replaced the pain. The various energies rampaging through his body had slowly straightened themselves out, and the pain had vanished. At that time, he still remembered a flash of clarity, and what he saw at that point was indeed Shangguan Bing'er below him, moaning...

Although Zhou Weiqing was rather cunning and a little dirty-

mined, being precocious for his age, but he did not have a bad character. Having met with such a scenario, his entire mind blanked out. Sullyng her, and even with such violence, no matter how Shangguan Bing'er took revenge on him, he would not have any complaint.

Shangguan Bing'er struggled again to get up, tears flowing down her cheeks. With much difficulty, she raised the arrow in her hand, and once again stabbed down towards Zhou Weiqing.

Ting A light metallic sound rang out as the arrow struck Zhou Weiqing's chest area, and was blocked by the titanium alloy inner armour. Shangguan Bing'er did not have much strength left, and her exertion actually caused her to fall back into Zhou Weiqing's arms.

Zhou Weiqing subconsciously embraced her soft, bruised body, Shangguan Bing'er's stabbing caused him to fully wake up.

"I'm so... sorry, I really did not mean to, it was not intentional, I don't know how that happened. Although I know I am not worthy of you, but if you don't mind, I will take responsibility for everything, and take care of you." When Zhou Weiqing said that, he was being very serious, and had none of his usual bantering. In the past at home, only when he had committed a serious mistake would he use such a tone.

Shangguan Bing'er's body stiffened in Zhou Weiqing's arms. At this moment, as she was in his arms with her head turned, her gaze just happened to fall upon his left wrist. What she saw was a rose-red Elemental Jewel that looked similar to a ruby. The reason why

it was similar was because the colour was exactly the same, but there were some very unique markings on the Jewel, markings that seemed to be like a narrow cat's eye. Yes, in fact, this was the very characteristic of a cat's eye jewel.

As a Heavenly Jewel Master, Shangguan Bing'er was extremely sensitive to Heavenly Jewel Master's Elemental Jewels. Even though she was in immense grief at the moment, it still didn't change her instincts. The reason she had stiffened suddenly was because she had noticed this strange Jewel, in her memory she could not remember an Elemental Jewel with such an attribute.

Heavenly Jewels consisting of Cat's Eye did exist, it symbolised one of the 4 Great Attributes – the Spatial Attribute. However, an ordinary Elemental Jewel Master with the Cat's Eye Jewel would have it in a dark yellow colour, this was universal. As for Heavenly Jewel Master's with the Cat's Eye Jewel, it would usually be the prime quality Chrysoberyl Cat's Eye. Chrysoberyl Cat's Eyes were a light gold with an inner pale jade green glow, not the rose red colour that Zhou Weiqing's was showing.

Shangguan Bing'er raised her hands to try to wipe off her tears in order to see clearly. However, this made Zhou Weiqing who was holding her misunderstand, and he thought that Shangguan Bing'er was trying to hit him again.

Although Zhou Weiqing was wearing the titanium inner armour, it only protected his upper body. Shangguan Bing'er was after all a Heavenly Jewel Master! The innate fear of death he had made him subconsciously let go of Shangguan Bing'er, and with a roll he had dodged into the edge of the tent.

Shangguan Bing'er fell down onto the bunk again, and the pain caused her to curl up. This also caused her to recover from her shock and her anger to return.

Zhou Weiqing had taken off his outer clothing when he started cultivating last night, as such when his Jewels were Awakened, only his underclothes were torn apart. As such, now that his fear of death mode was activated, he grabbed his pants and coat, flipped around and ran out of the tent at a much faster speed than usual.

It was now the first glimmer of dawn, and the first signs of light were just showing in the outside skies.

As soon as he was out of the tent, Zhou Weiqing donned his clothes in a jiffy and ran. He knew he had done much wrong to Shangguan Bing'er, but nevertheless he was just running for his life now.

Chapter 6 – Tourmaline Sacrifice, Alexandrite Cat's Eye (3)

As soon as he started running, Zhou Weiqing quickly realised the change to his body. Compared to the past, it seemed as if his body was ten times lighter, and every step he ran was 5-6 metres. The aches in his body from the previous day's run was totally gone.

Zhou Weiqing then remembered the true origin of everything that happened last night, and groaned inwardly: Oh no. He had left the Immortal Deity Technique manual in the tent when he ran out just now.

The dismay was soon replaced by happiness though, as he thought to himself: Did I master the Immortal Deity Technique? At this point, he had already ran out of the army camp, and ran in a single direction. At the same time, he focused his attention on his Clavicle Acupuncture Point.

Zhou Weiqing realised that his Clavicle Acupuncture Point seemed to have become like a whirlpool – but it was no longer like yesterday where it was drawing his energy in, but instead it was now drawing it from the world outside; it was truly unique and amazing.

When he concentrated upon the whirlpool, Zhou Weiqing immediately felt the energy suction power strengthen, and strands of cold energy flowed unstoppably into his body from the environment, finally entering his Dantian. He also quickly realised the other changes in his body.

When he focused on the Clavicle Acupuncture Point, 3 other Acupuncture Points also gave him a similar feeling.

First were the the ones on both wrists, although Zhou Weiqing had not fully memorised the whole Immortal Deity Technique, but he had gone through the first few pages many times and remembered clearly that this was the second Death Acupuncture Point in the first section – the Taiyuan Acupuncture Point, which when focused would disrupt the Hundred Meridians, causing internal injury. Taiyuan Acupuncture Points was similar to the Clavicle Acupuncture Points, being a double Point, each on a wrist.

Besides the Taiyuan Acupuncture Point, there were also the points on the outer knee, the ZhuSanLi Point, and the SanYinJiao on the ankles. These 4 large Death Acupuncture Points were now similar to his Clavicle Acupuncture Points, each having generated a whirlpool which was now constantly drawing energy from the atmosphere.

Zhou Weiqing knew that this was all the contribution of the black pearl, and it was the one which helped him breakthrough the four Death Acupuncture Points. In one fell swoop, he had almost completed the whole first section of the Immortal Deity Technique, without only one last Point to go. His Heavenly Energy had also shot up to an impressive 4th stage.

This fellow had rather [thick nerves](#), a while ago he was still full of regret and pain from hurting Shangguan Bing'er, and now he was full of excitement from the successful cultivation of the Immortal Deity Technique.

Heavenly Energy 4th stage, doesn't that mean I have Awakened my Power Jewels?

Zhou Weiqing quickly realised the implications, and looked down at his wrists. As soon as he did so, he suddenly stopped running, raising his hands in front of him, cackling insanely out loud.

“Haha! Wahahaha! Heavenly Jewel! I finally have Heavenly Jewels, I'm a Heavenly Jewel Master! Wahaha, now who can say I'm a trash!!” This bout of insane laughter caused him to almost spit out saliva all around. Years of repressed feelings were suddenly released, and he couldn't help but to express the sheer joy he was feeling.

On Zhou Weiqing's right wrist was a white pearl, glittering and translucent, as if it were an ice crystal. There were no impurities at all; it was the pure jade of a Heavenly Jewel Master, but it was different from Shangguan Bing'er's Dragonstone Jade, and was instead the Icy Jade, which gave him a pure strength boost.

On his left wrist, was a strange and unique jewel. It was totally dark blue in colour, yet on top there was a bright marking which was glowing in white and seemed to move along when Zhou Weiqing moved his wrists, always ensuring that the white marking was always facing the top. As compared to when Shangguan Bing'er saw the rose-red Cat's Eye Gem, what Zhou Weiqing saw was a dark blue Cat's Eye Gem, and within the bright markings there was a trace of grey.

What kind of attribute is this Elemental Jewel? Could it be of the Spatial Attribute? Zhou Weiqing knew that Cat's Eye gems usually signified the Spatial Attribute, however although he wasn't as clear as Shangguan Bing'er on the various Jewels, but he also knew that the Cat's Eye Gems were not usually of this colour. Furthermore, Admiral Zhou was of the darkness attribute; as his son, he should have inherited that attribute, yet why did his turn into this strange Cat's Eye Gem?

Unfortunately I'm not able to go back and ask Shangguan Bing'er. It looks like my plan to join the army has failed, I better run first. As for Shangguan Bing'er, when I'm stronger in the future, I will find a way to repay and compensate her. After all, I'm also a Heavenly Jewel Master now, who knows maybe next time we can actually be together? Heh heh.

As his thoughts ran along, Zhou Weiqing was suddenly filled with regret – Shangguan Bing'er's body was so bruised, what had he done to her that would be hated by both man and god! As he scolded himself, he also thought slyly: What a shame, if only I had been awake to experience that....

Just as Zhou Weiqing was about to move off again, he suddenly felt a cold feeling at the back of his neck, and a sharp pain, and his whole body froze on the spot.

“Little Fatty Zhou, you sullied my body and now you want to run away?” a voice full of anger and hate caused Zhou Weiqing to shudder in fear. He quickly raised his hands in surrender, “I'm not running, I'm definitely not running. Battalion Commander, let's talk things through, don't be so fast to take action, let me explain

myself!”

Shangguan Bing'er came around from behind Zhou Weiqing, the arrow in her hand pointed at Zhou Weiqing's throat. Although she was still dishevelled, but her body was now covered by the army uniform that Zhou Weiqing had washed yesterday.

Shangguan Bing'er was after all a Heavenly Jewel Master, and her physique was much stronger than any ordinary human. If an ordinary girl had been abused like she had been yesterday, even if she didn't die, she would have been bedridden for at least half a month. However, Shangguan Bing'er was boosted by 2 Heavenly Jewels, and after recuperating for a short while, she had restored some Heavenly Energy and was able to move. Seeing that Zhou Weiqing was about to escape, how could she content? She quickly grabbed the clothing left in the tent to cover herself before giving chase.

When she spotted Zhou Weiqing, that fellow had his hands raised, cackling gleefully to himself, and Shangguan Bing'er had also hesitated a while when she saw his wrists again, which was why she was late to subdue that rascal.

“Show me your left hand.” Shangguan Bing'er said coldly. Her once beautiful and gentle eyes now had streaks of blood within them, and they were filled with a cold, angry light. If not for the fact that the Jewel on his left hand was so shocking to her, she would probably have stabbed down with the arrow.

神经粗壮 – literally translated to thick nerves, it's a Chinese phrase that is rather difficult to translate to an English meaning. It has connotations of being undiscerning or uncaring or naive to a

relatively minor degree, depending on the context used. Can be used in a good or bad sense.

Chapter 6 – Tourmaline Sacrifice, Alexandrite Cat's Eye (4)

Zhou Weiqing did not dare to hesitate, and hurriedly raised his left hand in front of Shangguan Bing'er.

After closely examining the Elemental Jewel on Zhou Weiqing's right wrist, Shangguan Bing'er was clearly shaken, the hate-filled eyes seemed to be in a trance. "Alexandrite... Alexandrite Cat's Eye. It really is Alexandrite Cat's Eye. Why? Heaven, why do you mock me so, why did you let him have Alexandrite Cat's Eye Jewel!" she said with an ugly tone.

Changing the topic was undoubtedly one of the best ways to quell anger, and Zhou Weiqing quickly seized the opportunity to ask softly: "Battalion Commander, what's this Alexandrite Cat's Eye Jewel? How come I've never heard of it?"

Shangguan Bing'er said in a muttering manner: "Alexandrite, is a very special gemstone, belonging to the Chrysoberyl family of gems, under daylight it shows as a blue-green colour, the most beautiful of which would be the colour of emerald-jade. At night, under lamp or candle light, it appears to be rose-red or purplish red. As such, it is known as the emerald of the day, ruby of the night. In the world of gemstones, it is the rarest gemstone. And when the Alexandrite has the Cat's Eye markings, it becomes an Alexandrite Cat's Eye Jewel, and is the world's most valuable gemstone, a hundred times more valuable than even diamonds."

Zhou Weiqing had never heard of Alexandrite Cat's Eye Jewels, but as he examined it closely, sure enough its colour changed as the

sun rose further, the dark blue colour slowly turning into a rich green, and the cat's eye markings also seemed more obvious.

“You mean to say, this Elemental Jewel of mine is Alexandrite Cat's Eye Jewel? But, what attribute is that?” Zhou Weiqing asked curiously, even momentarily forgetting the arrow at his neck.

Shangguan Bing'er was still in a dazed mode, and she said: “Alexandrite being the Elemental Jewel can only happen to Heavenly Jewel Masters. Besides being of higher quality and having a stronger elemental attribute, there is also one more possibility for Heavenly Jewel Masters – to have multiple Elemental Attributes. When a Heavenly Jewel Master has 2 or more elemental attributes, then his Elemental Jewel will be an Alexandrite.”

Zhou Weiqing blinked and said, “Does that mean I have more than 2 elemental attributes? Isn't that better than having a single attribute?”

Shangguan Bing'er raised her head slowly, the dazed look in her eyes vanished, replaced with a rather complicated look. She shook her head, and the arrow in her hand moved a little – the pain at his throat silencing Zhou Weiqing and causing him to shiver. “It's not 2 or more attributes, but 4 or more attributes. Alexandrite Cat's Eye is a legend amongst Elemental Jewels; when it appears it means that the Heavenly Jewel Master has more than 4 elemental attributes.”

Zhou Weiqing looked at Shangguan Bing'er, stupefied, and he started laughing, “I'm a legend?” Having been a trash for 13 years,

yet suddenly turned into a Heavenly Jewel Master of legend, even though he was facing death, the sudden change still made this rascal proud of himself.

Shangguan Bing'er's feelings now were extremely complicated. Even if Zhou Weiqing was just an ordinary Heavenly Jewel Master, she couldn't kill him now. After she had chased him out of the tent, her emotions had settled a little. She was clear that the events that occurred yesterday were truly an accident. When Zhou Weiqing's Heavenly Jewels Awakened yesterday and he had required a Sacrifice, she had just happened to stumble in. According to what she knew, under that circumstance, Zhou Weiqing had lost control of himself and the usual result should have been her death. However, she managed to survive, which meant that Zhou Weiqing's willpower was extremely firm, and had managed to hold back at the last second, sparing her life. Although he had committed a grave sin against her, but he had actually not been fully in the wrong. After all, he had not been conscious when doing so, and had been controlled by the Evil Attribute when his Heavenly Jewel Awakened.

But could she really just let it go like that? Shangguan Bing'er was really not reconciled, not willing to let the matter rest just like that. Which young girl did not dream of romance? In her heart, she had often daydreamed about what her future husband would be like, handsome, modest, gentle, upstanding moral character, preferably a Heavenly Jewel Master, a man who was deeply in love with her, and treated her and coddled her like she was precious. Only then would she give herself to him on their wedding night.

Alas, at this moment, all her daydreams and fantasies had evaporated, and her innocence had been ruined in such a muddled

fashion by such a honest looking person who was actually so sly in nature, this rascal who had such an ordinary appearance. Not to talk about love between them, there was barely any affection.

She really felt like ignoring everything and just killing him, but reason and logic told her that if she killed him just like that, she would never be able to reverse it. He was after all a Heavenly Jewel Master, and one with a legendary innate talent, having the Alexandrite Cat's Eye Jewel! For her country, she could not kill him. In the future, he could possibly advance to one of top, or even possibly the top Heavenly Jewel Master in the whole Mainland. How could she just ruin such a future talent like that?

Taking a deep breath, Shangguan Bing'er tried her best to calm herself down, and she sharply withdrew the arrow in her hand, and shouted harshly: "Get lost, get out of my sight now!"

With no more threat to his life, Zhou Weiqing suddenly felt like he was granted amnesty. "I'm getting lost right now!" As he said that, he started running off toward the distance.

"You wretch! Come back here, I asked you to get lost back to camp!!" Shangguan Bing'er saw that the rascal was trying to run away, and instantly got angry again. With a flying kick, she caused him to stagger, but also causing her own lower body to ache in pain. That rascal always seemed to make her angry so easily.

Zhou Weiqing dropped his head down as if he were being wronged, "Don't be angry, I'm going back to the camp now okay? I promise, no matter how much you trample on me, I won't resist."

Just now, in that instance when Shangguan Bing'er drew back the arrow in her hand, Zhou Weiqing felt a strong stabbing pain in his heart, an extreme heartache. She was really too kind, he had treated her like that but she still spared his life. In that moment, Zhou Weiqing found that he had fallen for Shangguan Bing'er. If we were to say that previously, he felt unworthy of her, but now he would no longer have such a feeling. After all, he had also become a Heavenly Jewel Master, furthermore one with the legendary Alexandrite Cat's Eye. He truly believed that if he worked hard in cultivating, one day he would be worthy of her, and he vowed silently that he would always take good care of her.

Of course, no matter what, Zhou Weiqing's mind also always had some dirty thoughts. While he was deeply touched, this fellow was also thinking: If one day I bring Shangguan Bing'er home as my wife to show Dad, I wonder if that Dad of mine who never smiles would show any shocked expression.

Looking at Zhou Weiqing leaving with a pitiable expression, Shangguan Bing'er suddenly seemed to collapse like a deflated balloon, and she sat down on the floor, the arrow dropping to the ground, and hugged her knees sobbing out loud. She had never been a particularly firm girl, and such a massive change and events caused her to be overwhelmed with emotion and to break down and cry.

Zhou Weiqing had not gone very far, and hearing Shangguan Bing'er cry, he stopped in his tracks. He gingerly walked back, first taking up the arrow on the ground and throwing it further away, before carefully squatting down beside her. He did not know how to comfort her, and could only squat at the side in company. At the

same time, he was thinking to himself: She is truly worthy of being called the top beauty in the Empire! Even when she's crying she's so beautiful!

Chapter 7 – Three-Point Covenant (1)

After crying for half a day, Shangguan Bing'er still had not stopped. Zhou Weiqing looked at the brightening skies, and couldn't help reminding her: "Battalion Commander, isn't it time to head back? If we don't head back, we might be discovered by others."

Shangguan Bing'er naturally knew that this fellow had come back just now, and she raised her head, looking at him with her tear stained face, "None of your business. I thought I asked you to get lost?"

Zhou Weiqing was exceptional at reading expressions and cues, and he could tell that after the long cry, the anger and hate in Shangguan Bing'er's eyes had considerably lessened. Although her voice was still severe, there was no longer any killing intent.

"I'll get lost immediately now!" Seeing that Shangguan Bing'er had stopped crying, Zhou Weiqing took off and ran away. Although her anger had lessened considerably, but it was still likely she would give him a beating.

Looking at Zhou Weiqing fleeing in a sorry state, Shangguan Bing'er bit her lip before standing up slowly and returning to the camp.

When Zhou Weiqing returned to his tent, he was given a fright. Previously when he had just awakened, he had been distracted by Shangguan Bing'er as well as the threat to his life, and had not

looked around at the scene in the tent closely. Now, in the daylight, he couldn't help but feel a chill down his spine, feeling glad it was the kind Shangguan Bing'er last night.

The tent was a total mess, with torn clothes strewn everywhere – mostly the purple clothes that Shangguan Bing'er had been wearing last night as well as her underclothing. There was blood on the mattress, showing how crazy last night had been.

Zhou Weiqing quickly gathered up the mess around, then wrapped them in the bag he had earlier. He then carefully tore out the bloodstain on the mattress, folded it up and stowed it away carefully. This was after all a symbol of their consummation and he wanted to keep it. If Shangguan Bing'er was willing to accept being with him in the future, he would give it to her. Of course, whether she would accept it or not was another matter.

After he had finished clearing up, Zhou Weiqing had broken out in cold sweat, as he had not been able to find his Immortal Deity Technique Manual; it had likely been taken by Shangguan Bing'er. It was not that he was unwilling to give it up, but he was actually afraid that Shangguan Bing'er would follow him in trying to learn it. When he was cultivating the Immortal Deity Technique last night, he had realised how domineering the Technique was, how nigh impossible it was to learn it. If it had not been for the black pearl helping him, he would probably have died long before Shangguan Bing'er had came. No, this would not do. He had to find a chance to warn her not to train this technique. Although, even if she wanted to learn it, it would likely be after 2-3 days, since she had to recover first.

As Zhou Weiqing looked at the Jewels on his wrist that had not disappeared throughout the whole time, he was slowly overcome by a bout of sleepiness, and gradually fell into a deep sleep.

As the recruitment was still going on, and furthermore Shangguan Bing'er had assigned him to such a remote area to punish him, thus he was not disturbed by anyone. Zhou Weiqing slept all the way til the sun was setting.

“En... so comfortable.” He stretched lazily, hearing a soft creaking sound from his bones, and he felt a comfortable feeling, as if he was fully suffused with strength and free of inhibitions. As he looked down, the Heavenly Jewels were still around his wrist, doing a slow orbit.

“Why am I unable to retrieve the Heavenly Jewels back into my body like others do? How do I do that?” Since Zhou Weiqing had been considered a trash since young, he had not studied in a Jewel Master school, and thus only had a very basic understanding of the profession, and as a result he now did not know what to do.

Nevermind, I shall not care about that now, time to eat first before thinking further. After sleeping for a whole day, coupled with his ‘exertions’ last night, he had totally been awoken by his hunger. Putting on the army uniform, he covered his arms with the sleeves to hide his Heavenly Jewels, before running to the mess to have a large meal.

Having filled his stomach, he was now filled with spirit. Zhou Weiqing was pleasantly surprised to find out that he seemed to have grown in stature. He was originally around 1.7m tall, which

was already extremely tall for his 13 years of age. However, after last night, he seemed to have grown a few centimetres taller, and his entire body's muscles also seemed to have developed further.

Besides feeling heart-pain for Shangguan Bing'er, his mood today was actually pretty good. He had finally gotten his own Heavenly Jewels that he had dreamed of for so long. Not to mention his legendary Elemental Jewel, even an ordinary Heavenly Jewel Master status would let him be extremely satisfied. If not for Shangguan Bing'er, he might have just gone home immediately to tell his dad this good news, and also let Difuya who had always looked down on him know that he was already a Heavenly Jewel Master.

Zhou Weiqing returned to his tent in a good mood, but as soon as he opened the flap, his heart was suddenly alarmed, and he shouted out: "Who's there?"

That sense of alarm was totally subconscious, and he didn't even know what was happening. At this moment, the sky was darkening, and he did not have vision into the tent.

However, Zhou Weiqing's expression quickly changed into a fawning one as he saw the person in the tent. With a foolish grin on his face, he said: "Oh it's you, Lord Battalion Commander, why are you here?" As he said that, he only stepped one foot into the tent, the other foot was refusing to step in. How knows what Shangguan Bing'er came here to do.

Shangguan Bing'er had by now changed to a set of blue attire, which was very matching to her azure hair. Zhou Weiqing saw that

his uniform had been folded neatly onto his bunk, and when he entered the tent, she had been staring at the bunk blankly.

“Come in.” Shangguan Bing’er said coldly.

Zhou Weiqing looked around, just verifying that she had no weapons on her, before entering the tent gingerly. Still, he didn’t dare to step too far in, just near the entrance and he looked at her in a bashful expression – almost as if he had been the one taken advantage of.

Looking at that rascal’s expression, Shangguan Bing’er blushed, scolding in her heart, How could I have been taken advantage of by this damn rascal!

“Where’s the cloth?” she asked curtly.

“What cloth?” Zhou Weiqing did not understand.

Shangguan Bing’er was flushed red in embarrassment, and she glanced at the bunk. Zhou Weiqing instantly understood, and said carefully: “I kept it... as a memento.”

Shangguan Bing’er’s shapely bosom rose and fell more rapidly, “You... give it here.” She was afraid she would not be able to control herself and kill that rascal.

Zhou Weiqing reluctantly took out the few pieces of cloth that he had kept carefully, and passed them to Shangguan Bing’er. Of

course, she couldn't bear to look at such a shameful thing now, so she quickly stashed it away. Little did she know that the sly rascal Zhou Weiqing had kept a piece still.

Chapter 7 – Three-Point Covenant (2)

Shangguan Bing'er pushed Zhou Weiqing away, and headed to the entrance to open the tent flap, allowing the cool fresh air to enter. She took deep breaths as she calmed herself down.

It had been a day, and with the help of Heavenly Energy, her body had mostly healed. However, how could the wounds of the heart heal so easily? After thinking about things for a whole day, finally her reason overcame her anger, and she decided to come look for Zhou Weiqing.

“Little Fatty Zhou.” As she closed the tent flap once again, she turned back around to face Zhou Weiqing.

“Yes.” Upon hearing her call him, Zhou Weiqing quickly replied, the lowered eyed, puppy dog look he had on made her want to give him a beating.

Taking another deep breath, Shangguan Bing'er said solemnly: “Remember, yesterday never happened. If I hear any rumours spreading, you know the consequences...”

“Ah?” Zhou Weiqing widened his eyes as he looked at her. At this moment, although he put on an expression of obedience, but inside he was feeling rather pleased. He knew that Shangguan Bing'er wouldn't kill him, and looking at her beauty now, he couldn't help but think that she had been under him last night, and his heart was aflame.

“Did you hear what I said clearly?” Shangguan Bing’er said, pouting.

“I heard... heard clearly. But, Battalion Commander, I... I... ” Zhou Weiqing put on a hesitant look.

“You what you? Why are you mumbling? If you have something to say, say it.” Shangguan Bing’er said exasperatedly, and couldn’t help but to step forward and give him a kick.

Zhou Weiqing immediately shook his head, “I better not say, I’m scared you will hit me.”

“Say it. I won’t hit you.” People were curious by nature, and after all Shangguan Bing’er was merely fifteen. Although she was still angry with Zhou Weiqing, but she still wanted to know what he wanted to say.

Zhou Weiqing looked at her secretly, then said in a low voice: “You really won’t hit me?”

“Are you going to say?” Shangguan Bing’er’s face turned cold.

“All right, I’ll say, okay?” Zhou Weiqing had an aggrieved face, almost as if he was the sacrifice last night. “Battalion Commander, it was also my first time, how can I forget about last night! Although you won’t take responsibility for me, but I won’t blame you. But, I still can’t help but to remember you. Battalion Commander, don’t look at me like that, I’m scared. I’m just

speaking the truth. Ahh! Help! Murder!”

As Zhou Weiqing said the first line, Shangguan Bing'er had already realised that this rascal was not going to say anything good. As expected, the more she listened the angrier she got, and at the end, her beautiful face was green and white from anger, and with a flash she was beside him, pinching the meat at his waist, she gave a hard 180 degree turn, instantly the screams like that of a pig being butchered sounded out.

Shangguan Bing'er raised her hand and covered Zhou Weiqing's mouth, she did not want her other subordinates to know that she was in this rascal's tent so late at night.

“If you speak any more rubbish, I'll castrate you!” Shangguan Bing'er was both angry and embarrassed, and she finally threatened him.

Zhou Weiqing was immediately silenced, his hands carefully covering his lower body, looking at Shangguan Bing'er with an alarmed expression. This time he was really afraid of that threat.

“You... sit down.” Shangguan Bing'er was really glad she did not bring her sword along, or she really couldn't guarantee that this rascal would still be alive.

Zhou Weiqing sat down on the bunk, this time he was well behaved. Although he liked to look at her angry look as he teased her, but he also knew that he could not overdo it. Furthermore, they had a lot of time together in the future; it was likely this

would be his only joy to look forward to in his army life.

“Little Fatty Zhou, let me ask you. How much do you really know about Heavenly Jewel Masters?” Shangguan Bing'er sat cross-legged at the other end of the bunk, keeping a metre distance between Zhou Weiqing and herself.

“Errr... Basically what you told me yesterday.” Zhou Weiqing said without hesitation.

With a piak sound, a leather book was thrown at him. Zhou Weiqing fumbled to catch it, and found that it was his Immortal Deity Technique manual.

“Tell me what happened last night? In the day, I did not sense any Heavenly Energy at all from you, why did you manage to Awaken your Heavenly Jewel at night, and furthermore being one of multiple elements. Don't tell me it's because you learnt this Immortal Deity Technique. That thing, although it isn't absolutely impossible, but it's nigh tantamount to suicide. With just that technique, no matter how lucky you are, it's not possible for you to jump 4 levels of Heavenly Energy from a totally startpoint of zero.”

Zhou Weiqing said: “It might be because of this weird black pearl that I swallowed. Before I joined the army, I was playing around in the Stars Forest. After a while, I got tired and fell asleep in the forest. Who knew, the sky then suddenly darkened, and I found that I couldn't move at all. A crack opened in the sky, and this black pearl surrounded by green, blue and silver colours emerged from the crack and flew into my mouth. At that time, I just felt my whole body turn cold, then I fainted. When I came to, I didn't find

anything wrong with my body and returned to the city. As I reached the city, I just happened to see the army recruitment, and so I joined. Last night, I really was trying to learn the Immortal Deity Technique, and was breaking through the first Death Acupuncture Point, the Clavicle Point, and I managed to break through it. However, I immediately felt my whole body go numb and unable to move, then a strong burst of cold emerged from my dantian, and I seemed to see this winged black tiger before I lost consciousness. I don't know what happened after that. When I woke up, I saw this naked girl in front of me, and after that, I realised that 4 of my Death Acupuncture Points had successfully broken through..."

"Shut up." Shangguan Bing'er said with a livid face, and with a wave of her hand, a green light flashed in front of Zhou Weiqing, and with a BAM sound, a crack appeared in the bunk right in front of him. That scared him into silence – if that blow had been a few inches to the front, the little bird in his pants would no longer be there.

After a vicious quick glare at Zhou Weiqing, Shangguan Bing'er lapsed into deep thought. She had never heard of such circumstance that Zhou Weiqing had described, but with this rascal's mode of talking, could she believe it? But, if she didn't believe what he said, there was no possible way to explain what happened yesterday. Furthermore, when he had been talking just now, she had been looking into his eyes, and she realised that that fellow had a genuine look in his eyes, and it seemed that his words were at least relatively believable.

"What's your origin?" Shangguan Bing'er asked solemnly. She wasn't just asking for her own curiosity, but more importantly

because of his unique legendary Elemental Jewel. Such a person, even though he had an unbelievable innate talent, but if he had an unknown origin, she wasn't sure if she should teach him the cultivation ways.

Zhou Weiqing hesitated a moment, then said: "Bing'er, do you want to hear the truth or have me make up a story?"

Hearing him address her by her name, Shangguan Bing'er sweatdropped, and said angrily: "Call me Battalion Commander, and of course I want to hear the truth."

Chapter 7 – Three-Point Covenant (3)

Zhou Weiqing gave a bitter smile and said: “But, if I were to say the truth, I’m afraid I won’t be able to join you in the army. Actually I am of quite high birth status, and my family is considered rich, but from young, my father has always been angry with me for being a trash. I was angry and decided to join the army, to walk my own path and forge a name of my own before returning home in glory. Bing’er... no... Battalion Commander, can you trust me this once? Please don’t ask me what’s my origin, I swear upon my life that I’m not a bad person, and I will always treat you well in the future.”

“Who wants you to treat me well?” Shangguan Bing’er’s anger was once again ignited, but she also realised that when Zhou Weiqing was saying that previously, his expression was unprecedentedly sincere. Without knowing why, her heart softened a little.

“Okay, I will not ask you about your origin, but from now on, I’ll have a 3 point covenant with you. You have to swear upon your Heavenly Jewels, then I’ll start training you in the cultivation methods of Heavenly Jewel Masters. Are you okay with that?”

Zhou Weiqing nodded repeatedly, “Yes I am, definitely.” The thing he needed most now was the cultivation method of Heavenly Jewel Masters, furthermore it was Shangguan Bing’er who would be teaching him, how could he not be willing. As for making oaths, he had never really cared about such things.

Shangguan Bing’er’s expression finally cleared a little, and she

said: “Firstly, you must swear that you will always be loyal to Heavenly Bow Empire, no matter what level you reach in the future, you will always be part of Heavenly Bow Empire.”

Zhou Weiqing immediately nodded his head, and made the oath. After all, he had already made a similar oath a few years back in front of his father and King Di Lingfeng, and he didn’t mind doing it again.

“Secondly, from now on, without my permission, you are not allowed to show anyone that you are a Heavenly Jewel Master. Unless it is a matter of life and death, otherwise you cannot even reveal your Jewels.”

“Ah? Not allowed to use my powers? Then why am I training for?” Zhou Weiqing asked in puzzlement.

Shangguan Bing’er said exasperatedly: “You fool, do you think that having the legendary Alexandrite Cat’s Eye is really a good thing for you now? If any other country hears about this, they will send countless assassins to kill you off. Before you have reached a certain level of power, you must hide your true power.”

Zhou Weiqing saw the light, and hurriedly said: “You still care for me, I will make the oath.” As he said that, he quickly made the oath.

Shangguan Bing’er looked at him coldly and said, “Lastly, no matter what your future power level is, you can never force me to accept you against my will.”

Zhou Weiqing was taken aback, “You are afraid that I will overtake you in power level and force you to be with me?”

“Yes.” Shangguan Bing'er said solemnly.

Zhou Weiqing's face changed, the every-present smile on his face vanishing. “Shangguan Bing'er, what kind of person do you take me for? Yesterday was my fault indeed, but I did not plan or do it on purpose. Having taken advantage of you, I will definitely find a way to repay you in the future, but you can't insult my character. I Zhou... Little Fatty Zhou, no matter how bad I am, I will never ever resort to forcing a girl into submitting to me. I swear, no matter what, unless it is of Shangguan Bing'er's own free will, otherwise, I, Little Fatty Zhou, will never ever force her to do anything against her will.”

Looking at Zhou Weiqing's anger, Shangguan Bing'er was slightly apologetic, but she also heaved a sigh of relief, thinking to herself, This rascal might be irritating, but he does have his own good points.

Alas, she did not know that, this rascal Zhou Weiqing, although he was sincere in swearing the oaths, but he also gave himself an escape route; after all he had sworn the oaths under the alias Little Fatty Zhou, not his real name Zhou Weiqing.

As their eyes met, Zhou Weiqing saw the sorrow hidden in the depths of Shangguan Bing'er's eyes, and instantly softened. After all, no matter what, it was his responsibility, he had taken the

most valuable thing to a girl from her.

“Battalion Commander, don’t be angry anymore, in the future I’ll listen to everything you say. If you ask me to steal a chicken, I definitely [won’t go touch a dog](#), I’ll do whatever you ask of me.”

Looking at the care in Zhou Weiqing’s eyes, then listening to his crazed words, Shangguan Bing’er’s cold face finally softened as she couldn’t help but laugh, “Who asked you to ‘Steal Chicken Touch Dog’, what do you think I am to you?”

Seeing that Shangguan Bing’er had laughed, Zhou Weiqing was excited, he was about to carry on when he heard Shangguan Bing’er say with a straight face and solemn voice: “Alright now, sit properly. Now I will teach you everything I know about Heavenly Jewel Masters. You must remember to work hard and cultivate.”

Hearing that she would be teaching him the arts of cultivation for Heavenly Jewel Master, Zhou Weiqing instantly sobered up, and nodded seriously.

Shangguan Bing’er said: “We humans pride ourselves as an intelligent race, and we call our bodies as Heavenly Bodies. Through cultivation, we are able to activate our innate talent, and the energy gained is called Heavenly Energy. Heavenly Energy is the basis of everything, no matter Physical, Elemental or Heavenly Jewel Masters, all of us need Heavenly Energy to do anything. For ordinary Physical and Elemental Jewel Masters, their first Power Jewel is Awakened when they reached the 3rd stage of Heavenly Energy. The next 2 Jewels only require 2 levels of Heavenly Energy each in order to awaken. However, from then on, each Jewel will

require another 3 levels of Heavenly Energy, all the way til all 9 Jewels are awakened. However, for us Heavenly Jewel Masters, we need much more Heavenly Energy in order to support our Heavenly Jewels.”

“For Heavenly Jewel Masters, we require 4 levels of Heavenly Energy to Awaken our first Jewels. This is also the reason why I previously knew you were already at the 4th level of Heavenly Energy. From then on, every Heavenly Jewel needs another 4 levels of Heavenly Energy to awaken. Which is to say, for us Heavenly Jewel Masters to master the highest amount of 12 Jewels, we need to cultivate our Heavenly Energy to the highest Heavenly Dao Energy stage, 12th level, before we can do so. This is why it is so difficult to cultivate as a Heavenly Jewel Master, and our cultivation process is also called 12 Heavenly Jewel Change, or Heavenly Jewel 12 Changes.”

Zhou Weiqing was concentrating earnestly on listening, he was very eager for any information on Heavenly Jewels, and as he listened to Shangguan Bing'er's explanations, his gaze never left her.

When she spoke up to this point, Shangguan Bing'er lit up the oil lamp that she had brought, lighting up the dark tent. Looking at her beautiful features so close to him, Zhou Weiqing couldn't help but quaver in his heart; he was only 13 years old after all, and his self control was not very strong; especially since he had already had that sort of 'connection' with her previously, his heart was beating fast like a capering monkey and a mind wandering like a galloping horse. Luckily, the knowledge of Heavenly Jewel Masters was very attractive to him, allowing him to not show his thoughts.

Shangguan Bing'er continued saying: "I examined your Immortal Deity Technique earlier. You said that after last night, you already managed to break through 4 Death Acupuncture Points?"

Zhou Weiqing nodded.

Shangguan Bing'er furrowed her brow, saying: "Did you know that once you have chosen and started training a cultivation method for Heavenly Energy, you can no longer change it. Since you have already started on the Immortal Deity Technique, you have no choice but to carry on with it. This technique is extremely unique, also also rather dangerous."

"Ah? I'm unable to change cultivation methods?" Zhou Weiqing asked in surprise.

Shangguan Bing'er nodded, saying: "Yes, but you do not need to worry so much. Although this technique is very domineering, but the most difficult stage is actually breaking through the first Death Acupuncture point. You have already broken through 4 of them, I believe the ones later should be relatively easier. Furthermore, if what you said previously is true, the black pearl that you absorbed has the ability to protect you. However, when cultivating, it always gets more difficult as your level is higher, you have to prepare yourself for that.

Zhou Weiqing nodded, and said positively: "I will definitely continue working hard and cultivating." His chance had finally come, and he swore that he would never go back to being a trash.

偷鸡摸狗 is a chinese idiom literally translated to Steal Chicken

Touch Dog – basically meaning petty crimes. Zhou Weiqing is just making a pun here.

BOOK 2 – PHYSICAL JEWEL CONSOLIDATING EQUIPMENT

Chapter 8 – Profound Secrets of the Immortal Deity Technique (1)

Listening to Zhou Weiqing's firm tone, Shangguan Bing'er suddenly generated a strange thought in her mind – This fellow has some of his own good points, at least he is diligent and knows how to exert himself. Furthermore, he has that legendary Alexandrite Cat's Eye. Since he has already taken advantage of me, with his status as a Heavenly Jewel Master, perhaps he is at least somewhat worthy of me...

She then shook her head strongly, scolding herself in her heart. What am I thinking about! No matter what, I need to observe this Little Fatty Zhou's disposition, his moral character being so irritating is a big problem, I can't just observe a day or two to make up my mind.

“Little Fatty Zhou, remember this, when you are cultivating Heavenly Energy, you can just do so in accordance to your Immortal Deity Technique. However, whenever you are attempting to break through Death Acupuncture Points, you must make sure that I am there with you to protect you, you must not try to attempt it on your own.”

Zhou Weiqing was more than happy to have it that way, and he immediately said: “Heh... Understood, understood, thanks Battalion Commander for your care and concern.” As he said that, he leaned forward.

Seeing that he had resumed his normal ways after barely two minutes of being serious, Shangguan Bing'er was overcome with

helplessness. “Little Fatty Zhou, sit properly or I’m leaving!”

Zhou Weiqing quickly sat back upright, resuming the serious look he had on previously. Unfortunately, though someone meeting him for the first time would be fooled by that, but Shangguan Bing’er who had a few days of experience with him knew for sure that this rascal would have strange thoughts no matter what outward expression he was showing.

“Just now I talked about the basics for both us Heavenly Jewel Masters as well as ordinary Jewel Master, now I’ll teach you the basic usage of the Physical and Elemental Jewels. It’s already quite late now, so I’ll first show you how to keep and release the Jewels. The method is split into 2 parts; to keep your Heavenly Jewel back into your body is called Receiving, while to use the Jewels is called Releasing. Both Receiving or Releasing require Heavenly Energy. When we have cultivated our Heavenly Energy to the first stage, it will gather in your Dantian, which is in your lower abdomen, you need to use your will to manipulate your Heavenly Energy and meld it with your Heavenly Jewels, then guide them to either Receive or Release. You can start practicing that tonight, and I’ll teach you something else tomorrow.

After saying that, she stood up. It was already dark outside, and she was not willing to stay in such a place with sorrowful memories for a long time, as such she was preparing to leave. Zhou Weiqing stood up hurriedly, but as he did so, Shangguan Bing’er immediately stepped back, keeping a safe distance from him.

Giving him a quick glare, Shangguan Bing’er left.

Zhou Weiqing kept his eyes trained on her as she left, looking through the small gap in the tent flap, thinking to himself: That ass, how pert! However, he had learnt his lesson now, he wouldn't dare to voice out such thoughts, but just enjoying inside silently, at least that way she wouldn't know.

Shangguan Bing'er did not take along her oil lamp when she left, and Zhou Weiqing sat back onto his bunk and opened the Immortal Deity Technique manual to the fifth page. He had already broken through the first four Death Acupuncture Points, and if he wanted to cultivate further, he naturally had to start on the fifth page of the first part.

The fifth Death Acupuncture Point for the first part was the YongQuan Point, which was located on the sole of the feet, and it would cause damage to the Dantian on being hit, injuring the functional activities of body's vital energy.

Calming himself down, Zhou Weiqing could immediately feel the energy whirlpools which had opened up in the four Death Acupuncture Points that he had previously broken through. According to what Shangguan Bing'er had told him earlier, he understood that the energy that they were absorbing was the Heavenly Energy coalesced from the atmosphere.

The method of cultivating Heavenly Energy in the Immortal Deity Technique was rather simple, consisting of just one line – When the energy in your Dantian is full, it means it has peaked, break through the next Death Acupuncture Point means a level up ; failure means death.

From the words, it could be understood as the following : After breaking through a Death Acupuncture Point successfully, it was just a matter of cultivating and storing Heavenly Energy. Once the Dantian was full of Heavenly Energy, it would be time to break through the next Death Acupuncture Point – in which case success means getting to the next level of Heavenly Energy, while failure means death. As for the actual cultivation method, there was no other hint.

However, since his testing in the morning, Zhou Weiqing had already started to understand the profound mysteries of this Immortal Deity Technique. No doubt, training this technique was tantamount to suicide, but once successful, the cultivation process would be easier than other cultivation arts.

Zhou Weiqing had tried many different cultivation arts since he was very young; you had to cycle your Heavenly Energy around the meridians in a cyclic rotation, and was usually very complicated. Completing a whole heavenly circuit revolution, all of the various arts had made his head ache just looking at them. Now, this Immortal Deity Technique was so much easier in comparison. Just the whirlpools which had formed after breaking through the Death Acupuncture Point were extremely invaluable, as they would automatically draw in Heavenly Energy from the atmosphere to strengthen his body. Even if he did not intentionally concentrate on cultivating, his Heavenly Energy would still grow slowly by itself. When he focused his will on the whirlpools, the speed of drawing Heavenly Energy would grow by a large amount. Such a cultivation method was extremely simple.

The truth was, there was always two sides to every coin. This Immortal Deity Technique that Zhou Weiqing had gotten was

indeed a miraculous technique, and was created by a true crazy genius; however even that crazy genius himself had only mastered it to around ten plus Acupuncture Points before failing to break through and dying. After that, there had not been anyone else who had even managed to break through the first Death Acupuncture Point. The unique thing about this technique was that it was extremely difficult to break through bottlenecks, but the usual cultivation was very easy. As for what happens after breaking through all 36 Death Acupuncture Points, even the creator could only guess according to his own estimations.

As such, Zhou Weiqing was now focusing on the whirlpools, hastening its absorption of Heavenly Energy. At the same time, he was also checking out his Dantian's circumstances.

As he did so, he realised that his Dantian was empty of energy; the Heavenly Energy absorbed from the surroundings had barely filled even a tenth of it, and his consciousness was able to make the energy start moving. With the experience from breaking through the Clavicle Acupuncture Point, he started to move the Heavenly Energy into two paths, slowing heading towards both his arms.

This process was extremely slow, after all Zhou Weiqing was new to moving substantial amounts of Heavenly Energy. Although this mount of Heavenly Energy was little compared to the total amount in his Dantian, but compared to the amount he had used to breakthrough the Clavicle Acupuncture Point, it was almost more than a hundred times. As the Heavenly Energy passed through his meridians, he felt a cool comfortable feeling at the area.

Chapter 8 – Profound Secrets of the Immortal Deity Technique (2)

However, at the same time, Zhou Weiqing could clearly feel that his emotions were being changed, as his Heavenly Energy cycled, he could feel a rising feeling of fierce bloodlust.

What was going on? Obviously, it was not from Heavenly Energy, as Shangguan Bing'er had not mentioned it when she was explaining things to him just now.

Suddenly, inspiration struck, and Zhou Weiqing remembered the huge black tiger from that night – wasn't that fierce bloodlust the same aura that the tiger gave out in his memory? Even the cold feeling from that night has also appeared. Luckily, these unique auras did not seem to be hurting him, in fact when they appeared it seemed like his Heavenly Energy started moving faster.

Finally, the two streams of Heavenly energy reached the Clavicle Acupuncture Point, unavoidably touching the energy whirlpool which had formed there.

As the two streams of Heavenly Energy both touched the respective whirlpools at the Clavicle Acupuncture Point, they suddenly accelerated, rushing down Zhou Weiqing's arms, and giving him a fright. The next moment, the twin streams had reached the Taiyuan Acupuncture Points in his wrists, and flared up there, melding together with his respective Jewels.

A sense of complete harmony descended on Zhou Weiqing's

mind, and he felt like his Heavenly Jewels were part of his body. With a single thought, the Jewels entered his body through the Taiyuan Acupuncture Point, settling firmly in his meridians. He could still sense the presence of the Jewels, but they did not have a substantial feel.

I succeeded just like that? It seems like it was not as difficult as I had expected. Zhou Weiqing was delighted to have succeeded in Receiving his Heavenly Jewels on the first try. Actually, how was he to know that the real reason why it seemed so easy for him was because he had already broken through to the Taiyuan Acupuncture Points on his wrists, which was extremely good for Receiving and Releasing Heavenly Jewels. Otherwise, how else would such a cultivating newbie like him succeed so easily! This point was also something that Shangguan Bing'er had not expected, and it was also just the tip of the iceberg for the benefits that the Immortal Deity Technique would grant him.

With a thought, manipulating the link between his Heavenly Energy and Taiyuan Acupuncture Point, the 2 Heavenly Jewels sprang out of his wrists. Another thought caused them to be kept within again, the whole process seemed so easy.

If Shangguan Bing'er knew about the process of his training, she would definitely be shocked. She was already considered a genius, but it had taken her half a month before she could Receive and Release her Heavenly Jewels so easily, while Zhou Weiqing had managed that feat in just a single try.

Zhou Weiqing was very curious about his own Heavenly Jewels, and since his training target for the day had already been met, he

decided to investigate the exact benefits that his two Heavenly Jewels brought to him. Not even mentioning the fact that he was only 13 years old, even a steady, mature adult would also be hasty to find out what his Heavenly Jewels could do if they just Awakened.

He chose to examine his Icy Jade Physical Jewel first, after all his Alexandrite Cat's Eye Elemental Jewel had been praised so much by Shangguan Bing'er that he was rather nervous about it.

Earlier on, when he was trying to control the Receiving and Releasing of his Heavenly Jewels, Zhou Weiqing had used his Heavenly Energy to wrap around the Jewels, letting them meld with his Energy and they were easily moved through his Taiyuan Acupuncture Point. At this point, he carefully used his Heavenly Energy to enter his Physical Jewel.

In the instance that his Heavenly Energy entered his Physical Jewel, Zhou Weiqing's whole body shuddered, as a jet of pure, incomparable strength seemed to originate from his right hand to encompass his whole body; his muscles, bones, meridians, all seemed to be filled with that same strong feeling. He felt as though he could easily lift a large bull if it were standing in front of him.

After his Heavenly Jewels had Awakened, although Zhou Weiqing had felt that his body had gone through much change and improvement, but it was definitely far from the obvious feeling he had now. Previously, it had only been a slight improvement in strength and agility, with his body feeling lighter. However, at this moment, the sheer explosive strength that coursed through him felt so real and unparalleled. He just felt like unleashing the

explosive power within him.

However, at the same time, Zhou Weiqing also found that while this burst of strength was active, the Heavenly Energy within his body was slowly being consumed. Even though the rate of consumption was not fast, but it was a constant outflow. By now, he had already broken through 4 Death Acupuncture Points, Clavicle, Taiyuan, ZhuSanLi, SanYinJiao, whose energy whirlpools had increased their absorption rate when his Heavenly Energy had entered his physical Jewel, an increase even greater than when he focused his attentions on the whirlpool alone. However, though the absorption rate was fast, but it still wasn't enough to offset the consumption of Heavenly Energy, but could only slow down the draining rate.

Zhou Weiqing did not think much of this, and thought it was normal. However, if Shangguan Bing'er knew about this, her jaw would definitely drop in shock. No matter Physical, Elemental or Heavenly Jewel Masters, whenever they made use of their Jewels, they needed to sustain the usage with Heavenly Energy, and that Energy had to be accumulated through cultivation. Although some advanced cultivation techniques were able to slowly recover Heavenly Energy even while not cultivating, but it was definitely unlike Zhou Weiqing who could still absorb the Heavenly Energy even when he was using his Jewels!

This was another secret of the Immortal Deity Technique, after all, by risking one's life to breakthrough the Death Acupuncture Points, after going through so much danger how could there not be any advantages? The creator of the Immortal Deity Technique had accidentally broken through one Death Acupuncture Point and discovered all the various amazing powers, which was why he

continued developing the technique and couldn't resist recording it down, despite its danger.

One could imagine, as the amount of Death Acupuncture Points broken through increased, the strength of the Immortal Deity Technique would grow exponentially as the automatic absorption rate of Heavenly Energy while using the Heavenly Jewels would be even faster, thus allowing Zhou Weiqing to have greater sustainability during fights than any other Heavenly Jewel Master. Of course, that is on the premise that he can survive breaking through more Death Acupuncture Points.

Withdrawing the Heavenly Energy from the Physical Jewel, the feeling of great strength also vanished, and the sudden loss made Zhou Weiqing lick his lips involuntarily – that feeling of great strength was just so addictive, unfortunately it required the continued consumption of Heavenly Energy.

After his successful trial of his Physical Jewel, Zhou Weiqing grew in confidence and picked up the nerve to focus his Heavenly Energy to carefully enter his Alexandrite Cat's Eye Jewel.

This time, Zhou Weiqing was even more careful and meticulous, moving his Heavenly Energy slowly into the Alexandrite Cat's Eye. Just as his energy entered it, a curious phenomenon appeared.

Chapter 8 – Profound Secrets of the Immortal Deity Technique (3)

Zhou Weiqing saw a flash in front of him and felt his surroundings blur and change as his Alexandrite Cat's Eye gave out a strong burst of light. It was night time now, and the Jewel was now bright red, and the burst of light caused the whole tent to be illuminated in red. At the same time the silhouette of a wheel entered Zhou Weiqing's vision. It was transparent, yet distinctly having 6 parts, and was just hovering right in front of him, keeping in its vision even when he moved his body or turned. He raised his hand to try and touch it, but realised that his palm was behind the wheel.

After trying a few times, and waving his hands in front of his eyes without blocking the wheel, he finally realised that it was not in the world, but was rather just appearing in his eyes, and only he could see it.

There were 6 parts to the wheel, and each part was of a different colour – green, blue, silver, black, grey and a transparent colourless part. When he focused his attention on a certain part, the wheel would turn until that part was right on top.

A strange feeling then appeared right then when Zhou Weiqing focused on the green portion. He felt his entire body brimming with a brisk agility, making him feel as light as a feather, as if he could fly. Lifting his left hand, he could vaguely see a green glowing between his fingers. This should be the wind element like Shangguan Bing'er.

What Zhou Weiqing didn't know was that it was exactly because Shangguan Bing'er's Elemental Jewel was of the wind attribute that was why she was able to become his sacrifice the previous night when it was extremely dangerous for him during his Heavenly Jewel Awakening. If at that point, Shangguan Bing'er did not share a similar element with him, the final result would have been him dying via self-implosion, and Shangguan Bing'er would have also been ripped apart by that explosion.

As the wheel spun towards the blue portion, he instantly felt a sense of numbness as bolts of lightning appeared. The green light at his left hand was replaced by thick and rough blue electrical lights snaking around, and the whole tent was lit with a flickering glow. Zhou Weiqing blinked and thought to himself: So, my second elemental attribute is lightning. Do Elemental Jewels have such an attribute? I've never heard of it before; looks like I'll have to ask Shangguan Bing'er tomorrow.

With a thought, the status wheel spun and changed to the silver portion. Immediately, the numbness and the electricity disappeared, and the tent's flickering light was replaced with a soft silver light which was extremely stable. Strangely, this silver light was not just around Zhou Weiqing's hand, but surrounding his body. Furthermore, he could clearly feel that when the wheel was at this portion, the drain on his Heavenly Energy was a lot higher. However, he was not clear on exactly what element this silver portion signified. Since he did not know what the elemental attribute was, he just casually called it the unknown element...

Turning to the 4th portion, the black colour, without question it was the Darkness attribute he had inherited from his father. The dark and gloomy aura filled the entire tent, causing him to be

unable to even see his hands in front of him, and the Heavenly Energy consumption was almost equal to the silver unknown element earlier.

Zhou Weiqing vaguely realised what the unknown element could be – after all the Darkness attribute was one of the 4 Great Elemental Attributes. Since they both drained an equal amount of Heavenly Energy, it stood to reason that the unknown element was also one of the 4 Great Elemental Attributes. Besides Darkness, the other 3 Attributes was Light, Life and Spatial. It was unlikely to be Light, since Light and Darkness were opposing attributes. It also did not feel like the Life Attribute, as that had a rather obvious feel. As a result, by the elimination process, it could only be the Spatial Attribute.

Out of the 4 Great Attributes, he had already possessed 2 of them, this made Zhou Weiqing rather pleased with himself. Along with the wind and lightning attributes, he was extremely strong. Furthermore, there were still 2 other attributes!

The wheel spun once again, reaching the 5th portion. Upon reaching this portion, Zhou Weiqing only stopped for a very short period before quickly turning to the next portion. The reason for that was simple, as soon as he reached the 5th gray area, the cold aura that had appeared several times for him appeared once again, bringing along the fierce bloodlust and other negative emotions along with it, swarming his mind and almost causing him to lose control.

As he reflexively spun to the 6th part of the wheel, the next instance the remaining third of his Heavenly Energy had been

consumed, vanishing into thin air. Zhou Weiqing felt his body twisting, and his vision blackened as a sense of frailty invaded every part of his body. The vision of the status wheel disappeared, and the light of the Alexandrite Cat's Eye also dimmed.

Panting heavily, Zhou Weiqing was really afraid in his heart. The earlier attributes were still okay, but what exactly were those last 2 attributes? The fifth attribute was still slightly describable, that evil and bloody aura, it was likely the Evil Attribute. However, what was that last attribute? Why did all my remaining Heavenly Energy get drained instantly when I focused my attention on that portion?

The 4 energy whirlpools from the 4 Death Acupuncture Points already broken through was already absorbing Heavenly Energy from the atmosphere to replenish his reserves, making him feel slightly better. After a while, his emotions had finally calmed down, and Zhou Weiqing also had some possible judgement on the sixth attribute. Although he wasn't able to guess the actual attribute, but at least he knew it definitely existed.

The Alexandrite Cat's Eye was a unique Elemental Jewel which required the Heavenly Jewel Master to have more than 4 attributes. Although he was unable to detect what attribute it was, but it was somewhat similar in nature to the Spatial Attribute, in that there were no revealing traits. However, from the fact that it instantly consumed so much Heavenly Energy, there was only one possibility – his current level of Heavenly Energy was not sufficient to sustain the power and ability of this Attribute.

Having thought through this, Zhou Weiqing's heart was

placated. Having insufficient Heavenly Energy now did not mean that it would always remain so forever; as long as he kept up training and cultivation and continued breaking through the Immortal Deity Technique, one day he would be able to make use of that attribute.

Chapter 8 – Profound Secrets of the Immortal Deity Technique (4)

As he thought up to here, Zhou Weiqing Received his Heavenly Jewels back into his Taiyuan Acupuncture Point, before falling down backwards. Since cultivating Heavenly Energy was a matter of focusing on the whirlpools, there was no difference between sitting and lying down – he sure gave himself a good reason for lying down lazily, closing his eyes and focusing on the energy whirlpools. Unfortunately, although the Immortal Deity Technique was able to cultivate while lying down unlike other cultivation techniques, this position was way too comfortable, and before long he was fast asleep. Luckily, the 4 energy whirlpools still continued absorbing energy from the surroundings even without his focused will, though it was at a slower speed.

“Little Fatty Zhou, Little Fatty Zhou, wake up.” With a Shuah sound, a strong light focusing on Zhou Weiqing’s face, causing him to wake up from his beauty sleep.

“What? Let me sleep a while more.” Zhou Weiqing turned around and said lazily.

There was a loud bang as a kick landed on his buttocks, and Zhou Weiqing got a big fright and flipped up to stand upright, only to see Company Leader Mao Li standing in his tent, and the strong light was the sunlight shining in from the open tent flap.

Mao Li said exasperatedly: “You’re still not up yet? You better get up now, what time is it already? Such lazy soldiers like you will have to be properly moulded by me.”

Zhou Weiqing had no choice but to get up, saying, “Company Leader, let me go eat breakfast first.”

Mao Li was both angry and exasperated, thinking to himself: This rascal is sure a piece of work, no wonder the other day after he had been frivolous with the Battalion Commander he still behaved as if nothing had happened, making her so angry.

“Did I wake you up just to eat? Who asked you to wake up so late. Eat.. eat your own farts, there’s nothing to eat anymore. Come with me, the Battalion Commander has summoned you.” As he was talking, Mao Li grabbed Zhou Weiqing by the shoulder and pulled, trying to drag him out of the tent. However, he was surprised – he had originally thought that he could easily drag Zhou Weiqing out of the tent, but when he actually tried doing so, he found that his body was as heavy as a mountain, even exerting his strength, he could not move Zhou Weiqing at all.

“En?” Mao Li said as he looked at Zhou Weiqing in surprise, “Brat, you have cultivated Heavenly Energy?”

Zhou Weiqing said proudly: “Yes indeed.” After his body had been evolved from the Awakening of his Heavenly Jewels, he barely felt the strength that Mao Li applied on him. Of course, due to his promise to Shangguan Bing’er, he immediately shut up after that.

Even so, just that simple two word answer made Company Leader Mao Li’s look towards him change drastically. After all, in

the commoner world, barely a hundredth of the population could even start to cultivate Heavenly Energy, and of that number, a hundredth could cultivate enough to become a Jewel Master.

Of course, the other portion of people who only managed to cultivate to the first or second stage of Heavenly Energy by the age of 16, although they were not able to Awaken their Power Jewel, they were still a lot stronger than ordinary people.

in terms of cultivation of Heavenly Energy, the first 3 stages of the Heavenly Jing Energy was the most important, and also the most difficult. Every stage was tantamount to a new rebirth – remoulding and evolving the body. For someone like Zhou Weiqing who directly broke through to the 4th stage, thus melding all the rebirth and remoulding stages together as one, it was previously unheard of!

As such, even if it were those who had only cultivated up to the first two stages of Heavenly Jing Energy, they were still highly wanted in the army. After the recruit phase, most of them would likely be promoted to a role of Squad Leader, and they definitely had greater combat capabilities than any ordinary soldiers. Mao Li himself was someone who had managed to cultivate up to the 2nd stage of Heavenly Jing Energy, and had almost been able to become a Jewel Master. As soon as he found out that Zhou Weiqing also had Heavenly Energy, his attitude towards him warmed considerably.

“Alas, we are in the same sorry boat ah! Being able to cultivate Heavenly Energy, yet unable to become Jewel Masters, in a way such talents like us are the most tragic, seemingly having the

chance yet ultimately failing to become a Jewel Master. It might be better off not having the chance at first, to be an ordinary person.” Mao Li said with much feelings.

In truth he was not wrong, if one had always been a commoner, having not felt the strength and power of Heavenly Energy, they would not have an inkling of the true power of a Jewel Master. Yet for those who had tasted the benefits of Heavenly Energy, they were the ones who truly lusted after the strength of becoming Jewel Master. Ignorance was indeed bliss sometimes.

Zhou Weiqing had no choice but to shrug his shoulders. After all, he couldn't just reveal to Mao Li that he was already a Jewel Master, and Mao Li would also never suspect such a thing. After all, who would join the army as a common soldier as a Jewel Master. In any country, Jewel Masters were considered nobility.

“Let's go, looks like these two days the Battalion Commander has still been kind, at least she didn't torture you and you aren't missing any limbs. You better be careful next time! But you're my part of my 4th Company Bros, I will look after you.” Mao Li patted Zhou Weiqing on the shoulder, he did not try to drag him along anymore, but turned and walked out.

Zhou Weiqing put on an overcoat and followed him out of the tent, and followed Mao Li to Shangguan Bing'er's Commander's Tent.

As soon as he entered the tent, Zhou Weiqing spotted Shangguan Bing'er who was seated on the seat of honor. Even though he had seen her several times previously, and had even had intimate

relations with her, but the sight of her still gave him an intense jolt.

Today, Shangguan Bing'er was dressed in a martial attire, the Battalion Commander's Silver Mail she was wearing made her look especially valiant and heroic in bearing. She wasn't wearing a helmet, and her long hair was braided in a pony tail behind her head. Although she was only 15 years of age, she looked very much the part of a General seated on the Commanding Officer's chair, .

To the left of her sat a handsome youth of about the age of twenty, black hair to the shoulders and a face with a complexion like jade. Unfortunately he seemed to have a pair of bewitching, seductive eyes like peach blossoms. He was dressed in light armor, with a yellow feather topping his helmet, showing that he had the same rank as Mao Li – Company Leader. The other side of Shangguan Bing'er was empty; this time round there were two companies recruiting men, obviously the other seat was meant for Mao Li.

Behind those 2 seats, each sat ten Squad leaders dressed in leather armor. In Heavenly Bow Empire, only officers of the rank of Company Leaders and above would have differences in their armour, either by the feather in their helmets or by their armor design or colours. As such, the Squad Leaders who were in charge of ten men were also jokingly referred to as “No Feather Squad Leaders”

Mao Li brought Zhou Weiqing into the tent, and everyone's gaze immediately turned to them.

Mao Li gave a sharp salute to Shangguan Bing'er, "Reporting to Battalion Commander, I have brought Little Fatty Zhou here."

Shangguan Bing'er said in cold clear voice, "Company Leader Mao Li, thanks for your efforts. Please take your seat."

Chapter 9 – Purple Dawn Bow (1)

“Yes.” Mao Li walked to his place at the right hand seat of Shangguan Bing’er and sat down.

Zhou Weiqing looked on critically, realising that Company Leader Mao Li did not have much liking for the handsome youth Company Leader, not even giving him a look but instead just sitting down in his seat expressionless.

Shangguan Bing’er and Zhou Weiqing looked at each other, and he raised his eyebrow gently at her; this small action seemed very natural, and most others would likely not pay attention. However, Shangguan Bing’er was a Heavenly Jewel Master, and more importantly, an archer, how good was her eyesight? Furthermore, she was so familiar with Zhou Weiqing’s character – a thread of hatred flashed in her pupils. Sometimes, she really wished she could give this rascal a good beating.

“Little Fatty Zhou, you stand behind me. From today onwards, you are the Battalion Commander’s Personal Aide.” After she glared once more at Zhou Weiqing, she ordered with a tranquil expression.

“Yes.” The Zhou Weiqing said compliantly, and started walking towards Shangguan Bing’er’s back. It would be good to be her Personal Aide, not only would it be convenient to continue learning the more about Heavenly Jewel Masters, just being able to spend more time with her would make him satisfied. Luckily he did not dare to go too far when he in front of so many people, but his eyes still revealed his happiness.

“Wait.” At this moment, an inharmonious sound appeared suddenly, though Zhou Weiqing had to acknowledge that the voice was clear and melodious, sounding quite good – it actually belonged to that handsome young Company Leader.

“What’s wrong? Do you have any questions, Company Leader Xiao?” Shangguan Bing’er turned to look at him, the bitterness in her eyes vanishing as she assumed a tranquil, even gentle countenance.

The handsome youth Company Leader Xiao nodded his head slightly, not hiding his ardent look at Shangguan Bing’er, saying: “Battalion Commander, with your status you definitely should be assigned a soldier as a Personal Aide. However, your Personal Aide doesn’t need to only be able to handle the simple everyday routine business for you, but should also be able to shoulder the responsibility of protecting you. This Little Fatty Zhou is just a fresh recruit, won’t it be difficult for him to shoulder such a heavy responsibility?”

Shangguan Bing’er, who was easily able to maintain her cool as long as she wasn’t facing Zhou Weiqing, showed a faint smile and said: “Company Leader Xiao, do you really believe that I need the protection of my Professional Aide? What candidate do you have to recommend instead?”

Zhou Weiqing had halted his footsteps when Company Leader Xiao started speaking, feeling a sense of foreboding and vigilance in his heart, it was rather clear to everyone that Company Leader Xiao was looking at Shangguan Bing’er with an admiring

expression. Zhou Weiqing couldn't help but stare at him, secretly critiquing to himself : This fellow why does he have such a gigolo face? They say handsome gigolos like that do not have good intentions, one look at him I can tell he is a bad egg.

Originally, he did not have much hope for wooing Shangguan Bing'er, but when he became a Heavenly Jewel Master, our dear Zhou Weiqing, Little Fatty Zhou, had just 'righteously' regarded Shangguan Bing'er has his. Of course, that scheming mind of his that rightfully should not appear in an ordinary 13-year-old youth would not let him display those feelings outright.

Hearing Shangguan Bing'er's question, Company Leader Xiao said in a serious tone: "Naturally, with our Battalion Commander's strength, you do not need the protection of a mere Personal Aide, but as a fresh recruit can he even shoot arrows? By following you into battle, wouldn't it be a loss of face for you? Furthermore, even if you do not need the protection of a Personal Aide, but he should still be able to follow your steps in the battlefield. I, Xiao Se, am willing to resign from my commission as Company Leader to follow Battalion Commander about, I pledge to fight to the death to protect the Battalion Commander's life."

This Company Leader Xiao said it with such a strong sense of righteousness, with such an appearance that is unafraid of death, that Zhou Weiqing was almost moved by him. Yet, in the heart he was criticizing: If he doesn't act, will he die?

Shangguan Bing'er said with a lovely smile: "Many thanks for your good intentions Company Leader Xiao, but you are our 3rd Battalion's pillar of strength. How can I let you hold the mere post

of a Personal Aide? As for Zhou Weiqing, although he is a recruit, but I have tested him these few days, and he is indeed has the talent to be developed. He also has had some previous practice with shooting, and should be competent enough to be a Personal Aide.”

Xiao Se wrinkled his brow, saying: “Battalion Commander, how about this? Let’s get Little Fatty Zhou to demonstrate his ability to us, at least we can all set our minds at ease.”

Shangguan Bing’er still had unfazed appearance, facing Xiao Se’s persistence, she did not pull rank. “Okay, let’s do as Company Leader Xiao said. But how does Company Leader Xiao plan to test my Personal Aide?” The composure she was maintaining did not truly represent her thinking in her heart, but in the third battalion, although she was the Battalion Commander, but Company Leader Xiao actually had greater influence than her. Even though his noble title was lower than hers, but he had a background that Shangguan Bing’er could not ignore.

Xiao Se stood up and with quick motion of his hand, he took out a longbow from beside his seat. His longbow was similar to Shangguan Bing’er’s, its body was entirely purple, and Zhou Weiqing was very clear on this quality material.

The wood from the Stars Trees from the Stars Forest could be used to create bows after the trees were at least ten years old, but generally speaking, the wood that the army uses was at least over 30 years of age. This was because the wood would be strong enough by then. The purple longbow that Xiao Se and Shangguan Bing’er used was also made from the wood of the Stars Tree, but it was

made from trees of over hundred years old.

The wood from Stars Trees was a dark red colour, and when they grew to beyond a hundred years of age, they would transform into a deep purple, with thin, tiny surface trace lines like ox hairs present. If one examined it carefully, they would be able to see golden luminous spots as well. This is also one of the origin of one of the Star Woods' nicknames, this kind of hundred-year old Stars Wooden characteristic was called Ox Hair Venus.

When Stars Wood's growth surpassed a hundred years, its would experience a substantial qualitative leap, its strength and tenacity increasing by a large margin. A longbow that was created with the Hundred Years Stars Wood had a tensile strength of at least three times that of an ordinary longbow, needing over 100 kilograms of pulling force to be able to draw it to the max. As such, its firing distance was also a lot further, the effective striking distance reaching 500 yards. If one were to further add Heavenly Energy, the effective striking distance would be even farther. Therefore, the longbow was also known as the Purple Dawn Bow, each one having the value of at least a hundred gold or more depending on the quality. This longbow was definitely not something that an ordinary Company Leader could use; even if the Heavenly Bow Empire was renowned for their bows and archery, it was rare enough that it usually warranted a rank of Battalion Commander to be given such a high quality bow.

Xiao Se took his Purple Dawn Bow and walked right in front of Zhou Weiqing, and with a faint smile said: "Little Fatty Zhou right. As long as you can draw my Purple Dawn Bow, it will show that you have qualification to be the Battalion Commander's Personal Aide. Go ahead and try, use all the strength that you possess, but be

careful do not overstrain yourself, if you wet yourself in the pants it will not be too good.”

Xiao Se’s words immediately caused those “No Feather Squad Leaders” to burst out in raucous laughter, especially the ten who were under his command, they were doubled up in laughter, not showing Shangguan Bing’er the respect the Battalion Commander seat warranted.

Chapter 9 – Purple Dawn Bow (2)

Zhou Weiqing looked at the Purple Dawn Bow in Xiao Se's hands with a face full of curiosity, then took a look at Shangguan Bing'er again with a face full of confusion: "Battalion Commander, what kind of bow is this? How different is it from our bows? Are we allowed to varnish our own bows so casually in the army?"

Shangguan Bing'er looked at Zhou Weiqing with exasperation: "If Company Leader Xiao wants you to try then you should just go ahead and try, stop with all the useless idle talk."

Zhou Weiqing received the Purple Dawn Bow from Xiao Se, sneering secretly in his heart. In truth, he was much more familiar with the Purple Dawn Bow than an ordinary Stars Bow. Initially, in order to draw a Purple Dawn Bow, he had practiced hard for two years; in the Admiral's Mansion whenever he practiced, it was usually with the Purple Dawn Bow. This was also why the other day when Shangguan Bing'er had tested him on his shooting accuracy that day, he had been slightly off target. The reason was that he was not used to the ordinary Stars Bow. After all, for the whole of those two years, he practiced drawing with it every day, his arm had been swollen countless times, despite wind and rain, Admiral Zhou would not let him rest. In Admiral Zhou's words: "Even if you are a waste, you are also I, Zhou Shuiniu's, trash son. If you can't even use a bow, this father of yours will punch you til you arch into a bow shape."

The weight of the Purple Dawn Bow was almost two times that of an ordinary Stars Bow, fully 20 kilograms, and was quite heavy. Zhou Weiqing seemed lift it with much difficulty, and asked Xiao Se questioningly: "Company Leader Xiao, your purple bow is quite

heavy! How do you even use it?”

Xiao Se gave a humph of disdain, “Just depending on your own strength, you still dream to draw my Purple Dawn Bow? Even if you were to reborn and drink milk all over again, you still won’t have that strength. You better hold it carefully, if you drop it, do not blame me for being impolite.”

“Oh.” Zhou Weiqing’s simple and honest expression on his face made him seem like a simple youth from the countryside, uncontaminated by city life.

As the same time as he was replying, he grasped the bow and pulled back the bowstring, only to have it remain entirely still. His face turned red, as if he was exerting all his strength with every fibre of his body.

Xiao Se was not even deign to take another look at Zhou Weiqing, turning his head Shangguan Bing’er and said: “Look Battalion Commander, how can this Little Fatty Zhou have the qualification to be your Personal Aide when he can’t even draw my Purple Dawn Bow?”

Before Shangguan Bing’er could say anything, Company Leader Mao Li couldn’t resist and said, “Company Leader Xiao, Little Fatty Zhou only just joined the army, being able to use the ordinary longbow is already quite good. As for the Purple Dawn Bow, let alone him, even for those seated here, not everyone can actually draw it right.”

Xiao Se shot a look at him, a chill in his eyes, but did not bother replying him, instead treating him like air. His gaze remained on Shangguan Bing'er, waiting for her reply.

Shangguan Bing'er only wanted to do one thing now, which was to rush forward to give Little Fatty Zhou a beating. Although she did not know that Zhou Weiqing was already able to activate his Strength Physical Jewel, but knew that he had already gotten a large increase to his physical abilities after Awakening his Heavenly Jewels. Let alone is a Purple Dawn Bow, even if it were two and three he could also draw them all. After all, his Physical Jewel would boost his strength. However, this rascal's acting was so realistic; looking at his face that was flushed with exertion, with an expression that showed such anxiety, Shangguan Bing'er was so angry that her face turned green.

“Company Leader Xiao, Little Fatty Zhou has not given up yet, why don't we wait and see.” While speaking, she also stood up, though she did not walk forward, instead looking at Zhou Weiqing with a fierce glare.

Zhou Weiqing felt a slight itch in his ear, a voice as soft as a mosquito sounded out in his ear, “Damn Little Fatty Zhou, you better stop acting or I'll punch you till you won't be able to take care of yourself.”

Shangguan Bing'er thought that Zhou Weiqing wouldn't dare to continue acting after her threat, but who knew that right after she had said those words, Zhou Weiqing actually let go of the bow. Furthermore, that rascal was panting heavily, taking in big gulps of air, giving the appearance of being incomparably exhausted.

Xiao Se said with scorn: “Battalion Commander, look and see for yourself, it is impossible for him to draw the Purple Dawn Bow, I think that you should also withdraw your order.”

Shangguan Bing'er gripped her fist tightly, if she did not have to keep up her image as befits her rank and status, she would probably have rushed over and hit him by now.

“Who said that I am unable to draw this Purple Dawn Bow, it's just that just now my body was not warmed up yet. I can definitely do it if I try again.” Zhou Weiqing was saying in an unconvinced manner while still panting heavily. There was even a thin sheen of perspiration on his forehead.

Xiao Sa laughed, putting both hands behind his back, showing a natural and elegant state, saying: “Even if I let you try a hundred times you still will not be able to draw this bow. Did you think that the Purple Dawn Bow is meant for you, this kind of third-rater, to use?”

Zhou Weiqing said with a face filled with grief and indignation: “Third-rater? Aren't third-raters also human? Who said I can't draw it, I will definitely be able to! Let me bet with you, if I cannot draw it, I will commit suicide right here.”

This time, Mao Li did not speak up, because, even he had noticed something awry. Although he did not have as much contact with Zhou Weiqing as Shangguan Bing'er, but he did also know that this young rascal was not as good or naive as he seemed. Furthermore,

earlier that morning he had already witnessed Zhou Weiqing's strength for himself. Even if he could not fully draw the Purple Dawn Bow, he should still be at least able to pull back the string a little.

Xiao Se said with a cold humph: "Then you can try pulling again, I definitely want to see if you really dare to commit suicide here." In his eyes, the death of an ordinary soldier is nothing.

Zhou Weiqing took up the Purple Dawn bow again and was just about to start pulling, but just as he was about to exert strength, this fellow seemed to suddenly remember something, and he turned his head to look at Xiao Se, saying: "Since we made a bet, we need to have the stakes on both sides. If I draw the bow, will you also commit suicide here?" With his honest and simple looks, coupled with him asking such a question now, gave the people around the feeling that he was very naive and childish.

Xiao Se said proudly: "What do you think you are, can your life be compared with mine? I have the title of Viscount. Hmph, this Purple Dawn Bow will be my gambling stake. If you cannot draw it, I also do not want your life, you'll have to kneel here and call me three times "Grandfather", then I'll let you off."

Zhou Weiqing listened to Xiao Se's words and shook his head vigorously, "No, that will not do, I will lose out that way. My father told me that for men, we have gold under our knees. Your bow is so heavy, but it is still inferior to the gold. If you lose, you must kneel down and call me Grandfather in order for things to be even."

Xiao Se did not believe that he would lose, and looking at Zhou Weiqing's obstinate face, he said with disdain: "As long as you can draw the bow, why won't I call you? Quickly, stop wasting our precious time."

"Good." Zhou Weiqing smiled. Perhaps in the eyes of others, his smile would seem simple and honest, but in the eyes of Shangguan Bing'er, it was an incomparably sly and deceitful one. However, she did not prevent Zhou Weiqing from continuing, as in heart even she felt it was truly funny.

Chapter 9 – Purple Dawn Bow (3)

Before Zhou Weiqing could even begin to try drawing the bowstring, the squad leaders under Xiao Se had already started to make a scene, shouting: “Don’t waste your energy boy, quickly called your Grandfather. Being able to recognize our Company Leader to be your grandfather, it’s your, this brat’s, good fortune.”

Zhou Weiqing turned his head to look to at the squad leader that had called out, pretending that he had not heard clearly, asking: “What did you ask me to call out?”

The squad leader subconscious replied: “Grandfather.”

Zhou Weiqing smiled, and said happily: “Ohh, such a good boy. However, having such a grandson like you, your ancestor must have been lacking virtue.”

“What did you say?” That squad leader realized that he had been fooled by this seemingly simple and honest recruit. He stood up fiercely, but at the same time, Zhou Weiqing sneered, and exerted his strength with both arms, and the ‘Ox Hair Venus’ Purple Dawn Bow was instantly drawn to a full crescent.

The squad leader who had just stood up had wanted to curse angrily, until he suddenly saw that Zhou Weiqing had fully drawn the Purple Dawn Bow to its max. His jaw dropped, an expression of sheer disbelief written on his face. He was not the only one, all the squad leaders under Xiao Se had similar expressions. Even Xiao Se looked as if he had seen a ghost, shock written all over his face.

One must know that for normal humans who did not have any Heavenly Energy cultivated, it is almost impossible to draw the Purple Dawn Bow.

Zhou Weiqing did not let lose the bowstring after drawing it, instead maintaining the posture without moving. The simple, honest look, the indignation, all the various expressions he had earlier all disappeared, and only scorn remained in his eyes, and he looked toward Xiao Se and gave a loud cry, “Kneel down, call me Grandfather.”

After Zhou Weiqing said that, with a crashing sound, all of Xiao Se’s squad leaders immediately charged forward, encircling him. Looked at their appearances, they were about to attack Zhou Weiqing.

However, at this moment, an evil light flashed in Zhou Weiqing’s eyes, under and cover of his sleeves, the Icy Jade Physical Jewel swirled out quietly like fog in the night, appearing out onto his right wrist right, and instantaneously melded with him.

Heavenly Energy and Physical Jewel melded in an instant, and Zhou Weiqing suddenly felt as if the Purple Dawn Bow in his hands was as of negligible weight, his whole body feeling full of indescribable great power. Subconscious, both his hands exerted strength once again, and a cracking sound issued out, as the Purple Dawn Bow in his hand was pulled until it snapped apart unexpectedly.

With an idle toss, Zhou Weiqing threw the Purple Dawn Bow to the ground like it was a piece of trash, then lifted his gripped right

fist in front of his eyes, blowing on it before saying with disdain: “I thought it was such a good thing, I didn’t expect it to break so easily upon pulling. Do you call this a bow?”

The “No Feather Squad Leaders” who were preparing to attack Zhou Weiqing were completely startled by his actions. That was a Purple Dawn Bow made from hundred year old Stars Wood!! As Company Leader Mao Li had said earlier, few amongst them could even draw the bow, let alone draw it until it snapped. What sort of terrifying strength was required to be able to achieve such a feat? Complete silence filled the room, as none of them dared to make a move.

“Enough. What are you all trying to do? Do you want to be charged under military law?” Shangguan Bing’er voice resounded in the air in icy cold tones, and the “No Feather Squad Leaders” took advantage of the opportunity to quickly back down.

Shangguan Bing’er took a glance at the broken Purple Dawn Bow lying on the ground, and a flash of surprise appeared in her green eyes. She then turned towards Xiao Se, saying: “Company Leader Xiao, I think there isn’t any further need to prove anything else right?”

Xiao Se’s face was ashen, turning absolutely green and white. He had never expected to get fooled by Little Fatty Zhou, a mere recruit, furthermore it was done so in front of Shangguan Bing’er, and his own Purple Dawn Bow had even been destroyed.

However, he finally managed to suppress the rage in his heart, giving a forced smile and said: “So Brother Zhou is such a hidden

talent, I have misjudged you. Congratulations Battalion Commander for finding such a qualified Personal Aide. Being able to draw a Purple Dawn Bow to breaking point, naturally he does not need to prove anything further. Battalion Commander, the new barracks for recruits will be open a few days later. I will go and handle the recruits first.” After saying that, he lead his ten “No Feather Squad Leaders” away.

“Company Leader Xiao, I seem to remember that you have not kept your promise yet, you have neither knelt down nor called me ‘Grandfather’ yet, yet you are walking away already?” Zhou Weiqing said mockingly.

Xiao Se looked at him, then suddenly this fellow also has smiled rather unexpectedly, with a rather deceitful sly looking smile. “Brother Zhou, earlier I said that the Purple Dawn Bow can be my gambling stake. Afterwards, what I said was why won’t I call you?’ I never agreed to kneeling down. Since you really want to hear me call you, then I’ll just call you 3 times of ‘Little Fatty Zhou’. As for the gambling stake, the Purple Dawn Bow, it was destroyed by you, so I have no relation with it any further. Let’s go.” As he was speaking, he waved his hands fiercely, and lead his men to turn around and leave.

“Bah! What thing is that?!” Zhou Weiqing looks at Xiao Se’s retreating back, saying somewhat exasperatedly, and with some anger. He was still young after all, and had not previously noted the word game that Xiao Se had been playing, it looks like this fellow was more sly and deceitful than he had imagined.

At the other side, Xiao Se who had left the Command Tent no

longer had a smile on his face. With an ashen face and gritted teeth, he said. “Go check out this Little Fatty Zhou. I must have a look and see where Shangguan Bing’er this girl managed to find such a fellow. Could he be from the royal family?”

The Squad Leader who had been tricked in calling Zhou Weiqing ‘Grandfather’ said in a low voice: “Boss, looking at that rascal, he just has a greater natural strength, there is no need to mobilize the forces right Tonight, I will go to his tent and help you to get revenge and vent your anger.”

“Humph.” Xiao Se said coldly, “Do you think that any mere individual can break the Purple Dawn Bow? If I have not guessed wrongly, that boy should be a Physical Jewel Master, with his Physical Jewel gives a majority boost to strength. I know almost all of Heavenly Bow Empire’s Jewel Masters, yet this boy isn’t one of them. You better go and search carefully, do not miss any clues, however minute they are.”

“Yes.”

After Xiao Se had left, Shangguan Bing’er also dismissed Mao Li and his squad leaders. Just before leaving, Mao Li gave Zhou Weiqing a big thumbs up from a hidden position, the expression in his eyes showing his approval. It was clear that Xiao Se taking this minor made him extremely happy.

After everyone had left, only Zhou Weiqing and Shangguan Bing’er were left in the command tent. “Little Fatty Zhou, you can meld with your Heavenly Jewels already?” Shangguan Bing’er asked, her surprise on display markedly. With no one else around,

she no longer needed to hide her earlier thoughts.

Zhou Weiqing said in a natural, matter-of-fact manner: “Yes, of course! I could do it after yesterday evening, the method you taught me was very simple, I managed to pick it up after some practice, then I just tried to link up with my Elemental and Physical Jewels, and it went quite smoothly as well.”

Shangguan Bing'er was very silent. Was the practice of Jewel Masters really that easy? Certainly not, especially for Heavenly Jewel Master, it was even more difficult to practice and cultivate. There was a reason why she was called the Heavenly Bow Empire's top genius talent of the younger generation, It was because initially when she practiced Receiving and Releasing her Heavenly Jewels, it had only taken her five days to be skilled in it, but linking up with her Heavenly Jewels had taken ten whole days. Yet, this upright honest looking, yet truly sly fellow unexpectedly only used one night to master all of that. Although she was not willing to acknowledge it, but she also understood that it was now time for her to give up her title of Top Genius.

Chapter 9 – Purple Dawn Bow (4)

After all, how was she to know that all those accomplishments were not because of Zhou Weiqing's talent, but rather it was just some of the amazing things that were granted to him because of the suicidal-art Immortal Deity Technique, the miraculous skill that had let him master the basic skills of Heavenly Jewel Masters so smoothly.

Seeing Shangguan Bing'er staring at him in a daze, Zhou Weiqing stepped in closer and grinned, saying: "I know that I am very outstanding, but if you keep staring at me like that, I will still be embarrassed."

Shangguan Bing'er awoke from her daze, flushing red in embarrassment, and with a flying kick onto Zhou Weiqing's buttocks, she said with clenched jaws: "Little Fatty Zhou, I have been waiting for a very long time to punch you"

Zhou Weiqing immediately understood that trouble was about to befall him, and quickly exhibited a panic-stricken appearance. Alas, how could Shangguan Bing'er possibly be swindled again? Her movements were like the wind as she descended upon him with fiery anger.

"NNOooooo"

.....

Ten minutes later, our dear Little Fatty Zhou was curled up on

the ground, like a boiled shrimp, his whole body trembling as he groaned incessantly. He looked so pitiful, as if he would die at any moment.

Shangguan Bing'er looked at that rascal, speechless. In truth, she had barely punched him at all, but this fellow's acting skills were truly top notch. Even when she obviously knew he was acting, she still could not continue her beating.

Shangguan Bing'er could not help but to burst into an exasperated laugh. "Stop acting already, get up quickly, I'll let you off for today."

On hearing that, Zhou Weiqing, who seemed to be on the verge of death just moments ago, immediately somersaulted from the ground, jumping up in a burst of energy. Although there were still a few bruises on his face, but he was clearly full of spirit and vigor. From young, he had taken many a beating, his physical resistance was naturally something an average person could not compare to. Previously, at the Ice Spring Lake when he had run into Difuya, if not for the fact that he did not imagine that Difuya would dare attack him with her Elemental Jewel, he wouldn't have been injured so severely. Therefore, he had learnt that no matter what, he had to always be on his guard. Difuya's attack had gave him the valuable lesson, that nothing in this world was impossible.

Shangguan Bing'er stared at him, saying "Who asked you to break that Purple Dawn Bow? Do you know the value of that kind of high quality bow? Xiao Se already lost it to you in the bet, you should have just taken it for your use." As she was from common birth, where the poor person's child usually learnt to manages

finances early, looks at the broken Purple Dawn Bow on the ground, she felt a pain in her heart.

Zhou Weiqing shook his head, assuming an air of self approbation: “I do not want his bow, I’m afraid I will dirty my hands. One look at that gigolo, I know that he is not a good thing. If it were your bow given to me to use, I will definitely take good care of it and keep it as my collection. Every day, I can smell your residual fragrance on it, I will be re-energized!”

Shangguan Bing’er once again clenched her the fist, “You are asking for a beating again?”

Zhou Weiqing’s body shrank back immediately, staring at her with widened eyes and said: “Didn’t you just say that you will let me off for today? If you really want to hit me, then come.”

Shangguan Bing’er was realising more and more that she just could not easily deal with him. You truly could not judge this rascal with conventional thinking, his slyness was truly at another level.

“Less idle talk. Since you have linked with your Heavenly Jewels, so what attributes do your Elemental Jewel contain?”

As soon as the practice of Heavenly Jewel Masters was mentioned, Zhou Weiqing immediately became serious, a rare sight indeed. He said: “After my Heavenly Energy and Elemental Jewel melded, I saw several different colours, when I focused on each color, my body would have a corresponding change. I have

five different colors, and I have judged what they likely are: Green which should be Wind attribute, blue which should be the Lightning attribute, black which should be the Darkness attribute, silver being the Spatial attribute. The last one is grey in color, when I focus on it, I am immediately consumed with bloodlust and have the urge to kill. My Heavenly Energy is also consumed very rapidly, it was very strange. I have temporarily called it the Evil attribute.” He did not mention his last attribute, not because he did not trust Shangguan Bing’er, but because he was sure that even Shangguan Bing’er would not know what attribute that was.

Upon listening to his words, Shangguan Bing’er’s pupils constricted, in the heart she mused: I do not understand why this rascal has so many good attributes. Moreover, because of him I also

Shaking her head, Shangguan Bing’er tried to make herself stop dwelling upon the events of the other night, and the way she looked upon Zhou Weiqing became somewhat strange.

“Follow me.” As she said that, she carried her Purple Dawn Bow on the back, took two quiver of arrows and walked out.

Zhou Weiqing followed her out of the command tent, towards the outskirts. Very soon, both of them had exited the camp area, and Shangguan Bing’er turned to look at him, saying: “Use your wind attribute.”

“How do I use it?” Zhou Weiqing asked blankly.

Shangguan Bing'er said: "Focus your will on the green colored portion of the status wheel."

Zhou Weiqing stopped, and Released his Heavenly Jewels. He then slowly moved his Heavenly Energy into his Elemental Jewel, and immediately, the six color wheel of light appeared once again, and he focused his will onto the green region as asked. Almost instantly, he felt his body becoming very light, as if a swirl of flowing air was revolving around his body, making him feel extremely comfortable and buoyant, as light as a feather. Amongst the various attributes that his Elemental Jewel contained, the wind Attribute was the one which consumed the lowest amount of Heavenly Energy. While he activated his Elemental Jewel, the four Death Acupuncture Point energy whirlpools that had formed also accelerated, speeding up their absorption of the Heavenly Energy from the environment.

Shangguan Bing'er waited for Zhou Weiqing patiently as he started wielding his Elemental Jewel. The entire process took almost two minutes, until she saw a layer of dim green light started surrounding Zhou Weiqing's body; she then started her own movement, and in a flash of green light, she also activated her own wind Attribute, leading Zhou Weiqing along at an extremely high speed.

This was Zhou Weiqing's first time making use of his Elemental Jewel's ability, and he felt like his body was so light and buoyant, and everything seemed so effortless. He only needed to lightly touch his feet on the ground, and he would naturally float three to four metres ahead. This method of running was not only several times faster than normal, and also did not take much effort.

No wonder so many people want to become Jewel Masters, the ability of Jewel Masters is really miraculous! As Zhou Weiqing curiously examined the various advantages that the wind Attribute brought to him, he couldn't help but exclaim that in his heart. However, at the same time, he also could see the huge disparity between his abilities and Shangguan Bing'er's. She had activated her wind Attribute instantaneously, not requiring the long preparation time which he needed.

After a while, they had almost travelled ten miles from the military compound, reaching the outskirts of Heavenly Bow City, entering the Stars Forest.

“Bing'er, you wouldn't be trying to silence a witness of a crime right?” Zhou Weiqing said jokingly with a laugh as he followed Shangguan Bing'er.

Chapter 10 – Physical Jewel Consolidated Equipment, Elemental Jewel Stored Skills (1)

Shangguan Bing'er controlled her own speed at a pace which allowed him to keep up, and did not even look at him as she said, "Address me as Battalion Commander. Anyway, if I wanted to kill you, would I have waited till now?"

After continuing for a while more, she stopped at one of the more spacious clearings in the Stars Forest.

"Okay, this place will do. There is some time before the recruit training starts, and during this period of time, I will be teaching you some of the cultivation and training methods of Heavenly Jewel Masters, as well as my own experience. After the recruit training starts, you do not need to train together with the ordinary recruits, but you need to practice by yourself. I have a lot of things to handle then." Shangguan Bing'er said coldly.

Looking at Shangguan Bing'er's aloof expression, Zhou Weiqing was also very helpless. This was also the idea that Shangguan Bing'er had came up with which she felt was the best way to handle him. No matter what he said or did, she would just give him a cold emotionless face, so that the rascal wouldn't reach out for a yard after taking an inch.

Shangguan Bing'er said coolly: "You currently have your first set of Heavenly Jewels, and have become a true Heavenly Jewel Master. Your title should be called Lower Level Shi Stage Heavenly Jewel Master. I have two sets of Heavenly Jewels, so I'm currently a Mid Level Shi Stage Heavenly Jewel Master. The cultivation for

us Heavenly Jewel Masters is very difficult; if you want catch up with me, then you need to practice hard and cultivate to the eighth level of Heavenly Energy, and have your Heavenly Jewels split. Naturally, I can teach you all this when the time comes. Now, I will teach you more about the usage of the Heavenly Jewels.”

Zhou Weiqing’s spirit perked up when he heard that, and he listening carefully and respectfully.

Shangguan Bing’er said: “I am also a Heavenly Jewel Master, yet I have chosen the occupation of an archer. Do you know why I have done so?”

Zhou Weiqing instantly said with much certainty: “It must be because you fear death just like me, as an archer, we can hide in the shadows and do sneak attacks by shooting arrows, which is definitely much safer. After all, safety first.”

Shangguan Bing’er sweatdropped, unable to even maintain the ice-cold expression on her face, and said angrily: “Do you think that everyone is as shameless as you? The reason why I choose to be an archer is because I am very poor, even our Heavenly Bow Empire is unable to fully support the training of a Heavenly Jewel Master.”

Zhou Weiqing was surprised, “How is that possible? Besides Admiral Zhou, you are our Empire’s only Heavenly Jewel Master! If you are lacking money, I would think the imperial Family would give it to you unconditionally?”

Shangguan Bing'er sighed lightly, "Things aren't as easy as you think, the amount of money and resources to fully develop a Heavenly Jewel Master is an unfathomable, astronomical figure. To explain why comes down to the basics of the Elemental and Physical Jewels. When we have both the Elemental and Physical Jewels, the Physical Jewel may strengthen the attributes of our body directly, and the Elemental Jewel can also give us the element attributes, allowing us to have much greater abilities than the average person. However, if we do not go further, it's only restricted to this. For example, the Wind Attribute that we used a while ago can only increase our speed a little. When our Heavenly Energy and the Wind Attribute is merged, it can be called Wind Type Heavenly Energy, when using a weapon or just your own physical attack, you can get an increase in attack speed. Another example is your Lightning Attribute will imbue your attacks with some lightning attributes. For ordinary Jewel Masters, this might be enough, but as Heavenly Jewel Masters, it is insufficient. For the Heavenly Jewels that are so difficult to cultivate, we want to maximize their strengths, we need some additional external assistance to improve both our Elemental and Physical Jewels."

Zhou Weiqing was rather puzzled: "I don't really understand what you mean."

Shangguan Bing'er said: "Let me cited a simple example for you to understand. The ability of our Elemental Jewel's Attribute, before adding on the external assistance, can only affect yourself, you can't actually discharge it externally to wound your enemy. However, once we've completed the special way to add the external assistance, it can form skills which allows us to unleash the element externally onto our enemies. You just need to remember these eight words, that is: Physical Jewel Consolidating Equipment, Elemental Jewel Storing Skills. These eight characters

state the basis of how we can improve our Physical and Elemental Jewels.”

“Physical Jewel Consolidating Equipment, Elemental Jewel Storing Skills?” Zhou Weiqing repeated Shangguan Bing’er’s words. Although Admiral Zhou was very strict with him especially regarding education, but due to the fact that his meridians were blocked, he had not been taught much regarding Heavenly Jewel Masters. At this moment, Zhou Weiqing had the clear feeling, as if a mysterious door was slowly opening wide for him.

Shangguan Bing’er continued saying: “Every additional Physical Jewels we manage to cultivate will always give our bodies an additional large boost, this is especially so for us Heavenly Jewel Master’s pure Physical Jewels, with a boost as high as 150%. However, the power and mystery of Physical Jewels are actually not limited to this. Look at this.”

As she was speaking, she lifted her left hand slowly, where two glittering and translucent Dragonstone Jewels were circling. As Zhou Weiqing looked on, he saw the first Dragonstone Jade Jewel suddenly let loose a bright light, and it actually flew away from Shangguan Bing’er’s wrist! After which, the green light surrounding it gentled, and the Physical Jewel started changing shape in midair.

After a short while, the Dragonstone Jade Jewel had unexpectedly changed form into a long arrow, its entire body seemingly made from Dragonstone Jades, glittering and translucent, but its size was in no way different from a normal arrow with the exception of a green light surrounding it.

“So, this is Physical Jewel Consolidating Equipment?” Zhou Weiqing was staring dumbfoundedly as he said. He had never known that Physical Jewel could actually have such wondrous uses.

Shangguan Bing'er nodded, and with a wave of her left hand, she gripped the Purple Dawn Bow, the index finger and middle finger of her right nocking the Dragonstone Jade Arrow to the bowstring.

“Pay attention.”

With that reminder, she drew the Purple Dawn Bow into a full crescent arch, and in the next instance, a flash of green light accompanied with the buzz of the bowstring appeared momentarily, its sheer speed made it seem like an illusion. The strangest thing was, after the Dragonstone Jade arrow was released, Zhou Weiqing did not hear any sound, and the only thing he saw was the quick flash of green light. Furthermore, it did not fly in a straight line, instead flying with twist and turns in the forest, as if it was able to see, dodging the Stars Trees ahead.

“This is possible?” Zhou Weiqing shuddered. In this rascal's mind, the first thought was that if Shangguan Bing'er used this Physical Jewel Consolidated Equipment to shoot at him, even if there was 100 of him, he would still die.

“This is my first Physical Jewel's Consolidated Equipment, the Silent Tracking Arrow, it is controlled by my will until the attack lands, and it will then return.” As she spoke those words, the

Dragonstone Jade Arrow reappeared in her fingers with a twinkle of green light.

Chapter 10 – Physical Jewel Consolidated Equipment, Elemental Jewel Stored Skills (2)

“What is known as Physical Jewel Consolidated Equipment refers to our Physical Jewels being able to form into the shape of a weapon, armor piece, or even other shapes. Once it has set into a shape, it will also have the characteristics or attributes of your Physical Jewel, which can thus form a very unique weapon for us. This is what I meant previously by the external assistance. For myself, my Silent Tracking Arrow can attack any enemy from any angle in a 500 metre radius from myself, and its speed is three times that of any normal arrow, and also an additional armor piercing effect. So long as I have enough Heavenly Energy to support it, I can keep reusing it. However, with my currently eighth level of Heavenly Energy, I can at most support the release of 12 arrows.”

The Dragonstone Jade Silent Tracking Arrow changed back to its original shape of its Physical Jewel and returned to circling Shangguan Bing'er's wrist. At this moment, Zhou Weiqing had sucked in a breath of cold air. Although he had always known that Jewel Masters were extremely formidable, but he had not expected their strength to be of such extent. He was lucky that on that day, Shangguan Bing'er had not followed her impulses, otherwise

Shangguan Bing'er did not display pride after displaying her Silent Tracking Arrow, but instead seemed somewhat despondent, “Now you know the difference in power between a Power Jewel that has external assistance and one that does not. To carry out the Consolidation of Equipment for our Physical Jewel requires the purchase of corresponding Consolidating Equipment Scrolls. However, the cost of these Consolidating Equipment Scrolls are

astronomical, furthermore, the success rate of Consolidating Equipment is very low. For a small country like our Heavenly Bow Empire, no one can support such an immense expense besides the Imperial Family, that's why the number of Jewel Masters in our country is so low, as most Jewel Masters are unable to complete external assistance to their Power Jewels. I choose to be an archer because under the circumstance of being unable to complete external assistance, archers are still able to make some extra use their Power Jewels."

As she said that, Shang Gong Bing drew her Purple Dawn Bow once more, but this time an ordinary feathered arrow appeared on the bowstring instead, and as the Purple Dawn Bow was drawn to a full crescent, the two King Tourmaline Elemental Jewels on her left hand flashed in a brilliant red light, integrating into the Purple Dawn Bow as well as the feathered arrow instantaneously. A clear buzzing sound rang out, and the arrow flew out trailing with red light, and immediately the Stars Tree 50 meters away was shot through.

"The Physical Jewel's boost to speed allows me to shoot arrows at a speed way above an ordinary archer, while the Wind Attribute Elemental Jewel can increase the speed and penetrative power of the released arrow. When both effects are added together, the might increases exponentially. As such, choosing to be an archer allows me to better use the abilities of the Physical and Elemental Jewels."

Zhou Weiqing nodded his head, saying: "What about the Elemental Jewel Stored Skills then?"

Shangguan Bing'er said: "If the Physical Jewel Consolidated Equipment gives us a weapon, then Elemental Jewel Stored Skills grants us great skills. Look at this."

Lifting her left hand, one of the King Tourmaline Jewels integrated into her palm quietly, Instantly, a thick green light jumped from her left hand, dancing around her fingertips. As she flicked her fingers, three sets of green wind blades – in the shape of crescent moon and having a diameter of about one yard each – floated before her. The next moment, the wind blades started to revolve around Zhou Weiqing and her. The very air itself seemed to be sliced apart, making a sharp sound that caused was hair raising for Zhou Weiqing to hear.

"This is the stored skill of my first Elemental Jewel, Wind Blades. It is a relatively close combat skill, with an attack range of 30 meters. Generally speaking, the Weapon from Physical Jewels and Skills of Elemental Jewels are able to complement each other well, balancing offense and defense, short and long ranges. This also maximises the power of Heavenly Jewel Masters. Although ordinary Physical or Elemental Jewel Masters can also Consolidate Equipments or Store Skills, but the same skills in their hands compared to in the hands of a Heavenly Jewel Master, is completely different in terms of strength. For example, the Wind Blades I use, if a Wind Elemental Master uses the exact same skill, he can at most generate one Wind Blade."

"Physical Jewel Consolidated Equipments require the purchase of the Consolidating Equipment Scrolls from Consolidating Equipment Masters, and the price is considered very exorbitant. However, the Storing of Skills for the Elemental Jewel is even more troublesome, and it requires the Elemental Jewel to Store the

skills from Heavenly Beasts. Furthermore, one Elemental Jewel can only store one skill, but Heavenly Beasts have many different skills. Without even mentioning the difficulty in dealing with Heavenly Beasts, if you managed to Store a Skill from a Heavenly Beast, but it does not suit your own abilities, then you have wasted one Jewel's Skill, and that particular Elemental Jewel can be considered abandoned. Therefore, when attempting to Store Skills on their Elemental Jewels, all Jewel Masters are extremely careful, and they will generally spend an extremely high price to enter the Skill-Storing Palace, to at least guarantee they manage to get a useful skill."

By now, Zhou Weiqing finally understood how difficult it was to actually be a Heavenly Jewel Master. It was not just the difficulty in cultivation, but even the Consolidating Equipment Masters and Skill-Storing Palace, just listening to all that made him dizzy. However, Shangguan Bing'er's words at least made him understand one thing, that is, a Heavenly Jewel Master who has not Consolidated Equipment or Stored Skills, was a lot weaker.

Shangguan Bing'er looked at Zhou Weiqing's thoughtful and pensive-looking appearance, and felt somewhat gratified in her heart. Although in the heart she was still unable to accept the matters of that day, but all that she had now could be said to be given by the Heavenly Bow Empire, and as such she was absolutely loyal to the empire, and was certainly willing to see the Heavenly Bow Empire to gain another strong Heavenly Jewel Master. If not for this, how could she have let Zhou Weiqing off the hook that night. At this point in time, seeing his rare solemn and serious self, her heart also felt slightly better.

"Little Fatty Zhou, if I let you carry out Consolidate Equipment

on your Physical Jewel, what would you prepare to Consolidate?” Shangguan Bing’er asked calmly.

Zhou Weiqing replied without hesitation: “Of course it would be armor, definitely the complete set including helmet. I must arm myself to the teeth, the best would be an invulnerable unbreakable armor. Wahaha!”

Shangguan Bing’er turned green instantly, and once again landed a kick on Zhou Weiqing ass, “Can you be a little distinguished? Do you fear death so much?”

Zhou Weiqing covered his ass, with a face as if he were suffering from much injustice, saying: “Humans who do not fear death will be condemned by heaven and earth. Our lifespan is only a few dozens years, I have not lived long enough!”

Shangguan Bing’er said coldly: “You better limit your daydreaming as soon as possible. Your idea is quite impossible. The volume of the Consolidated Equipment for each Physical Jewel is limited, you can at most Consolidate the volume of a long sword or a longbow, to actually Consolidate a complete set of armor, is nearly impossible.”

Zhou Weiqing blinked and said, “You can’t say it so absolutely like that. If for my first Physical Jewel I Consolidate the helmet, the second one a [Heart-Protection Mirror](#), I can eventually complete a whole set one day!”

“You” Shangguan Bing’er was angered til she was shaking all

over, and looking at Zhou Weiqing's laughing and playful appearance, the resentment and anger over the past few days, coupled with the sense of injustice erupted in her heart, and beads of tears started falling from her tender face. She tightly bit her lower lip, forcing herself not to make any noise by crying out loud.

“Err.....” Seeing that Shangguan Bing'er had started crying, Zhou Wei felt a stab of pain in his heart, and cautiously went to her side, “Don't cry okay? If you cry some more you won't be beautiful anymore.”

护心镜 – ‘Heart-Protection Mirror’ is basically a small piece of protective metal covering the heart area, usually slotted at a breastplate of armour for additional protection since the heart is one of the vital points.

Chapter 10 – Physical Jewel Consolidated Equipment, Elemental Jewel Stored Skills (3)

“Who wants you to care, get lost.” Shangguan Bing’er said angrily, sobbing in between.

Zhou Weiqing scratched his head, “I’m wrong okay? I’ll listen to you, I’ll Consolidate any Equipment you ask me to. Even if you let me Consolidate into a pig, I will not oppose you!” At the same time as he said that, he lifted both hands to his ears, and imitated the appearance of pig ears flapping.

“PUFF. You originally already are a pig, if not why are you called Little Fatty Zhou.” Shangguan Bing’er was provoked into laughter by his pitiful acting again, and once again shot a kick his way. This time, Zhou Weiqing stood still and received it, although his face was contorted in exaggerated pain, but he did not move at all, giving an appearance that he was willing to accept being hit to accept punishment to be forgiven.

Shangguan Bing’er lifts her hand to wipe the tears from her face, giving him a quick glare. In her heart she was thinking, This damn Little Fatty Zhou is really my lifelong adversary? Why am I always unable to deal with him?

“You will do as I say and Consolidate whichever Equipment I tell you to, that’s what you said. Also, same for your Elemental Jewel Stored Skills.”

Zhou Weiqing quickly nodded his head repeatedly, he wasn’t

afraid of Shangguan Bing'er hitting or scolding him, but was terrified of her crying. As the saying goes, Beating is Affection, Scolding is Love, this rascal very naturally regarded those actions by Shangguan Bing'er as intimate actions. However when he saw her crying, Zhou Weiqing was at a loss. Even though on the surface he always had a laughing, happy face; in truth, he had a very guilty conscience from the events of that day.

Shangguan Bing'er saw that he was being honest, and her anger also diminished, "Hmph. Let's head back. You pack your things up, we will be leaving the army camp tomorrow early in the morning."

"Leaving the army camp? What are we going to do?" Zhou Weiqing asked curiously.

Shangguan Bing'er said: "You will know when the time comes. You must have the mental preparation, this time we will be leaving for at least two to three months. You will not need to participate in the recruit training."

Zhou Weiqing blinked, "Just you and me?"

Shangguan Bing'er stopped in her tracks, turning her head to glare angrily at him, "If you want to die you can continue speaking! If you dare to have any dirty thoughts, I will, I will..."

Zhou Weiqing immediately continued: "You will cry for me... I fear that the most..." As he spoke those words, he immediately activated his Alexandrite Cat's Eye's Wind Attribute and ran off at top speed.

Looking at his flustered escape, Shangguan Bing'er was provoked into laughter again, even unexpectedly playing along, shouting out to Zhou Weiqing: "Here comes the Silent Tracking Arrow!"

With a PUTONG sound, Zhou Weiqing fell down to the ground upon hearing that, directly falling right into the woods, looking so disconcerted and distressed that even Shangguan Bing'er had a scare. She did not know that earlier on this fellow had been attacked from behind by Difuya, and was especially sensitive now.

Only after Zhou Weiqing had fell hard on the ground then had he realised what had happened, and as Shangguan Bing'er's crafty yet beautiful laughter resounded out, a shrill, pitiful yell rang out in the Stars Forest, "Murdering of your husband..." Instantly, that delightful laughter stopped, followed by the increased volume of that pitiful yell of pain...

The next day, dawn.

Shangguan Bing'er had changed into a simple cotton shirt and skirt, shouldering her Purple Dawn Bow on her back as she left the army camp. Even the simple clothes were not able to cover her outstandingly moving beauty.

Just as she reached the exit of the army camp, she saw Zhou Weiqing, who was still dressed in his military uniform, lounging nearby the front exit. He was also shouldering a longbow on his back, as well as two quiver of arrows – the standard longbowman attire, down to even the archer's Wind Hat.

Seeing Shangguan Bing'er come out, Zhou Weiqing immediately stood at attention, giving a very proper salute, and shouted loudly, "Good Morning, Battalion Commander."

Shangguan Bing'er glared at him exasperatedly, "Didn't I tell you yesterday to wear ordinary clothes?"

Zhou Weiqing scratched his head sheepishly: "I do not have any ordinary clothes, I'm on left with this military uniform, I don't even have a spare set for changing." At the same time was saying, he shot a sly look at Shangguan Bing'er.

Shangguan Bing'er bit her lower lip, once again suppressing the urge to punch him, saying coldly: "Let's go then." As she said that, she had already started moving. Zhou Weiqing hurriedly Released his Alexandrite Cat's Eye Elemental Jewel, activating his Wind Attribute, and set off in pursuit. They two of them ran in tandem, and very soon they had left the vicinity of the military compound, heading in an eastward direction along the Stars Boulevard.

Shangguan Bing'er did not speak with Zhou Weiqing on the way, knowing that this was the best way to cope with this rascal. Although she held some hatred against Little Fatty Zhou, but after making the Three-Point Covenant with him, she no longer wanted to kill him. She told herself unceasing that all of this was for the sake of the Empire.

Indeed, Shangguan Bing'er's method was extremely effective, Zhou Weiqing followed beside Shangguan Bing'er, trying

unceasingly to tease and tempt her into speaking, but no matter what he said, Shangguan Bing'er just ignored him, causing him to be so anxious that he was touching his ears and scratching his cheeks. If he said anything sensitive or untactful, then Shangguan Bing'er would just pick up her speed, since she had the additional boost of her agility Physical Jewels, she could instantaneously distance herself from him, causing Zhou Weiqing to chase her till he was panting heavily.

From dawn to noon, more than four hours, Shangguan Bing'er had barely said a sentence to Zhou Weiqing, and also had not stopped to rest. At this time, the sun was high above in the sky, and Zhou Weiqing was perspiring heavily. Of course, running for 4 hours was nothing big for him, but the problem was following Shangguan Bing'er's speed. At this time, the Heavenly Energy in his body was at the limit, when it was used up, his speed would drop, and the four energy whirlpools at the four Death Acupuncture Points would absorb energy from the environment, and after some recharging, he could make use of the Wind Attribute to accelerate once more; he endlessly duplicated this process of depletion of Heavenly Energy and then re-accelerating.

By now, Shangguan Bing'er was also very curious, all along she had reduced her speed to allow Zhou Weiqing to follow, after all he only had the Wind Elemental Attribute boost, and could not compare with her double boost of both Physical and Wind Elemental Jewels. However, she soon discovered that this fellow who had just awakened Heavenly Jewels, and whose Heavenly Energy should only be at the 4th Stage, seemed to have a resilience and stamina to his Heavenly Energy that way surpassed her judgement. This was especially so after the 2nd hour, when he started the strange movement of slowing and accelerating, causing her to be even more curious. The unique strength that the

Immortal Deity Technique possessed in absorbing Heavenly Energy from the environment so easily was not something that other Heavenly Energy Cultivation Techniques possessed.

“Let’s rest a while.” Shangguan Bing’er came to a halt. Even at the sheer speed that the both of them were moving, after walking a whole morning they were still in the Stars Forest. If they wanted to exit this large forest, it would still take them the evening to do so even when maintaining that same speed.

Zhou Weiqing plopped his ass down and leaned on one of the Stars Trees at the side of the road, panting for breath in deep gulps, sweat soaking his entire body. However, he also discovered the marvelous ability of his Heavenly Energy – when his Heavenly Energy was depleted, even when he did not focus his attentions in stimulating them, the four opened Death Acupuncture Point’s energy whirlpools would still spin at full strength to automatically absorb Heavenly Energy from the environment to recharge his body.

Chapter 10 – Physical Jewel Consolidated Equipment, Elemental Jewel Stored Skills (4)

Shangguan Bing'er sat at a big tree about ten metres away from Zhou, taking off her backpack, and retrieving her dry rations and water to eat.

Zhou Weiqing continued panting a while more, and he gradually caught his breath and his breathing grew uniform, he did not have any dry rations with him, and seeing Shangguan Bing'er eating and drinking, he couldn't help but swallow his saliva, as he edged closer to her.

“Battalion Commander, I also want some.”

Shangguan Bing'er looked at that fellow's greedy eyes, gave a humph and continued ignoring him.

Zhou Weiqing said: “A General does not have hungry soldiers, if I don't have anything to eat, then I will not continue walking.” As he said that, he one sat down beside Shangguan Bing'er, although he did not bump into her, but just sitting together at the big tree, he could smell the subtle fragrance that she had, although his belly was still empty, but he still felt rather satisfied.

Shangguan Bing'er moved her body a little to keep a distance from him, continuing to eat slowly. She did not believe that Zhou Weiqing would not come and beg her when he got hungry. This rascal was like a crafty hooligan, if she did not deal with him properly, how would he listen to her later? She did not believe that

Little Fatty Zhou would have any problems missing a meal or two.

Just as Shangguan Bing'er secretly thought that she had succeeded in her little scheme, Zhou Weiqing who was sitting beside her suddenly burst into motion, the next instant, his body was leapt up like a leopard, bounding deep into the woods.

“What are you doing?” Shangguan Bing'er was startled, standing up along with him.

“I'm going to look for something to eat.” Zhou Weiqing throws down those words, before he disappeared into the forest.

Shangguan Bing'er was stunned momentarily, before keeping her dry rations to pursue Zhou Weiqing into the forest. The reason she followed him was because she was afraid that this rascal would not keep his promise and run away instead. Furthermore, she was also rather curious how Zhou Weiqing would go about looking for something to eat.

After these few days of contact with him, the more she grew to believe that Little Fatty Zhou was of humble birth. Although there weren't many good people amongst the nobles, but it was unlikely for there to be such a hateful little rogue like him right?

Shangguan Bing'er activated both her Physical and Elemental Jewels, going forth at a higher speed than Zhou Weiqing. Although she was not as familiar with the Stars Forest as Zhou Weiqing, but relying on her superior hearing and speed, she was still able to keep up with him easily.

Looking at Zhou Weiqing twisting and turning uncannily through the forest, extremely agile; what was the most unusual was that the green light only shone from him occasionally, but that alone gave Shangguan Bing'er quite a shock in her heart. After all, she was a pure agility Heavenly Jewel Master, and was definitely well-researched regarding movement styles. From Zhou Weiqing's movements, she clearly found that he was only using his Wind Attribute Heavenly Energy only when he need it most – on those occasions when he needed to jump up high, or just when he needed a quick speed boost, mostly used to surmount any difficult obstructions in his way. In doing so, not only did he manage to maintain high speeds, he could also conserve as much Heavenly Energy as possible. Shangguan Bing'er could also do this, but most importantly, how long had it been since Zhou Weiqing only awakened his Heavenly Energy? It was barely a few days, and he could already display such amazing control over his Wind Attribute Heavenly Energy! Shangguan Bing'er found that she was increasingly unable to see through this fellow anymore.

After Zhou Weiqing had advanced approximately several hundred meters through the woods, he suddenly jumped upwards with a huge leap, grabbing a branch to propel himself forward, and in the next instant, he had firmly landed on top of a thick branch, his right foot hooked steadily into the branch, while his left foot trod steadily on the branch, and in completing those movements, he slung off the longbow from his back and in a swift motion, nocked an arrow and drew the bow to a full crescent. The arrowtip moved in a minute motion as he constantly adjusted his aim.

What experienced and adept archery. Shangguan Bing'er thought, rather startled in her heart. As a formidable Heavenly Jewel Master Archer herself, she was extremely familiar in the

ways of archery, and she could easily distinguish clearly that Zhou Weiqing had not made use of his Heavenly Jewels during that previous movements. Such experience and skill in nocking the arrow and drawing his bow along with his familiarity with the environment, just those points alone meant he was already an outstanding archer. Even if he were not a Heavenly Jewel Master, just based on those skills, he would be able to make his mark in Archery Battalion.

At the same time, Zhou Weiqing's eyes flashed with a bright light, and with a whizz, he released the arrow which flew out light a bolt of lightning, flying towards the depths of the jungle.

However, at the same moment, Shangguan Bing'er's both hands blurred in movement, a green light shot out from her Purple Dawn Bow, though it was shot out later, but it quickly reached Zhou Weiqing arrow instantaneously and struck it, causing it to lose its course, and with two light thudding sounds, both arrows embedded into a large tree in the distance.

Zhou Weiqing almost subconsciously swivelled his body around the tree, his whole body slid down the Stars Tree, and in doing so making sure his body being completely covered by tree trunk.

"You still fear death so much." Shangguan Bing'er said exasperatedly.

On hearing it was Shangguan Bing'er, Zhou Weiqing poked his head back up and said with a grin: "Fearing death is basic human nature, what if it had been an enemy? My dear beautiful Battalion Commander, you should praise me instead for my resourcefulness

right! Having such a subordinate like me, don't you feel proud?"

Shangguan Bing'er said with a humph, "That little rabbit is so cute, yet you wanted to kill it. With me around, you shall not take an innocent life."

Zhou Wei said with a pitiful face: "Beautiful Battalion Commander, how can I live like that! You don't give me any dry rations to eat, and when I hunt for food to eat, you also prevent me from doing so, where's the justice in that!"

Shangguan Bing'er did not know why, but looking at Zhou Weiqing's distressed appearance, her heart felt a pleasant satisfaction, and her beautiful face revealed a self-satisfied smile as she said, "Didn't you say you have the ability to look for food? Feel free to do so, but under the premise of not taking lives."

Zhou Weiqing came back around from behind the tree, re-shouldering his longbow onto his back and gave a long sigh with a suffering face: "Looks like I will not have any meat to eat today. Beautiful Battalion Commander, I'm still in the stage of growing, to suffer from malnutrition, so pitiful!"

"Hmph! You're as strong as a bull, what malnutrition are you speaking of?" Shangguan Bing'er said exasperatedly. However, as soon as she finished saying those words, her face flushed red, after all, she had experienced first hand that Little Fatty Zhou's vigor and strength.

However, Shangguan Bing'er's words were also true, after Zhou

Weiying had Awakened his Heavenly Jewels, not only had his height grown, his entire person also seemed to be filled with vigor and energy, his muscles clearly defined under his military uniform, as if he had an inexhaustible reserve of strength. If his appearance were to be judged as a soldier, he definitely had the stature of an elite soldier, definitely more than comparable to any stout adults. Do not forget that he was still less than 14 years old.

Unfortunately for Zhou Weiying, he had not seen her embarrassed blush, or he might have had a greater sense of self satisfaction. As he spoke to Shangguan Bing'er, he was also lowering his head head to the ground, as if looking for something. Both his hands were moving around the shrubbery with seeming experience, and after a short while time, his bosom was filled with several items like bamboo shoots, and he had also picked up several large Stars Trees leaves, before he finally straightened his back.

“Beautiful Battalion Commander, is it okay I eat these?” Zhou Weiying said as he gave a solemn expression.

Chapter 11 – Fei Li Empire Flying Hill City (1)

Shangguan Bing'er's beautiful eyes were immediately filled with wariness, her experience with this rascal telling her that whenever he acted solemn and proper, he definitely had something up his sleeve. "Eat all you want, if you eat to death then you get what you deserve!"

Unexpectedly, Zhou Weiqing did not argue. Instead, he found a relatively spacious spot; plucking the wild grass on the ground to clear a stretch of less than two square meters, before placing the leaves and bamboo shoots he had gathered onto the ground. He then returned to the forest, and after some time, he managed to find some dry deadwood and thin vines.

Shangguan Bing'er noticed that Zhou Weiqing's hands were very nimble, with his ten slender fingers, and in a few quick motions, the vines and deadwood branches had been formed into a simple rack, braced steadily into the ground. The huge thick leaf in his hands seemed to flutter up and down. She had not even managed to get a clear look at his actions before the leaf had been folded together into the shape of a small pot, which he then surrounded and tied up with four thin vines, before hanging it on the rack he had put up.

From start to completion, Zhou Weiqing had only used several minutes, his movements were adept, and it was obviously not the first time he had done this. After that, he started breaking apart the bamboo shoots above the small pot, and with a clear sound of falling liquid, the bamboo shoots were unexpectedly hollow in the centre, holding a clear liquid within. After breaking apart several of the shoots, the leaf-pot was filled with that liquid, and most

mysteriously, not a single drop had leaked out.

Zhou Weiqing piled the surplus deadwoods leaf-pot, then rummaged into the small backpack he was carrying and retrieved flint from within. He sparked up a flame, which gradually grew larger, the burning deadwood making a crackling sound, and it was already heating up the leaf-pot.

Shangguan Bing'er subconsciously gathered closer to Zhou Weiqing as he was doing all of that, and couldn't help asking: "Won't the leafs be burnt and destroyed?"

In such a rare occasion that her voice was not ice cold, Zhou Weiqing rejoiced secretly in his heart as he heard it. "Of course not, because it contains water inside." His hands did not stop moving while he was speaking, as he retrieved a sharp small knife from within his bag, his left hand picking up one of the bamboo shoots that he had broken apart earlier, slicing off its outer layer, before throwing it into the pot layer by layer. After repeating this for a while, several bamboo shoot slices as thick as a baby's arm had been sliced into the pot, and at the same time, the water in leaf-pot had also started to boil; indeed a perfect timing.

Shangguan Bing'er had by now subconsciously squatted beside Zhou Weiqing, watching as he completed all of that, Her gaze had also gentled considerably. A man who could cook would generally find it easier to give women warm feelings. Furthermore, Shangguan Bing'er preferred 'light' food, and this bamboo shoot soup definitely held more attraction to her than a meal of meat.

Zhou Weiqing clapped his hands before keeping his knife, and

said with a grin: “This bamboo is the unique local specialty in our Stars Forest, and it can only be found here; very few people actually know about it as it only grows in the shelter of the older Stars Trees, and it will absorb morning dew in its hollow middle, which is extremely sweet and tasty. I call it the Reveal Bamboo Shoots, and it is extremely delicious, especially when cooked in the dew from its own middle, it maintains its original taste best. It can be eaten after being boiled for a while to eat, and only adding a bit of salt is needed.”

After all, he had once been thrown into the wild by his Admiral father for survival training, no matter jungle, desert or even mountain ranges, he had experienced survival training in all those areas. From the age of ten, he – who was known as a trash by others – had been living a life of suffering, thus looking for food in his most familiar Stars Forest was just too easy.

The bamboo shoots dew soup in the leaf-pot gurgled with air bubbles, and a light fragrance lingered in the air, the smell whetting the appetite of anyone who smelled it.

Zhou Weiqing stole a glance towards Shangguan Bing'er, just happening to catch the 15-year-old girl taking a gulp as she tried to swallow her saliva subtly. At first, he wanted to tease her a little, but then his heart was inexplicably filled with a warm feeling. Picking up two ladles that he had carved out earlier from the bamboo shoots covering, he gave one to Shangguan Bing'er, then took out some salt, scattering it into the bamboo shoots dew soup.

The bamboo shoots were very fresh and tender, and could be eaten after boiling for a little while in the dew. Zhou Weiqing gave

Shangguan Bing'er an inviting hand signal, then impatiently scooped up a ladle of bamboo shoot dew soup, blowing a few breaths to cool it then bringing it straight into his mouth. He was after all both hungry and thirsty now.

Shangguan Bing'er lifted the ladle, and was just about to start eating, but her hand stopped suddenly in mid air, and she bit her lower lip with a complex look in her eyes as she glanced at Zhou Weiqing. Just a moment ago, she had refused to give him her dry rations to eat, how could she actually eat the food that he had prepared now, she had a very entangled feeling in her heart.

“Give me a piece of dry rations. This soup isn't sufficient to allay hunger! I'll trade the soup with you okay?” Zhou Weiqing looked at her and reached out with a piteous expression.

Shangguan Bing'er gawked at him a while, before taking off her backpack and taking out a piece of dry rations to give Zhou Weiqing. She suddenly felt that this rascal was not as bad as she thought.

The bamboo shoot dew soup was a pale-green colour, the pieces of bamboo shoots floating within like pieces of jade. The sweet fragrance was light, but did not disperse; even though they did not have any other condiments to add, the fresh and tender bamboo shoots were already extremely delicious, made even more so with the dew and leafs.

As soon as Shangguan Bing'er took her first mouthful of the bamboo shoots dew soup, she fell deep in love with it, the sweet soft delicate fragrance flowing from the tip of her tongue to the

very ends, entering her stomach, and a warm feeling seeped through her whole body; the sweet aftertaste remaining in her mouth and nose, and such an amazing feeling was definitely much better than eating mere dry rations.

She even felt a tinge of regret for not allowing Zhou Weiqing hunt and kill the rabbit; perhaps, this fellow could similarly make an amazing delicacy.

Zhou Weiqing did not tease or provoke Shangguan Bing'er, instead sitting beside the leaf-pot, eating the dry rations together with the bamboo shoot dew soup is eating, his eyes somewhat dazed.

Shangguan Bing'er's appearance while eating was just too beautiful, especially the expression she revealed on her face when she took her first mouthful of the bamboo shoot dew soup; which made Zhou Weiqing's heart clutch in a sudden movement. In his eyes, Shangguan Bing'er's beautiful face was even tastier than the bamboo shoot dew soup.

Just like Shangguan Bing'er falling in love with the bamboo shoot dew soup he made, at that moment, he also deeply fell in love with her satisfied appearance. He gripped his fist, decides inside that he would do anything to pursue her, and make her his wife.

As he daydreamt of marrying Shangguan Bing'er, being able to hug her fragrant tender moving body to sleep every day, the smile on Zhou Weiqing's face immediately became lascivious. Luckily, the young beautiful woman in front of him had her attention

focused on the bamboo shoot dew soup, and did not notice that rascal's dirty expression.

Chapter 11 – Fei Li Empire Flying Hill City (2)

After a short while, the entire pot of bamboo shoot dew soup had been polished off by the two of them, in fact Zhou Weiqing had only eaten only one-third of it, and the majority was eaten by Shangguan Bing'er. After finishing the pot, she even licked her lips and sticking out her lovable pink little tongue, as if not fully satisfied yet. She usually ate at the mess in the army camp, which never had such delicious food.

She looked at Zhou Weiqing somewhat abashedly, and happened to see him still chewing away at the dry rations. Instantly, this kind girl's heart was filled with regret and shame; she was thinking about how she had refused to give him her dry rations earlier, and instead finally eating his good food, and her beautiful face turned turned hot and flushed, as she hung her head in silence.

Zhou Weiqing asked in softly: "Is it delicious?"

"En." Shangguan Bing'er nodded slightly.

Zhou Weiqing smiled, and continued saying with an alluring voice: "Then in the future shall I always keep preparing it for you?"

Shangguan Bing'er nodded once more.

Zhou Weiqing's voice sounded out again, with a hint of bashfulness, "Then, since I'm such a handsome fellow who also

excels in the kitchen, how about giving me the opportunity to pursue you?”

Because of the previous lines, Shangguan Bing'er almost nodded subconsciously, “En.... Ah! No!”

Only then did Shangguan Bing'er realise she had been tricked and leapt up in response, but just as she was about to rebuking Zhou Weiqing angrily, she saw that this fellow had both his hands held up to his head, curled up on the ground, saying with a pitiable expression, “Even if it's not okay, you shouldn't hit me!”

Walking over to give him a light kick on his buttocks with her foot, Shangguan Bing'er said exasperatedly: “Who wants to hit you? Time to go.”

They set off once again, and although Shangguan Bing'er still ignored Little Fatty Zhou, but after having the bamboo shoot dew soup, she wasn't able to put up her cold expression any longer.

“Battalion commander, where are we going to? At least let me have some idea.” Zhou Weiqing asked curiously.

Shangguan Bing'er shot him a glance and said: “ We are going to the Fei Li Empire's Flying Hill City.”

Zhou Weiqing paused in surprise, he had not thought that Shangguan Bing'er would be bringing him to a place so far away, no wonder she said previously that they wouldn't return to the

camp for months.

Fei Li Empire and Heavenly Bow Empire shared a border, and was to the Northeast of Heavenly Bow Empire. Fei Li Empire was one of the larger empires in the Boundless Continent, and was almost over a hundred times larger than Heavenly Bow Empire, which was a very small country.. Of the various empires in the Western Region of the Boundless Empire, only Bai Da Empire, which was separated from Heavenly Bow Empire by the Kalise Empire, was as strong as the Fei Li Empire.

As for the Flying Hill City which Shangguan Bing'er spoke of, Zhou Weiqing also knew of it. The Flying Hill City was strategically one of the most important cities of the southern border of Fei Li Empire, and in the entire Fei Li Empire, it was also in the top 5 largest cities, and was about ten times larger than Heavenly Bow City, and was extremely prosperous.

Heavenly Bow Empire and Fei Li Empire were on rather good terms, just like the Kalise Empire were closer to the Bai Da Empire. Besides Heavenly Bow and Kalise, there were several other smaller countries close to Bai Da and Fei Li Empires, which separated the two large countries. If not for that, perhaps both of these large empires who had a very disharmonious relation might have already exploded into major war.

“We’re going to Flying Hill City? That is so far! Although our walking speed is very fast, but at the rate we are going, it will take us at least ten days to reach! Isn’t it better for us to take the horse carts from the relay stations? We can reach in around five days.” Although their speed was fast, but they were still unable to

compare with galloping horses, as there were special transportation horse carts and relay stations from Heavenly Bow City to Flying Hill City, which would be a lot faster than walking there.

Shangguan Bing'er shot him a stern look, saying: "Taking the horse carts are not free. The cost for one person is two gold coins already. By walking, we at most need to buy some dry rations, both of us added together will spend less than a gold coin."

Zhou Weiqing stared at her dumbfoundedly, "Battalion Commander, I never thought that you were a little miser. After all, you are one of the pillars of the state, the top genius of the younger generation, our only Heavenly Jewel Master, and also a Viscount of the Empire, your monthly salary should be about 80 to 100 gold coins right, why do you care about a mere 4 gold coins?"

Shangguan Bing'er said: "[The best metal alloy has to be used on the knife edge](#). As Heavenly Jewel Masters, we require a lot of money to cultivate, the Empire has given us so much to train us up, shouldn't we be more economical on things that aren't necessary? Furthermore, you just became a Heavenly Jewel Master, by walking the distance, you can better adapt to using your Heavenly Jewels."

Zhou Weiqing gave a big thumbs up, and shook it at Shangguan Bing'er. She asked questioningly: "What are you doing?"

Zhou Weiqing said with a smile: "Heh, marrying you will really be something happy."

Shangguan Bing'er's face turned cold once more, "You are asking for a beating again?"

Zhou Weiqing shifted the topic instantaneously, "Battalion Commander, I made a mistake. Anyway, what are we going to Flying Hill City for?"

Shangguan Bing'er couldn't help but want to punch him again, this rascal was surely quick to admit his mistakes, but never did change after that.

"We are going to try our luck. I also just got my second Heavenly Jewel, and your first one also does not have Consolidate Equipment or Stored Skills. Our Heavenly Bow Empire does not have any Consolidating Equipment Masters or Skill-Storing Palace, only the larger Empires' Big Cities have them. Flying Hill City is the closest one to us."

Listening to her words, Zhou Weiqing's spirit was greatly inspired, "Battalion Commander, what Skill should I Store? You wouldn't let me Consolidate a set of armour, what do you plan on letting me Consolidate then?"

Shangguan Bing'er said exasperatedly: "It's not as easy as you think. Firstly, whether or not we can meet an appropriate Consolidated Equipment Scroll or a Heavenly Beast to Store Skills, even if we do find a good one, we may not have sufficient funds to get it. As such, I said earlier that we can only try our luck. To us Heavenly Jewel Masters, our Physical Jewel Consolidating

Equipment and Elemental Jewels Storing Skills are really too important, only when we have completed these two huge steps can we completely wield our full strengths. However, you must remember our three-point covenant, without my permission, you must not reveal that you are a Heavenly Jewel Master, most particularly you must never let anyone see your Alexandrite Cat's Eye Elemental Jewel. Do you hear me?"

"Yes, I'll definitely listen to you!" Zhou Weiqing said immediately. At this time, his mood was really excited, putting aside the success of his own first Consolidated Equipment and Stored Skills, just experiencing all of this was extremely good. As he entered the Heavenly Jewel Master world step by step, the feeling was very wonderful, so much so that he didn't even feel as tired anymore while moving along.

Shangguan Bing'er looked at Zhou Weiqing whose Alexandrite Cat's Eye on his left hand was a cyan colour in the day as he made use of his Wind Attribute Heavenly Energy. She sighed lightly and said: "Your talent is extremely good, but, with that also comes great trouble. Your Elemental Jewel having five strong attributes, also means that every one of your Elemental Jewel needs to store five skills, the sheer price of that is something that even the empire cannot support. Furthermore, your Attribute also include the Darkness and Spatial attributes which are the Greater Attributes, as well as that Evil Attribute; all those may require Heavenly Beasts which are more difficult to find in order for you to Store Skills. Your future cultivation route will be a hundred times more difficult than any ordinary Heavenly Jewel Master."

"The reason that I do not want you to reveal your Alexandrite Cat's Eye to anyone else is because I'm afraid that when other

Heavenly Jewel Masters see your talent, they will want to kill you off early. After all, the more talented the Heavenly Jewel Master, the higher the possibility for them to die at a young age. Unless

Direct translation of 最好的合金都是用在刀刃上 – it means to allocate resources properly

Chapter 11 – Fei Li Empire Flying Hill City (3)

As Shangguan Bing'er spoke up till here, she suddenly stopped and looked at Zhou Weiqing with a complicated look on her face. but what she saw was Zhou Weiqing with an intoxicated look on his face, causing her to say in irritation: "I am discussing important and serious things with you, what are you doing?"

Zhou Weiqing blinked, "Battalion Commander, you are so good to me, so caring towards me, I am really so moved! I have decided that no matter how difficult it is, I will train hard and become a formidable Heavenly Jewel Master, and I will then be able to protect you."

Shangguan Bing'er's heart trembled a little, then she shook her head, saying: "I do not care about you, I am doing this for the empire. I don't need your protection."

Zhou Weiqing said firmly: "Of course I must protect you, how can a husband not protect his wife?"

"You" Shangguan Bing'er was speechless with anger, and a foot flew out to knock that rascal back a few meters, and she angrily exclaimed: "No matter what serious matters we discuss, you can always bring it to some improper talk. You sure are a talented person!"

Zhou Weiqing rolled around on the ground before standing up, grinning away as he said: "A husband protecting his wife is a proper and serious matter right? Ahh! Don't take action, let's talk

this through! Oh Right, you were saying a moment ago, unless what?”

Seeing that the Shangguan Bing'er was on the verge of hitting him again, he quickly hid behind a large tree at the roadside, poking his head out to ask.

Shangguan Bing'er paused a while, hesitation showing in her eyes, and she stopped moving and said to him: “Little Fatty Zhou, come out here.”

Looking at Shangguan Bing'er's face which had become extremely serious, Zhou Weiqing was surprised momentarily, then walked out from behind the tree. Lifting his hand to shake it front of Shangguan Bing'er's face, he asked, “Battalion Commander, are you alright?”

Shangguan Bing'er said in a very serious tone: “Little Fatty Zhou, although you are sly, cunning and shameless, and your speech is very irritating, but no matter what you must remember that we come from the Heavenly Bow Empire. Other matters I can still tolerate you, but, if you ever violate the promise and betray the empire, I will personally kill you. No matter how formidable you become, I will still never let you off.”

“Yes.” Zhou Weiqing blinked and mused in his heart, Of course, do I need you to say this? The Heavenly Bow Empire's Emperor is my godfather, and my father is Admiral of the Empire. The notion flew across in his mind, before his train of thought instantaneously fell onto the improper word usage Shangguan Bing'er said. ‘Other matters she can tolerate me doing’, those words made this rascal

immediately start daydreaming. Luckily, he also knew the the situation was serious now, and did not dare reveal anything on his face.

Seeing that he had replied relatively honestly, Shangguan Bing'er's face relaxed a little and she said: "Little Fatty Zhou, just now I said unless, was saying that unless you joined the Skill-Storing Palace."

"Join the Skill-Storing Palace?" Zhou Weiqing asked curiously.

Shangguan Bing'er nodded, said: "It is extremely difficult for ordinary Jewel Masters to join the Skill-Storing Palace, the very basis for joining the Skill-Storing Palace is to be a Heavenly Jewel Master, and they also have to go through a thorough inspection. Each Great Empire has its own Skill-Storing Palace, belonging to the Empire's Imperial family. The Heavenly Jewel Masters who join their Empire's Skill-Storing Palace will have the full support of their empire, no matter Physical Jewel Consolidating Equipment or Elemental Jewel Skill Storing, the expense will be fully paid by their empire. However, the Heavenly Jewel Master must take an oath giving full loyalty to their empire. Our own empire does not have the ability to create a Skill-Storing Palace, but the Fei Li Empire already has one, if they will try to recruit you in future, will you choose to join?"

As she asked in her last few words, Shangguan Bing'er was very anxious in her heart, but also concealing some killing intent. She only had a surface understanding of Zhou Weiqing, and did not fully know what his natural disposition was. She could only help but think, if this Little Fatty Zhou will betray his own Empire for

his own benefit, then she would never be able to accommodate him, even if she did not kill him, she must destroy his Heavenly Jewels.

Zhou Weiqing said without any hesitation: “Of course I will join! Why shouldn’t I join.”

“You” a strong killing intent erupted instantly from Shangguan Bing’er, “You are shameless!”

Zhou Weiqing said in surprise: “Was I shameless? I’ll join their Skill-Storing Palace first, then wait for my Heavenly Jewels to cultivate to the max before I return to our empire, doesn’t that work? As long as my strength is strong enough that nobody can stop me, who cares which Empire’s Skill-Storing Palace I join.”

“PUFF.” Shangguan Bing’er had no choice to laugh out despite being mad at that rascal, this Little Fatty Zhou really had a really uncommon outlook on everything, but, the killing intent in her heart also instantaneously vanished. “You are dreaming, did you think that they do not have any limitations in place? To join the Skill-Storing Palace, you have to be mind shackled, if you betray the Skill-Storing Palace or the Empire’s Imperial family, you will die.”

When Zhou Weiqing heard that, his face immediately turned sad: “So petty! However, what are mind shackles?”

In Shangguan Bing’er’s hear, she was asking herself, If previously Zhou Weiqing had actually said he was willing to join Fei Li

Empire's Skill-Storing Palace, could she really kill him off? She really could not answer herself, but despite his many faults, he was also her first man. Furthermore, although he was at times irritating, but these few days that she had spent with him, the number of times that she had been both angry or laughing, was a lot higher as compared to entire of the previous year.

“Let's talk as we walk on. Mind shackles is a high level skill for Darkness Alignment Heavenly Jewel Masters, under the cooperation of the other party, they are able to place a seal in their minds on a vow that the party has pledged, once the vow is violated, the mind shackles will erupt, and the person who broke the pledge will perish. It is a very overbearing skill.”

They continue on their travels until dusk before they finally exited the Stars Forest. Before they left the forest, Zhou Weiqing made another pot of bamboo shoot dew soup for Shangguan Bing'er to drink, After all, they would not be able to drink it once they leave the Stars Forest. When Shangguan Bing'er was eating the delicious soup he made, she was a lot better to him, but he was still not allowed to hunt.

12 days later.

“Little Fatty Zhou, go look for something for us to eat.” Shangguan Bing'er cleaned up a small area of brush and sat down.

Zhou Weiqing sighed, “My sad life! It's me again.”

Shangguan Bing'er shot a look at him, saying, “You are my

personal aide, serving your commanding officer, isn't that your job?"

Zhou Weiqing said helplessly: "Yes, I'm going now."

After the past 12 days of travel, Shangguan Bing'er was still as bright and beautiful as always, but Zhou Weiqing was showing the signs of travel fatigue with an ashen face. If when they had just left Heavenly Bow City he had thought that Shangguan Bing'er was a little stingy, he now believed firmly that this beautiful woman Battalion Commander would even be extending her hand out for money even when in her coffin.

For 12 whole days, they had passed by several cities but detoured around them and always camped outdoors. They had not entered any city, let alone checking into a hotel. With the sky as their blanket, the earth as their bed, they did not spend a single cent throughout the journey. Even Shangguan Bing'er's dry rations, Zhou Weiqing estimated that they were from the military mess.

What made Zhou Weiqing even more gloomy was that Shangguan Bing'er was actually extremely satisfied. She had always travelled like this all the time, and this time she actually had an additional accompanying chef. Although Little Fatty Zhou was always rather perverted, but he had an impressive ability to make use of local materials to create delicious food. Furthermore, Shangguan Bing'er had implemented her rule to speak with him as little as possible no matter what he said, which made him unable to display his tricks.

Chapter 11 – Fei Li Empire Flying Hill City (4)

After a while, Zhou Weiqing managed to scrounge up some sweet potatoes, and roasted them to eat with Shangguan Bing'er; in his hands even the simple roasted sweet potato also turned into a delicacy. After removing the slightly burnt skin, he scattered a bit of salt on the roasted sweet potato, and the flavor was unexpectedly extremely good.

What made Zhou Weiqing the saddest was that Shangguan Bing'er still did not let him hunt, throughout the whole 12 days of travelling he had been a vegetarian, he almost felt he was quickly becoming a sweet potato himself.

“Battalion Commander, didn't you say earlier that we will be reaching Flying Hill City in a few dozen miles? Why don't we have a good meal in the city?” Zhou Weiqing said discontentedly as he gnawed on his sweet potato.

Shangguan Bing'er shot a look at him, “Eating a meal in the city is free? One less meal there will save us one meal's cost.”

Zhou Weiqing rolled his eyes and said, “Forget I said anything. I must make a lot of money in the future, otherwise I'll be starved to death by you.”

“Humph.” Shangguan Bing'er did not continue speaking, completely not allowing that rascal the opportunity to continue.

These past few days had actually been a good training for Zhou

Weiqing, the unceasing use of his Wind Attribute Heavenly Energy allowed him to be a lot more familiar with the usage of Heavenly Energy, although he was still unable to wield it like Shangguan Bing'er who could use it like her own arm, but at least he no longer needed to take the time to gather it up before usage.

The Immortal Deity Technique was slowly starting to display its superiority, Zhou Weiqing's Heavenly Energy upper limits had increased very obviously; if we likened the maximum volume he had at the start to the size of a pigeon egg, it currently was quickly reaching the size of a chicken's egg. Hurrying along without stopping every day also caused the whirlpools at the 4 Death Acupuncture Points which he had broken through to continuously draw energy at full speed constantly, and that had a great effect on cultivating his total Heavenly Energy. However, it was still quite a distance from breaking through the next stage of the Immortal Deity Technique, to breakthrough the Yongquan Acupuncture Point.

Yongquan Acupuncture Point, being the last of the Death Acupuncture Points in the first level of the Immortal Deity Technique, it was definitely a lot more difficult to breakthrough, and the meridian route for it was also a lot more complex. Zhou Weiqing had tried one time, but the Heavenly Energy he had currently was unable to even reach the Yongquan Acupuncture Point, and it was clear that he needed to continue cultivating a lot more before he could.

After an hour, a huge city entered Zhou Weiqing and Shangguan Bing'er's eyes.

The broad city walls that did not seem to have a boundary in their sight, and was about 40 meters tall. Any human standing before the city seemed to be as tiny as an ant in comparison. On top of the city there stood the Fei Li Empire's national symbol, a pair of Crossed Saintly Sword which was black with gold layers, on a flag which was fluttering in the breeze, showing the formidable empire's elegant demeanor.

Three drawbridges gave access to the 50 metre wide moat surrounding the Flying Hill City, connecting to the three giant arched city gates, with the name of the city carved in bold strong characters above the center city gate. The bustle of people entering and leaving the city was endless, and even though they had not entered the city yet, they could already sense the bustling and prosperous scene within.

It was clear that it was not Shangguan Bing'er's first time here, as she brought Zhou Weiqing through the central hanging bridge, walking with familiar ease into the depths of the city.

Within Flying Hill City was a picture of busy, heavy traffic, and Zhou Weiqing looked around unceasingly, feeling as though he could not take in all the sights. This was truly the sign of a great nation! Although the Heavenly Bow City was also quite prosperous, but compared with the Flying Hill City, it really fell short.

“Battalion Commander, where are we headed to?” Zhou Weiqing lowered his head to have a look at his own rather dirty Heavenly Bow Empire Attire, and said with a rather painstaking look on his face.

Shangguan Bing'er said: "We'll go to the Skill-Storing Palace first."

Zhou Weiqing brightened, "Elemental Jewel Skill Storing?"

Shangguan Bing'er shook her head, but did not explain further, instead hastening her steps towards the depths of the city. Although she was no longer rushing as they did in the wilderness, but she still moved rather rapidly, causing Zhou Weiqing to be unable to look around at the shops that lined the path, and he could only follow closely beside her.

The Flying Hill City was really too huge, and the both of them walked for almost an hour before Shangguan Bing'er finally slowed down, and as Zhou Weiqing followed her gaze to look ahead, he saw that not far off to the front there was a large building that seemed like a grand palace. Although he was not familiar with the Flying Hill City, he could tell that this should be the central business district of the City. The Palace in front was several tens of meters high, with 12 huge white columns supporting the building. Right in the center position, a huge golden Cross Saint Sword symbol stood out strikingly. Just with a quick look with the naked eye, it was rather difficult to judge exactly how big the palace was.

Behind the 12 great columns stood a large gate, and stationed in on both sides of the gate were eight soldiers who were all dressed in shining silver armor, their weapons were heavy swords, which were one and a half meter long and almost a foot thick! The heavy swords were rested on the ground, with their both hands

grasping the sword hilt, as their ice-cold gazes kept a constant look out on every passing pedestrian. The 50 meters surrounding radius of the palace was void of any average pedestrian, as none dared approach it, clearly showing its status in the city.

After Shangguan Bing'er had paused for a while, she brought Zhou Weiqing and headed towards the palace building; obviously this was the Skill Storing Palace that she had mentioned earlier.

“Halt.” The two outermost silver armored soldiers simultaneously shouted in a low tone, the two heavy swords lifted off the ground and blocking Shangguan Bing'er and Zhou Weiqing paths. From the cold looks that were focused on them, Zhou Weiqing could feel a clear killing intent.

These soldiers were clearly elite infantry soldiers who had been forged in the fires of the battlefield, and their Heavenly Bow Empire did not have any such elite infantry soldiers, as the cost to build such an army was really too high. Yet, in the Fei Li Empire, they were actually used as palace guards!

Shangguan Bing'er stopped immediately, and lifted her right hand, with a bright flash of light, her two pale green pure Dragonstone Jade Physical Jewels appeared above her milky white wrists, sparkling brilliantly.

With 2 loud clangs, the two heavy swords fell back to the ground, and the silver soldiers' said respectfully: “Welcome, Mid Level Heavenly Shi Master, please enter.”

Shangguan Bing'er nodded, and turned to Zhou Weiqing: "Show your Physical Jewel."

"Oh." Zhou Weiqing gave the silver armor an envying look as he moved his Heavenly Energy while lifting his right hand, at the same time he was secretly thinking that the defense of the silver armor should be really good, if he could just wear it, arrows shot from a distance would probably not be able to penetrate it, such a good thing!

A pure Icy Jade Physical Jewel appeared around Zhou Weiqing's right wrist as he showed it to the silver armored soldiers; the gleam in the Physical Jewel seemed as a layer of icy fog was about to erupt from the Jewel.

"Low Level Heavenly Shi Master, please enter." Previously they had only set down their heavy swords, but after seeing the pure Physical Jewels on Zhou Weiqing's right wrist, which meant he was also a Heavenly Jewel Master, the two silver armored soldiers simultaneously took a step back, making a path for them to enter.

Chapter 12 – Physical Jewel Consolidated Equipment – Overlord Bow (1)

Shangguan Bing'er led Zhou Weiqing deeper into the Skill Storing Palace past the silver armored soldiers, as she walked she said to him: "For ordinary Jewel Masters who want to enter the Skill-Storing Palace, they need to have a Heavenly Jewel Master to recommend them, but as Heavenly Jewel Masters ourselves, we do not have such restraints. You must remember, if anybody wants to look at your proof of being a Heavenly Jewel Master, you only need to reveal your Physical Jewel. The Elemental Jewel is our Heavenly Jewel Master's secret, and we will not show it easily outside of fights."

Zhou Weiqing looked around and said in a low voice: "Battalion Commander, this Fei Li Empire is really rich! We are at the Skill-Storing Palace now, if we are not going to carry on with Skill-Storing, what are we doing here?"

Shangguan Bing'er said: "We are here to get you a change of clothes. We are here this time basically to look for a Consolidating Equipment Master. I have very limited funds so we are unable to spend much here. Even if we find a good Consolidating Equipment Master, we are still only trying our luck. I just hope we can get something out of this trip."

Entering the Skill-Storing Palace, as compared to the with the greatness shown outside, the inside of the palace seemed a little smaller, after entering the threshold they reached a hall which was only about 200 square meters, with nine exits in the different directions separately.

Shangguan Bing'er then led Zhou Weiqing towards the first entrance on the left; there were no more guards here, not even at the doors, and following the road inwards for about 30 meters, they finally saw a bright light ahead. A hall which appeared a lot larger than the main hall outside revealed itself to Zhou Weiqing's eyes.

Around the hall there were several counters, and behind each counter sat a staff member. The age of the staff varied, but they all wore long white robe, with the same gold Cross Saint Sword Symbol embroidered across the chest area.

Shangguan Bing'er brought Zhou Weiqing in front of a counter, and the staff at the counter immediately stood and asked to them: "Are you both here to register or to report a rise in ranking?"

Zhou Weiqing did not understand what was going on and turned to look at Shangguan Bing'er, who said: "I'm here to report a rise in ranking, he is here to register."

The staff said respectfully: "Good, please show me your Physical Jewels for verification."

Shangguan Bing'er signaled with her eyes to Zhou Weiqing, and displayed her two Dragonstone Jade Physical Jewels once more. Seeing the pure Physical Jewels, the look of respect on the staff's face grew even more respectful.

Shangguan Bing'er took out a golden plaque from her bosom and

handed it over to the staff. At the back of the plaque was the same Cross Saint Sword symbol of Fei Li Empire, and the front of the plaque there was a small Dragonstone Jade mounted, surrounded by tattoos as well as a serial number below it.

After the staff received the plaque and checking it for a while, said: “Good day Shangguan Bing’er, you have been promoted from Low Level Heavenly Shi Master to Mid Level Heavenly Shi Master, please wait a while and we will provide you with your new Shi Master Plaque as well as your robe.”

As for Zhou Weiqing’s side, there was another staff to receive him.

“Welcome to register here at the Skill-Storing Palace of Flying Hill City, a big welcome to you Sir as a Low Level Heavenly Shi Master. Can I carry on with the registration for you now?”

The staff member who was receiving Zhou Weiqing was a 20-year-old girl, with her features only slightly above average, but her figure was very outstanding, especially her chest, which instantly captured Zhou Weiqing’s attention.

“Haha, yes, of course, certainly.” Zhou Weiqing swallowed his saliva, and blinked his eyes.

“May I please have your name.” The young girl could feel Zhou Weiqing’s scalding hot vision on her, and knitted her brows. In this place, even a Heavenly Jewel Master would seldom dare to be so rude, furthermore his age seemed so young.

“36D Cup size...” Zhou Weiqing muttered to himself.

The young female staff immediately sweatdropped, her arms raised up to cover her chest, saying “Low Level Heavenly Shi Master, please show some respect. Otherwise, the Skill-Storing Palace has the right to handle those who affront our dignity.”

Zhou Weiqing could clearly see that the young girl’s left hand, two sapphire Elemental Jewel representing the Water Attribute has appeared, showing her strength a Mid Shi Level Elemental Jewel Master. Although he did not know much about this place, but he could easily guess that Elemental Jewel Masters working here would definitely be able to achieve their Skill-Storing for their Elemental Jewels. Even though he was a Heavenly Jewel Master, without having Consolidated Equipments or Stored Skills, furthermore he had only one set of Jewels, he was probably no match for her!

“Ah! It was not intentional, it all happened subconsciously, Big sis, your amazing talent was so strong that it made me make a judgement subconsciously, you cannot blame me for that.” Zhou Weiqing said seriously, but, as he said those words, the ‘36D Cup’ young girl had already stood up in anger.

Zhou Weiqing hurriedly looked to the nearby Shangguan Bing’er with a pleading look, hoping to seek help. However, she calmly said aloud as if to herself: “I do not know him.”

Zhou Weiqing’s response was so quick, and on seeing that he was

about to suffer, he immediately changed the topic, “Registration, time to register right? Name: Little Fatty Zhou, Gender: Male, from the Heavenly Bow Empire, Age: 13 years old. Low Level Heavenly Shi Master, an unmarried handsome strong man.” His look was that of complete compliance.

He was after all a Heavenly Jewel Master, and the young girl suppressed her anger and sat back at her position to carry on with the registration. However, the next instance, both she and Shangguan Bing'er's surprised gazes fell simultaneously Zhou Weiqing. Almost in a single tone they exclaimed together: “You are only 13 years old?”

Zhou Weiqing's face revealed his trademark simple and honest smile, and said: “Yes! I'm early to puberty. Even my ‘hair’ is fully grown, do you need to inspect it? In two months I'll be 14 years old.”

What made Shangguan Bing'er most speechless was that Zhou Weiqing's face kept his simple and honest look while he was mouthing off. Still, she really had not expected that this Little Fatty Zhou was actually only 13 years old. Suddenly, in her heart, the hatred towards him was reduced by several points; after all although he was irritating at times, but that incident was not intentional, all she could say was that was fate. If he had not met her, perhaps he would have died already by now.

The young girl who was helping Zhou Weiqing register was obviously not willing to linger around this rascal, and completed the registration as fast as possible, quickly passing him his own plaque and robes. The plaque was almost the same as Shangguan

Bing'er's, except the Dragonstone Jade was replaced by an Icy Jade. The robes were all white, with a small golden cross Saint sword symbol on the left part of the chest area.

Shangguan Bing'er's own promotion had also been completed, and on her plaque was now mounted two Dragonstone Jade stones, her robes also had an additional cross Saint sword symbol.

"Let's go." Shangguan Bing'er was not willing to remain here, she did not want to allow that Little Fatty Zhou to continue staying here and causing her to lose face.

As they exited the Skill-Storing Palace, Shangguan Bing'er's foot flew out to kick Zhou Weiqing's ass, and she reprimanded him: "Enough with the trash talk or I'll sew your mouth shut! You're so young yet with so many dirty tricks, what will happen when you grow up? Hmph, you're only 13-year-old, why did you enlist in the military?" If he had not joined the army, she wouldn't have.... The more she thought about it, the angrier she grew.

Chapter 12 – Physical Jewel Consolidated Equipment – Overlord Bow (2)

Zhou Weiqing said with a pitiable face: “I have made a mistake, It really was not intentional, it was all subconscious, absolutely subconsciousness.”

Shangguan Bing'er gave a cold hmph, “Remember, only after you register with the Skill-Storing Palace, and get the Skill-Storing Palace plaque, then can you carry on with Storing Skills in the Palace. Ordinary Physical and Elemental Jewel Masters can also register here and get the plaque, but they will not have the robes which represent Heavenly Jewel Masters. When going through with Skill-Storing, Heavenly Jewel Masters can enjoy a 10% discount. Every additional gem increase promotion will mean another 10% discount. Therefore, if you have the opportunity to come alone to carry on with Skill-Storing, you must remember to register any promotion first.”

Zhou Weiqing said in surprise: “Doesn't that mean that those Heavenly Jewel Masters with 9 Jewels do not need to pay?”

Shangguan Bing'er shook her head, saying: “I do not know either, but it is rumoured that those Heavenly Jewel Masters who are above 6 Jewels seldom go to the Skill Storing Palace anymore. The actual reason is not for those Heavenly Jewel Masters of our level to know.”

“Battalion commander, can I ask how much money does our Skill Storing require?” Zhou Weiqing's heart was really itching to try it out, having the means of growing stronger right in front of him,

yet being unable to do so due to money, this made him feel very out of sorts in his heart. Although his father was very honest and did not have much money, but his godfather was after all the ruler of their country, furthermore he was now a Heavenly Jewel Master, in the future when he returned to the Heavenly Bow Empire he should be able to ask for some money for Skill-Storing.

Shangguan Bing'er said: "One attempt at Skill Storing is about 500 gold coins."

Zhou Weiqing blinked, "500 gold coins, that's not really very expensive!"

Shangguan Bing'er looked at him coldly, "The success rate has less than 1%. If your luck is bad, you may not even succeed after trying several hundred times. The worst thing is the loss of the time, a Jewel Master can only go through one Skill Storing every day. The price I mentioned is also only for the ordinary Heavenly Beasts. If we are talking about the higher level Zun Beasts or Zong Beasts, the price is astronomical. However, the success rate is slightly higher for them, and their skills will also be generally better."

Zhou Weiqing was struck speechless; to his knowledge, the annual tax revenue of Heavenly Bow City was only 500,000 gold coins. No wonder Shangguan Bing'er mentioned that their empire was not able to support many Heavenly Jewel Masters.

"So Heavenly Beasts are similar to us and have some sort of ranking. Alright, let's forget about Skill Storing for now. Let's go to the Consolidating Equipment Master that you mentioned." This

was the first time that Zhou Weiqing realised how important money was. The cultivation of Heavenly Jewel Masters was more difficult than he had thought.

Shangguan Bing'er nodded, saying: "Now you know why I always place so much importance on saving money. Honestly, even if our Heavenly Bow Empire has that many Heavenly Jewel Masters, our empire is not able to support us all. After all, our country is really too tiny compared to the huge empires like Fei Li empire or Bai Da Empire. Without our own Skill-Storing Palace, it is impossible to organize a team of formidable Heavenly Jewel Masters."

"Let's find a place to stay first. After we wash up a little and change, we can go look for a good Consolidating Equipment Master." Shangguan Bing'er thought after thinking a while.

"Did I hear correctly? [Did a steel tree bloom](#)?" Zhou Weiqing said as he looked at her in surprise.

Shangguan Bing'er's beautiful face turned red, "Are you courting death? Do you want to stay or not?"

"Stay, of course I'll stay."

After fifteen minutes, the two of them were standing in the hall of a small little hotel. This hotel was really small and only had one level; besides its cleanliness, Zhou Weiqing could not find another merit in it.

“Boss, please gives us a room.” Shangguan Bing’er told the 50-year-old hotel boss standing behind the counter.

The hotel boss looked at the two of them and gave them a lascivious smile, before handing over a key covered with embroidery. He said: “Room 1, one silver coin for two days. You young people, must learn to control yourselves heh.”

Taking the key, Shangguan Bing’er just turned unemotionally and walked off. but Zhou Weiqing actually gesticulated to the boss and showed off his muscle, “Boss, what sort of eyes do you have! Look at me so vigorous and healthy, why would I need to control?”

“Zhou — Little — Fatty — !!”

“Here!” Zhou Weiqing answered quickly, and rushed to follow.

Following Shangguan Bing’er, he asked with a sad face: “Battalion Commander, we finally entered a city and you only took one room, you won’t make me sleep outside on the streets to save money right?”

Shangguan Bing’er shot a look at him, saying: “You and I will stay in this one.”

Zhou Weiqing was stunned instantaneously, his brain dazed as he opened his mouth, his saliva flowing out, and he muttered: “This... this... happiness comes so quickly. Battalion Commander, are we advancing too quickly?”

“Little Fatty Zhou, I have endured you for too long!” Shangguan Bing’er gave a low roar that made Zhou Weiqing shut up instantly; he knew that knows, generally before a tigress attacks she would roar like that.

The room was not very big, but was at least clean, it actually had a bathroom for washing and excretion, and could be considered fully equipped.

There was only a single bed in the room, and Shangguan Bing’er dropped off her backpack before sitting on the bed. At this moment, her beautiful face revealed her weariness, and Zhou Weiqing who was looking at her felt a pain in his heart.

“Little Fatty Zhou. Come here.” Shangguan Bing’er beckoned to Zhou Weiqing who was standing at the side.

“Orh.” Having angered her earlier, this time Zhou Weiqing came honestly, his face a picture of simple sincerity.

Before he could even come to a stop, Shangguan Bing’er moved all of a sudden, her speed pushed to the limit in that very instance, Zhou Weiqing was sure that in that moment she had simultaneously used both her Physical and Elemental Jewels. All he saw was a flash in front of his eyes, and suddenly both his hands were gripped and his arms were pushed down hard onto the bed.

“Battalion Commander, don’t be so violent, I won’t resist.” Feeling the soft smoothness of Shangguan Bing’er’s hands, Zhou

Weiqing's heart instantly became lascivious. However, in the next instant he was unable to maintain that lascivious-ness.

Shangguan Bing'er took out a string from an nowhere, and quickly tied up Zhou Weiqing's hands and feet, then fastening him firmly to bed.

“Battalion commander, did you like this? You won't be using the leather whip and candle right? I'm afraid of pain!” Even at this time, this rascal could not control his mouth.

Shangguan Bing'er gave him a quick kick, “If you talk more trash, I'll take your sock and shove it in your mouth.”

“I'm shutting up now!” Nobody knew clearer than Zhou Weiqing how dirty his socks were. Probably if he took them off and threw them at the wall, they might even stick on... if those were shoved into his mouth

A moment later, Zhou Weiqing finally understood why Shangguan Bing'er tied him up, as he heard the sound of running water. This beautiful lady Battalion Commander was taking a bath now. Obviously, tying him up was to prevent this rascal from peeping. In truth, Shangguan Bing'er's actions were definitely correct. Even tied up there, Zhou Weiqing's mind couldn't help but drift off into a daydream, as lascivious pictures fluttered across his mind. After all, he had actually seen her before...

A direct translation of 铁树开花, an idiom meaning something almost impossible happening – he is referring to her being miserly and willing to spend money on a room to stay.

Chapter 12 – Physical Jewel Consolidated Equipment – Overlord Bow (3)

After less than an hour, the bathroom doors opened, and the next instance Zhou Weiqing felt his bindings loosened as the string was untied. When he looked up, he was absolutely stunned instantaneously.

The Shangguan Bing'er in front of him had her blue hair wet around her head, the large Heavenly Jewel Master robe wrapped around her body; because she had just taken a bath, her beautiful face was blushing red like a ripe apple, her entire body also giving off an alluring scent after bathing. That incomparable attraction made Zhou Weiqing's mind freeze in its tracks.

“Little Hoodlum. Go take a bath.” Shangguan Bing'er suddenly blushed and turned around to the side. The reason was very simple, she accidentally saw that Little Fatty Zhou's certain body part bulge out. Earlier when that rascal was daydreaming, his body has gotten a ... reaction.

The speed that Zhou Weiqing took his bath was in no way faster than Shangguan Bing'er. Throughout the journey, Shangguan Bing'er had frequently cleaned her body in creeks or rivers while he prepared food during that time. As such, he was extremely dirty as you could imagine. Finally being able to take a bath, how could he not be happy and slowly enjoy it.

When Zhou Weiqing came out from the bathroom, he saw in front of him that the quilt from the bed had been spread out on the ground. Obviously, this was the place that he would be sleeping

tonight.

Shangguan Bing'er also couldn't help but take a second look at him when he walked out from the bathroom; although Zhou Weiqing was not particularly handsome, that he was the decent looking sort that was easy on the eye. Most particularly was his grandiose stature, after absorbing the black pearl, his height had reached nearly 1.75 metres, you definitely could not tell that he was less than 14 years old from his looks, especially from the nimble and resourceful black eyes he had. At this time after changing into a Heavenly Jewel Master robe, it was as if he looked like a totally different person.

“Let's go.” Shangguan Bing'er was not willing to show the chaos in her heart to be seen by him, and immediately set off again. The both of them wearing the Heavenly Jewel Master robe, although you couldn't say they were a perfect match, but at least when they walked together there wasn't that huge contrast like when they were entering the city.

As they left the hotel, the hotel boss' eyes nearly popped out of their sockets when he saw their Heavenly Jewel Master gowns. He had never expected that one day he would have two Heavenly Jewel Masters would be staying at his tiny little hotel.

Zhou Weiqing felt the obvious change when they once again walked onto the streets of Flying Hill City. The passer-bys on the street would obviously give way to both him and Shangguan Bing'er, their eyes showing much respect. This was the treatment towards Heavenly Jewel Masters, even in Fei Li Empire such a formidable empire, the status of Heavenly Jewel Masters was still

incomparably lofty.

“Battalion Commander, can we walk slowly?” Having just taken a long enjoyable bath, Zhou Weiqing felt his whole body being extremely comfortable and languid, yet as soon as Shangguan Bing’er had exited, she had moved at a high speed.

After just a short while, Zhou Weiqing discovered with some amazement that Shangguan Bing’er had actually led him to return to near the Skill-Storing Palace again, but instead of entering it again, she walked towards a bunch of short houses opposite the Palace. These short houses did not look unique in anyway, and was composed of several small courtyards, and compared with the grand architecture of the Skill-Storing Palace, it looked very simple and ordinary. However, as they got closer, Zhou Weiqing actually discovered that the area was unexpectedly very quiet, and very few people actually approached it. In between the small courtyards there was an alley of about two meters width.

Shangguan Bing’er walked familiarly deeper through the alleys, and as they walked along she told Zhou Weiqing: “If we are not wearing the Heavenly Jewel Master robes, once we approach this area, we will be stopped by the Jewel masters who are guarding this place. A Consolidating Equipment Master is staying in each courtyard, and they are all very honoured elders. Later, you better be carefully, if you speak rubbish at such a place, I cannot guarantee your safety. In any country, the status of Consolidating Equipment Master is absolute. There are even fewer of them than Heavenly Jewel Masters, in fact most of them are actually Heavenly Jewel Masters who have the spatial attribute.”

“En.” Zhou Weiqing agreed, this time he did not trash talk again.

Shangguan Bing'er brought him to one of the deeper small courtyards and stopped in front of the gate; she walked forward and knocked lightly on the gate, “Huyan Senior, are you at home?”

A moment later, the gate opened, a middle-aged man walked out from within. He was very tall, about two meters, but not very well built and had a slim figure, looking around 40-years of age, with his face like an ancient moon, wearing simple grey cotton garments. He seemed very ordinary, except with a very cold face.

The first thing Zhou Weiqing noted were his hands, both were very large, slender just like his stature, his ten fingers were clear like jade, as if his hands were the most important core of his body.

When Shangguan Bing'er saw the middle-aged man, she immediately bowed in greeting, saying respectfully: “Wind Senior, Hello. Is Huyan Senior in?”

On seeing her, the middle-aged man was somewhat surprised, “Oh it's you, little girl! You've promoted so quickly? Huyan that old fellow is in, but you know he is famous for being stingy, he will not lift a finger to help. Do you have enough money prepared?”

Hearing the description from the middle-aged man, Zhou Weiqing couldn't help but to give out a quick laugh, saying to her in a low voice: “Battalion Commander, isn't that Huyan Senior your teacher then?”

Shangguan Bing'er turned head and glared at him angrily, "Shut up! Quickly greet Wind Senior now."

Zhou Weiqing then saluted the middle-aged, "Hello senior, my name is Little Fatty Zhou."

The middle-aged man nodded, saying: "Comes in then." As he said that, he entered the house.

They entered the courtyard behind him. Inside, it seemed like a different world altogether, besides a small path that was paved with gravel which led to the main house, the entire courtyard was filled with various flowers and plants. Although there weren't any huge trees, but it was a scene of abundant spring beauty, the air fresh, and the fragrance of the flowers gladdening the heart.

As they walked along the path and entered the room right in the middle, the middle-aged man said loudly: "Huyan Old Man, guests have arrived."

The furnishings within the room were arranged elegantly, the innermost part of the room there was a screen of painted art, and in the front was a square table and a large round-backed wooden armchair, there weren't actually any furnishing for entertaining guests.

Before Zhou Weiqing had a chance to size up the room, he noticed a meatball walking in from a side room, when he focused his eyes, he realised it was an old man.

This man looked to be around 60 to 70 years old, his beard and hair totally white, but was still glowing with health. His face did not have wrinkles, but his eyes had been squeezed by the fat on his face that only two slits remained, yet they still seemed to glow with vigor. He was dressed in the similar simple grey cotton garment, but his sleeves were particularly long, covering both hands. The most obvious characteristic was his stature, as he looked like a large round watermelon.

Chapter 12 – Physical Jewel Consolidated Equipment – Overlord Bow (4)

“Greetings Huyan Senior.” Shangguan Bing’er’s look turned more respectful than before, her hand also pushing Zhou Weiqing to salute to the chubby old man respectfully.

The fat old man’s small eyes rolled about as he waved his hands, “No need for pleasantries or idle talk. You want Consolidating Equipment Scrolls right, the price tags are all displayed clearly. I currently have three for sale, you can choose for yourself.” As he said that, he waved his sleeves, and three pieces of paper appeared on the square table.

Zhou Weiqing rubbed his eyes, checking that he had not missed seeing anything, but he had not actually noticed how these three pieces of paper appeared.

Shangguan Bing’er squeezed Zhou Weiqing’s hands forcefully, giving him a severe warning glare, warning him not to speak, before pulling him to the square table.

Zhou Weiqing who was being pulled by her soft tender hands felt extremely comfortable, and he was also rather curious about the Consolidating Equipment Scrolls, thus he did not try to do anything funny and followed her to the table.

The three pieces of paper on the square table were actually three pictures, each depicting different things. The first to attract Zhou Weiqing’s attention was the leftmost picture which was a drawing

of a round shield, the shield's surface was densely covered with lines like that of a turtle's shell, and right in the middle there was a small round indent. Although it was just a picture, it actually gave out a dignified and tough feeling. To someone like Zhou Weiqing who was coveted life and feared death, it was without a doubt of enormous attraction to him. Written beside the picture was a single line of words: Xuan Wu Shield, limited to either Strength, Endurance or Toughness Attribute Heavenly Jewel Masters to use. Able to mount Elemental Jewel.

Zhou Weiqing could understand the words in front, but the sentence at the end about mounting Elemental Jewels was something he was not quite clear about. Furthermore, the restriction of the shield being only usable by Heavenly Jewel Masters made him somewhat puzzled.

The picture on the right was that of a pair of boots, although it only several simple patterns on it, but it actually gave forth a light and lively feeling, at the ankle area of the boots there was another of the small round indents. Inscribed beside were the words: Wind Wielding Boots, limited for Agility Attribute Heavenly Jewel Masters to use, able to mount Elemental Jewel.

Shangguan Bing'er's gaze lingered on this picture for a while, before turning to the central picture, almost at the same time as Zhou Weiqing.

The picture was that of a long bow, in a simple and unsophisticated style, the bow arc was rather very small, and there was no bowstring, the small round socket in position at the hand grip area. The entire bow only had a single large tattoo extending

from top to bottom, but it actually gave out an intense and ominous feel, as if it were the blood on a sharp knife blade.

Annotation: Overlord Bow, limited to strength attribute Heavenly Jewel Masters to use, able to mount Elemental Jewels, 10% discount for High Level Heavenly Shi Jewel Masters.

Zhou Weiqing's gaze only rested on the Overlord Bow for a short while, before returning to the Xuan Wu Shield, which he was starting to like more the more he looked at it. In his heart he mused that if that shield was large enough, he would be immune to any arrows in the battlefield.

“Huyan Senior, how much money does this Overlord Bow Consolidating Equipment Scroll cost?” After a moment of hesitation, Shangguan Bing'er's eyes turned firm and she asked.

The fat old man glanced at her, saying: “Little girl, if I have remembered correctly, you are of the agile attribute. You should know my rules. You cannot bring away the Consolidating Equipment Scroll.”

Shangguan Bing'er nodded, saying: “Of course I know the rules of Senior, I am buying this for my friend here, his Physical Jewel is of pure Strength Attribute.”

The fat old man said calmly: “200,000 gold coins.”

Shangguan Bing'er's face changed, her delicate eyebrows

furrowed as she went deep into thought. Zhou Weiqing actually raised his head, his face startled. Although he had guessed that Consolidating Equipment Scrolls would be expensive, but this was way above his expectations. 200,000 gold coins, and this was only the price of his very first Physical Jewel, if he were to complete all 12 of his Physical Jewels, how much money would that take?

His eyes swirling as he thought, Zhou Weiqing thought of something and asked with his simple and honest face: “Senior, how much does this Xuan Wu Shield cost?”

The fat old man said: “120,000 gold coins.”

Shangguan Bing'er turned around to stare at him, “No, you cannot choose the shield. This Overlord Bow is more suitable for you.”

Zhou Weiqing gave a helpless look, saying, “Battalion Commander, I think that those Wind Wielding Boots are even more suitable for you! How about you buy those first, I am not anxious to get mine.” In his heart he had some secret plans, he would go back to ask his godfather for some money, then secretly run back here to buy the Xuan Wu Shield.

Shangguan Bing'er shook her head, saying: “I already have my first Physical Jewel with a Consolidated Equipment, it is sufficient to protect myself. You on the other hand do not have anything yet. Huyan Senior, I have 150,000 gold coins. Can I leave you with the money first, then go back to get the other 50,000 gold coins, and you help me reserve this Overlord Bow Consolidating Equipment Scroll for a few days please?”

Listened to Shangguan Bing'er's words, Zhou Weiqing went totally silent, his face full of disbelief as he looked at her. He had actually been joking when asking Shangguan Bing'er to buy him the scrolls, in his mind, Shangguan Bing'er was so miserly that she would definitely not buy such expensive things. He has really never expected her to so decisively decide to purchase the Overlord Bow Scroll; more importantly, she was buying that Consolidating Equipment Scroll not for her own use, but to give to him!

Zhou Weiqing suddenly felt a burst of hot air rush towards both his eyes, and his gaze towards Shangguan Bing'er changed a lot, the fist hidden in his sleeves were gripped together fiercely.

The fat old man gave a humph, "Reserve? Don't you know my rules? You are already lucky that you found me today with three whole sets of Consolidating Equipment Scrolls. I only created three sets of Consolidating Equipment Scrolls this year, within three days these three sets should be completely sold out. Why should I reserve it for you? If you do not have money, just leave." Saying that, he turned around to leave, his words were cold and did not give any face at all.

Shangguan Bing'er's face was full of anxiety as she pled: "Senior, can't you please stretch the rules a little? I will also leave my Purple Dawn Bow here as a mortgage. I can rush back here at top speed."

The fat old man said impatiently: "Less useless idle talk, go away."

Zhou Weiqing suddenly took a step forward, blocking the way of the fat old man, at the same time he said sincerely, “Senior, please stretch the rules for us. We have travelled a long way to you because your Consolidating Equipment Scrolls are the best. Please give us a chance.”

The fat old man gave an angry humph, “Overlord Bow Consolidating Equipment Scroll, now 300,000 gold coins. Now have you given up? Get the hell out!”

Zhou Weiqing was momentarily stunned, this fat old man was simply so unreasonable, he had unexpectedly risen the price by 100,000 gold coins with no reason. Immediately, his anger rose as well and he snapped, “Do you need to be so ruthless? If you give others a chance, in the future it will benefit you too!”

The fat old man glared at him coldly, “400,000 gold coins.”

Chapter 13 – An eye for an eye, a tooth for a tooth (1)

When Zhou Weiqing heard the huge price of 400,000 gold coins, he was just about to say something again, but he felt a large force on his arm, and he was pulled to the side by Shangguan Bing'er. When he turned his head around to look at her, he was surprised to see that she was almost on the verge of tears, the hand that was grabbing onto him was shivering.

“Battalion Commander, you

“Shut up!” Shangguan Bing'er said fiercely, moving quickly in a flash to block off Zhou Weiqing, and said pleadingly to the fat old man: “Huyan Senior, please ignore him, we are at the wrong here. 200,000 gold coins is okay. I have a piece of Spirit Jade here which should have the value of 50,000 gold coins, I can leave it here as a mortgage first. After we go through with the Consolidating of Equipment, we'll immediately go back to get money, before coming back to exchange back for the Spirit Jade, is that okay?”

As she said that, she took off a red string necklace from her neck, it had a cream coloured jade stone hung upon it. The jade was carved into a [Ruyi shape](#), although it was not glowing, but it had a gentle warmth to it. Shangguan Bing'er held out the jade in front of the old man, her face with a pleading look.

The fat old man shot a glance at it, and a surprised look flashed into his eyes, before saying calmly: “If you had taken it out a moment ago, I would have agreed actually. This Spirit Jade is worth more than 50,000 gold coins, maybe even 100,000 gold

coins. With it as a mortgage, I would definitely have sold you the Consolidating Equipment Scroll. However, just now that boy blocked me earlier, and I said that the Overlord Bow Consolidating Equipment Scroll's price is now 400,000 gold coins. I, Huyan Aobo, always keep my promises. It's not just for you, I've set the price now, whoever comes to to buy it will also be given this same price. If you do not have 400,000 gold coins, you can leave now. There are many Consolidating Equipment Masters around here, you can buy other Consolidating Equipment Scrolls."

Is that even possible? Zhou Weiqing stared with a dumbfounded look at the fat old man Huyan Aobo. The words that he had spoken thoughtlessly had caused the unexpected huge rise in price, to a price about double the initial price even.

"Battalion Commander, let's go. This old man isn't the only the only Consolidating Equipment Master around here; he is like a stone in the latrine pit, smelly and hard, why must we buy his scrolls?" Zhou Weiqing grabbed Shangguan Bing'er's and started to walk out.

Shangguan Bing'er turned his head, saying angrily: "What do you understand? In the Flying Hill City, only Huyan Senior is a Grandmaster Consolidating Equipment Master, how can other Consolidating Equipment Masters compare with his work? Haven't you seen the words 'Able to mount Elemental Jewels'? Only Grandmaster Consolidating Equipment Master and above are able to create such Scrolls."

"500,000 gold coins. Scolding this old man, you must pay the price. Little brat, if you scold me one more time, you can forget

about buying Consolidating Equipment Scrolls from here in the future.” Huyan Aobo said coldly.

Zhou Weiqing’s eyes flashed with anger, his hands lifted in fists in front of him and he said, “Huyan Old Man, I’ve never wanted to punch anyone as much as I have now.”

Huyan Aobo suddenly smiled and laughed out loud, “There are any people who want to punch, and many others who want to kill me. However, this old man is still living well. Even the Fei Li Empire’s Emperor will still be courteous to me. Who do you think you are? To kill me, you’ll have to get by Feng Yu first. He is a Upper Level Zong Physical Jewel Master, with nine Physical Jewels, all with Consolidated Equipment. When you can beat him, then you can come to say those words to me.”

Zhou Weiqing was startled, although he had judged that the middle-aged man would be very strong, but he had not expected him to be at the very peak of Physical Jewel Masters, having 9 Physical Jewels. Shangguan Bing’er only had one Physical Jewel with Consolidated Equipment and she was already so strong, how formidable was this Upper Level Zong Physical Jewel Master with all nine Jewels with Consolidated Equipments? It was no wonder that this fat old man Huyan Aobo was so secure.

Fu Yu shook his head helplessly, saying, “Little bro, you better just leave. When this old man goes crazy, you can’t reason with him.”

Shangguan Bing’er was currently just standing there dazed. She knew that they had come here for nothing today. It had been such

amazing luck for them to come at a time when there were three sets of Consolidating Equipment Scrolls, yet they had not been able to get anything in the end. That sort of feeling of wanting to cry but having no tears left, caused her to not even have the mood to reprimand Zhou Weiqing.

A trace of bloodlust flashed through Zhou Weiqing's eyes, even though he himself had not realized it. The energy whirlpools at his four Death Acupuncture Points which had broken through suddenly doubled their speed of rotation and energy draw, and a light grey colour invaded his pupils. At the center of his forehead, the trace of a black 'King' word was visible indistinctly. The pair of Heavenly Jewels simultaneously appeared around his wrists; the Physical Jewels were still alright, just giving forth an icy mist, but his Elemental Jewel sent forth an extremely brilliant light.

When there was no sunlight, the Alexandrite Cat's Eye would present the red colour of a Red Ruby, and at this time Zhou Weiqing's wrist's Alexandrite Cat's Eye was blood red, twinkling brightly like the red pupils of a demon.

The Heavenly Jewel Master robes that the Skill-Storing Palace had issued them had a lot longer sleeves than normal and could cover the wrists; naturally it also covered Zhou Weiqing's Alexandrite Cat's Eye Jewel, but in that moment, the sheer brilliance that the Alexandrite Cat's Eye was emitting was really intense, penetrating the sleeves.

Huyan Aobo originally had an arrogant face and was looking disdainfully at Zhou Weiqing. However, when the sudden brilliance emitted from Zhou Weiqing's Alexandrite Cat's Eye

emitted, his proud look suddenly froze.

“Cat’s Eye Jewel?” The fat old man’s breathing suddenly became rapid, “Why didn’t you say you have this Greater Attribute Jewel, don’t you know you can get a discount?”

Shangguan Bing’er also came awake at this moment, her expression changing, and she quickly pulled Zhou Weiqing aside, saying: “The Consolidating Equipment Scroll of Senior’s is too expensive for us, even with discounts we are unable to afford it, we’ll be taking our leave now.” Saying that, she quickly pulled Zhou Weiqing towards the exit. Compared to purchasing the Consolidating Equipment Scroll, the thing she feared most was having Zhou Weiqing’s Elemental Jewel Attributes exposed. Earlier, when the brilliance from Zhou Weiqing’s Jewels shone out through his sleeves it had caused her to be shocked into action instantly.

“No, no, don’t rush to leave. I will not raise the price anymore.” Huyan Aobo took a quick step forward, blocking their way to the exit, his gaze locked on Zhou Weiqing’s left wrist which was blocked by his sleeves.

Shangguan Bing’er look was stern, “Senior, you are a noble Consolidating Equipment Master, you won’t buy or sell with coercion right?”

Huyan Aobo no longer had the look of arrogance on his face any more, instead having a rather ingratiating tone, immediately explained: “Little Girl, do not misunderstand. I know that you are worried that your friend will have his Greater Spatial Attribute’s

Jewel exposed. You can rest assured though, although I, Huyan Aobo, may be greedy for money, but my personal moral character is still good. Furthermore, I have always been neutral and am not controlled by any country, I will not do anything disadvantageous to this little brother.”

[如意玉](#) It’s a sort of jade carving meant for luck.

Chapter 13 – An eye for an eye, a tooth for a tooth (2)

Regarding Huyan Aobo's sudden change in treatment of him, Zhou Weiqing was also extremely surprised. He could also sense Shangguan Bing'er's anxiety, and immediately Received his Heavenly Jewels.

On hearing Huyan Aobo words, Shangguan Bing'er's look of wariness lessened a little, and she said: "Senior, what do you mean?"

Huyan Aobo sighed and said: "To be honest, this is the sorrowful fate for us Consolidating Equipment Masters. You should know that Consolidating Equipment Masters need to have the Spatial Attribute, no matter Heavenly Jewel Masters or just Elemental Jewel Masters, as long as you have the Spatial Attribute, you have the possibility of becoming a Consolidating Equipment Master. However, amongst the four Greater Attributes, Darkness, Light, Life and Spatial Attributes, the rarest is the Spatial Attribute. This is especially true for Spatial Attribute Heavenly Jewel Masters, they are incomparably rare. Therefore, currently most of the Consolidating Equipment Masters are just Spatial Attribute Elemental Jewel Masters. It is difficult to find a Spatial Attribute Heavenly Jewel Master to choose to become a Consolidating Equipment Master."

After pausing a while, Huyan Aobo continued saying: "I can tell you two a secret. The rank of us Consolidating Equipment Masters is dependant on the success rate of our Consolidating Equipment Scrolls as well as the quality of our Consolidating Equipment

Scrolls. Most lower ranking Consolidating Equipment Masters have their Consolidating Equipment Scrolls with success rates less than 1/1000. As such, there are few who are willing to join this profession. Even the Consolidating Equipment Scrolls that I, this grandmaster Consolidating Equipment Master manufactures, the success rate is also only 1%. This is the limit of my achievement. Only Heavenly Jewel Masters who have become Consolidating Equipment Masters have the possibility of becoming more formidable Consolidating Equipment Masters, perhaps even reaching god level. That had been the biggest dream in my life, a dream that I know I can no longer complete, but I have more than enough theoretical knowledge, so I hope that my future disciple can complete this dream for me.”

Zhou Weiqing said doubtfully: “Are you trying to recruit me as a disciple?”

Huyan Aobo’s face grew somewhat awkward, “That’s the awkward difference between us Consolidating Equipment Masters and other professions. Other professions, the disciple looks for the master, while us masters have to look for our disciples. The Spatial Attribute Heavenly Jewel Masters are just too rare. Look, you guys do not appear to have much money; to be honest, Spatial Attribute Heavenly Jewel Masters who are so broke are even more rare. Little brother, as long as you are willing to apprentice under me and inherit my skills, the price of Consolidating Equipment Scrolls are open for discussion. Not only do you not need 500,000 gold coins, I’ll sell it to you for 150,000 gold coins, the exact amount you have?”

Shangguan Bing’er loosened her grip on Zhou Weiqing’s hand, as she was lost in thought. Huyan Aobo words made her excited, after

all you must know that in the entire Heavenly Bow Empire there was not a single Consolidating Equipment Master. Although Huyan Aobo was greedy for money and extremely stingy, but in the Consolidating Equipment Master domain, he could be said to be an existence of high authoritative level. In the entire Fei Li Empire, there were few Consolidating Equipment Masters that could be said to be better than him. If Zhou Weiqing studied how to create Consolidating Equipment Scrolls with him, it would be of incomparable advantage to the Heavenly Bow Empire's future.

“No way.” Zhou Weiqing had already rejected Huyan Aobo invitation without hesitation. He was currently full of anger at this moment, facing Huyan AoBo who had been so haughty towards him earlier, how could he easily agree to his terms.

Huyan Aobo started breathing heavily, “Little brat... no, Little brother, don't you know how rich Consolidating Equipment Masters are? Although we have to sacrifice cultivation time to manufacture Consolidating Equipment Scrolls, but, we are also the richest and most highly respected. How about this, this Overlord Bow Scroll, I will sell it at rock-bottom price to you, 100,000 gold coins, how about that?”

Zhou Weiqing gave a humph, “I have never heard of a master who did not give his apprentice a gift on the first meeting, and instead asking for money. You are truly a stingy and miserly person! If you become my master, can I have live out any good days? I'm not doing it!”

Just a moment ago, Huyan Aobo had raised his price proudly, at this moment, Zhou Weiqing was doing the same in return. Indeed,

it was an eye for an eye, a tooth for a tooth.

Feng Yu was cheerfully laughing at the side, he normally witnessed many people who had no choice but to admit defeat in front of Huyan Aobo, this was the first time he saw that old man admitting defeat.

Huyan Aobo rubbed his hands together, his face a mask of pain, “Alright, alright. As long as you become my disciple, I will give you this Overlord Bow Scroll okay.”

Zhou Weiqing was extremely astute, and understood immediately that this was definitely not Huyan AoBo’s limit. The anger that was on his face had long disappeared after Huyan Aobo mentioned giving him the scroll. With a simple, honest and sincere look on his face, he continued saying “Senior, I thank you for your good intentions. However, cultivation of Heavenly Jewel Masters is extremely expensive as you know, and my fiancée and I come from commoner families, furthermore we are from the Heavenly Bow Empire. You should know that our Heavenly Bow Empire doesn’t have much financial resources, and they are unable to support us in cultivation. The 150,000 gold coins that my wife brought was all the support that the Heavenly Bow Empire managed to give us to cultivate. It is truly the tip of the iceberg of our needs! I do not mind studying how to create Consolidating Equipment Scrolls, but, this must be delayed. It is not so easy to become a Consolidating Equipment Master right? To make money is not something that can be achieved in a short time. I do not know when I can have enough to not just carry out Physical Jewel Consolidating Equipment and also Elemental Jewel Skill Storing. We have already decided earlier that we must join the Fei Li Empire’s Skill-Storing Palace. Therefore, I can only decline your

good intention with thanks. Sigh... this is really predestiny!”

When Shangguan Bing'er heard Huyan Aobo giving Zhou Weiqing the Overlord Bow Scroll for free, she had been struck dumbfounded. That was just a matter of a short period of time! How everything had changed in an instant. Listening to Zhou Weiqing's words, although she in her heart she hated this rascal for taking advantage of her with his words, she extraordinarily did not say anything to refute him. She was very clear that when this Little Fatty Zhou's face revealed that sincere simple and honest look, it was his most dreadful, shameless and deceitful time.

“No, no, that is not good at all, you cannot join the Skill-Storing Palace. Do you not know that if you join the Skill-Storing Palace, it is tantamount to selling yourself into servitude to the Fei Li Empire?” Upon hearing Zhou Weiqing's words, Huyan Aobo grew anxious.

Zhou Weiqing said with a resigned-looking face: “I have no choice! If I have to sell myself into servitude then I'll have to do it. I've heard that Skill-Storing for Elemental Jewels is even more expensive, how can the both of us withstand such expenditure! I think, as long as we do well in the Skill-Storing Palace, they will be more than willing to spend to help us buy the Consolidating Equipment Scrolls that we need. Isn't that right, wife?”

This rascal turned his head to look at Shangguan Bing'er, with his back facing Huyan Aobo and Feng Yu, he winked towards her.

Although Shangguan Bing'er was being taken advantage of by this rascal's words, she had no choice and was unable to

undermine him at this time! Glaring at him quickly, she actually had to agree with a “En”.

Zhou Weiqing looked back once more to Huyan AoBo, “Senior, we shall not disturb you further. That Overlord Bow Scroll you can sell to others. We will be heading to the Skill-Storing Palace first, perhaps in the future we will still have the opportunity to purchase scrolls from you.” Having said that, he pulled on Shangguan Bing’er’s hands and headed out.

At this time, Zhou Weiqing was gloating in his mind! Looking at Huyan Aobo’s awkward expression, he felt he had already paid him back for earlier. Furthermore, he had managed to take advantage of Shangguan Bing’er, and even managed to hold her hand, this was just too perfect.

“Don’t go, don’t go. Wait, let me think carefully first.” Huyan Aobo paced anxiously back and forth in the room.

Chapter 13 – An eye for an eye, a tooth for a tooth (3)

At this moment, Feng Yu who had been standing at the side smiling and watching suddenly opened his mouth to say: “Huyan Old Man, money is merely an external material good, it will come and go, haven’t you understood this by now? A Heavenly Jewel Master apprentice is not easy to find. If you miss this opportunity, you may never find another one again in your lifetime. All these years, why have you been earning so much money for? Are you happy in your heart? Is money more important than your lifelong dream?”

Zhou Weiqing gave a surprised look at Feng Yu, he had not expected that this Feng Yu, who was obviously here to protect Huyan Aobo, would actually speak out on his behalf.

Huyan Aobo’s brow wrinkled fiercely, then suddenly a bright silver color light flashed out, and his body suddenly vanished from the room totally. Before Zhou Weiqing could react, the silver light flashed once again, and the fat old man reappeared in front of him and Shangguan Bing’er. In his hands, there were appeared two jet-black wooden boxes, and he handed Zhou Weiqing and Shangguan Bing’er one each.

“You two go to the side room to start Consolidating Equipment first. This is the Overlord Bow the Wind Wielding Boots respectively. Let me think some more. Feng Yu Old Man, you lead them over there.”

Feng Yu said with a laugh: “Haha, you two kids, come with me.”

As he said that, he walked outward.

Zhou Weiqing and Shangguan Bing'er received the box, which did not weigh much, and followed Feng Yu outside. Shangguan Bing'er's hand was being held by Zhou Weiqing now, but she did not try to break free. She was still in a daze, everything seemed to be happening like in a dream. Just a moment ago, they could not even afford a single set of Consolidating Equipment Scrolls, and now they actually both obtained a set each, without even spending a single cent.

Feng Yu brought them to the side rooms, and said with a smile: "You two little kids, don't be so reluctant to part with each other, each person to a room, so that when you are Consolidating Equipment your attributes do not clash."

Only then did Shangguan Bing'er awaken, and she quickly shook free of Zhou Weiqing's hand, but her beautiful face was flushed red.

Zhou Weiqing said reluctantly: "Wife, you must be careful okay."

Shangguan Bing'er stomped on his foot, before turning around to run into one of the rooms. When the door finally closed, she couldn't resist any longer, and on her beautiful face her dimple bloomed like a flower as she smiled, tightly holding the wooden box in her bosom. Compared with the Silent Tracking Arrow that was her first Consolidated Equipment, this Wind Wielding Boots that could mount an Elemental Jewel was many times stronger and better. Therefore, even though she had been taken advantage of by Zhou Weiqing, being called his wife, she had not been truly that

angry.

Looking at Shangguan Bing'er walking away, Feng Yu looked at Zhou Weiqing with a faint smile on his face, saying: "Such a young age, and you already know how to seize the opportunity so well. Kid, you are very promising."

Zhou Weiqing flashed his trademarked simple and honest smile, saying: "Senior praises me too much. I also want to give my thanks to Senior for speaking up for me earlier, it was of much help."

Feng Yu gave a hearty laugh, saying: "That's no problem, I have had beef with that Huyan Old Man for a while. If not for my promise to him, I wouldn't be staying here to defend this stingy old miser. This is your first time carrying out a Physical Jewel Consolidating Equipment right? Go on in, I will teach you how to use the Consolidating Equipment Scroll."

Zhou Weiqing entered the room with Feng Yu, in comparison with the elegant main room earlier, this room was totally empty.

Feng Yu said: "No choice, Huyan Old Man was too stingy. Just sit on the ground."

Zhou Weiqing followed suit and sat on the ground, and Feng Yu sat down opposite him, taking the wooden box from him.

As he opened the lid, Zhou Weiqing was surprised to see that the so-called Consolidating Equipment Scroll was not a single one, but

instead was a thick stack of them. The uppermost one had an extremely complex pattern, and he could see indistinctly, at the center of those patterns, there was a semblance of resemblance to the Overlord Bow on the picture earlier.

“So many!” Zhou Weiqing said in surprise.

Feng Yu said: “Didn’t you hear what Huyan Old Man said earlier? With his grandmaster standard, the success rate of Consolidating Equipment Scrolls is still only 1%. Actually, the most important judgement standard of a grandmaster is, out of 100 Consolidating Equipment Scrolls at least one will succeed for sure. For lower grade Consolidating Equipment Masters, this is difficult to say. Although Consolidating Equipment Masters can earn money, but it is actually very difficult to practice, even if they have the Spatial Attribute Elemental Jewel, but they still need to go through painstaking efforts. The Consolidating Equipment Masters who have low success rates will have less patronage, that’s the reason why there are so few Consolidating Equipment Masters.”

As he said that, he took up the uppermost Consolidating Equipment Scroll and handed it to Zhou Weiqing.

Zhou Weiqing was finally able to examine the Consolidating Equipment Scroll closely, and he found that it was made from a special leather as the foundation material, the patterns on it were lively and of rich colours, almost as if it were living even. Although he only had one set of Heavenly Jewels, he could clearly sense the strong special fluctuation of energy in this small leather scroll.

“You can only carry out one Physical Jewel Consolidating

Equipment every day, and doing so will also consume more than 50% of your Heavenly Energy, so you should not be startled when that happens later. Now, you can start activating your Heavenly Energy and move it to your Physical Jewel, then rest your right hand on the scroll and silently feel it. You do not need to do anything else, your Physical Jewel should naturally start communication with the Consolidating Equipment Scroll under the stimulation of your Heavenly Energy.”

“Thank you Senior.” Although Zhou Weiqing was quite the prankster, but he was not a person who didn’t know how to differentiate good from bad, and he definitely had a very favorable impression of this good-tempered Upper Level Zong Physical Jewel Master.

Focusing his will, he guided his Heavenly Energy from his Dantian upwards in a cycle, and as the Heavenly Energy passed by the right shoulder’s Clavicle Acupuncture Point, the energy whirlpool immediately increased in speed. The Taiyuan Acupuncture Point Released the Icy Jade Physical Jewel, and under the injection of Heavenly Energy, released a layer of icy mist fog immediately, and the familiar intense feeling of strength swept through his whole body instantaneously. Zhou Weiqing does not dare pause, pulling up his right arm’s sleeve with his left hand, his right palm pressing down onto the Consolidating Equipment Scroll.

Looking at Zhou Weiqing’s pure Icy Jade Physical Jewel, Feng Yu’s eyes couldn’t help but reveal a flash of envy.

In the instance when his palm made contact with the scroll, Zhou

Weiying could feel a huge suction from the Consolidating Equipment Scroll suddenly, and the Heavenly Energy flowed in a torrent outwards. The patterns on the Consolidating Equipment Scroll shone out brightly instantaneously, and a special strange feeling spread over Zhou Weiying's whole body. It was as if a strange strength was swallowing his Heavenly Energy while sweeping across his entire body.

The Consolidating Equipment Scroll vanished in the next instance, warping into a burst of bright light encircling Zhou Weiying's right wrist, and in Zhou Weiying's mind the image of a longbow appeared suddenly, exactly the same as the picture on the table earlier. A strong intense ferocious feel arose in him, flying quickly into the Icy Jade Physical Jewel in his right hand.

The Heavenly Jewels of Heavenly Jewel Masters were always together, at the same time his Physical Jewel was being utilized, Zhou Weiying's Alexandrite Cat's Eye also appeared under the cover of his sleeves. What made Zhou Weiying most startled was that the six color wheel disk had unexpectedly started spinning at top speed when he started on the Physical Jewel Consolidating Equipment. As it revolved, both the black and grey coloured regions were twinkling brightly, absorbing the Heavenly Energy from his body, causing his Heavenly Energy consumption to dramatically increase.

Chapter 13 – An eye for an eye, a tooth for a tooth (4)

Zhou Weiqing was given a huge scare. What was going on? Still, no matter what, he could not stop everything from happening now.

After approximately three seconds, for the six color wheel disk in Zhou Weiqing's eyes, the black region representing the darkness attribute and the grey region representing the evil attribute suddenly superposed together unexpectedly. A strange unusual feeling overwhelmed Zhou Weiqing's whole body, and the weird winged black tiger appeared in his mind again; this time with its mouth opened wide, as if trying to swallow something.

What Zhou Weiqing himself couldn't see was that at this very moment, a black-grey tattoo started spreading out from his right shoulder, and in a short while it had reached his right wrist.

In the next instance, the Consolidating Equipment Scroll which had been swallowing his Heavenly Energy suddenly stopped. Instead, Zhou Weiqing felt that the Taiyuan Acupuncture Point, one of the four Death Acupuncture Point that he had broken through, had suddenly opened like a huge mouth, and suddenly the bright light which the Consolidating Equipment Scroll had warped into was swallowed instantaneously by it.

Due to the bright light from the Consolidating Equipment Scroll, it actually caused Feng Yu not miss seeing the black tattoo on Zhou Weiqing's arm which disappeared quickly after, but he actually clearly saw the Consolidating Equipment Scroll get absorbed into

Zhou Weiqing's Physical Jewel, and he was so surprised that his jaw dropped.

An indescribable feeling of fulfilment appeared in Zhou Weiqing's mind, after the six color wheel disk had completely swallowed the Consolidating Equipment Scroll's light, and in the next moment it had restored to its normal six color region state. Zhou Weiqing felt as if his Physical Jewel had come to life, the feeling of being connected to it and the burst of strength it filled him with made his whole spirit feel stimulated.

A low cry resounded out from Zhou Weiqing, and the one-third Heavenly Energy that he had left started pouring into his Icy Jade Physical Jewel. A strong ferocious aura erupted from his wrist, and the Physical Jewel separated from his wrist to fall into his palm.

When Zhou Weiqing's closed his palm around the Physical Jewel and grasped it firmly, immediately, two bright white lights simultaneously emitted out from his palm into two directions, and in the next instant, it had changed into a 1.5m wide longbow without a bowstring in his grasp.

As compared to the picture earlier, this longbow was full of the sense of reality, its entire body looked like it had been carved out of Icy Jade, glittering with beauty and surrounded with a shimmering icy mist, its streamline shape seemed like a ferocious beast giving forth a domineering aura.

Zhou Weiqing lifted the Overlord Bow, and immediately, a sense like he was connected to the bow by his arm made him instantly fall in love with the bow. Although he had previously favoured the

Consolidated Equipment Scroll of the Xuan Wu Shield, but after he had just succeeded in Consolidating Equipment with the Overlord Bow, his heart was flooding with satisfaction.

“Senior, how come this does not have a bowstring?” Zhou Weiqing looked at his Overlord Bow and asked doubtfully.

Feng Yu said in a bit of a shock: “You need to continue pouring in Heavenly Energy, if you just reached the fourth stage of Heavenly Energy, you will need at least half of your Heavenly Energy to full form this bow, even the bowstring requires your Heavenly Energy to take shape.”

Zhou Weiqing said in realization: “I see, my Heavenly Energy is insufficient to form the bowstring. Alright, I will try again later.” As he withdrew his Heavenly Energy, the Overlord Bow disappeared quietly, forming back into his Icy Jade Physical Jewel to encircle his wrist again. However, the Physical Jewel’s brilliance was a lot dimmer now, as Zhou Weiqing did not have much Heavenly Energy left.

“It doesn’t seem that difficult for Physical Jewels to Consolidate Equipment? I just succeeded like that.” Zhou Weiqing said with much satisfaction as he withdrew his Physical Jewel.

“Kid, are you really a human?” Feng Yu sighed out the breath he had been holding, staring at Zhou Weiqing, his face full of shock.

Zhou Weiqing also stared back with eyes wide open, “Senior, how can you curse at people?”

Feng Yu said with a bitter smile: “I am not scolding you, I’m praising you. Do you really think Physical Jewel Consolidating Equipment is easy? Even though I have all nine Physical Jewels complete, but I have never thought that Physical Jewel Consolidating Equipment is easy. The reason why your little girlfriend led you here to look for Huyan Old Man, is because his grandmaster level Consolidating Equipment Scrolls that he makes, although they are expensive, but you are actually guaranteed success. Even so, 100 of them are still required to guarantee. I have never actually seen someone like you who was able to complete see have been able to complete Physical Jewel Consolidating Equipment with just a single Consolidating Equipment Scroll. Furthermore, it was your first time using a Consolidating Equipment Scroll. This has completely gone beyond my knowledge of Physical Jewel Consolidating Equipment!”

Zhou Weiqing thought quickly and thought he understood, he guessed that perhaps the reason for his smooth success was probably his six attributes, especially the black and grey regions as they superimposed with each other. However, he did not want to reveal his secret, so he smiled and said: “Didn’t you say that Huyan Senior’s Consolidating Equipment Scroll’s success rate was 1%, naturally it’s also possible for this 1% to be done on the first or the last scroll right? Shouldn’t that be normal?”

Feng Yu said helpless: “That is true theoretically speaking, however in my sixty years of experience I have never seen or heard of anyone who succeeded on their first use of Consolidating Equipment Scrolls.”

“60 years? Senior, aren’t you joking with me?” Zhou Weiqing

was rather startled. From his look, Feng Yu was at most forty-year-old.

Feng Yu laughed and said: “Kid, my actual physical age is only younger than Huyan Old Man by one year. Why do you think he calls me Feng Yu Old Man as well? He is 75 years old this year, and I am 74 years old. When you compare the two, Physical Jewel Masters of the same rank will probably lose to Elemental Jewel Masters, but their greatest gain is that they have a strong anti-aging. After all, what we do is strengthening the body, while they are controlling the elements. However, as long as you are a Jewel Master, you will at least have 150 years lifespan. You Heavenly Jewel Masters have an even longer lifespan, there are those over 200 years old who are extremely formidable existences, when they stomp their feet, the four seas will tremble. The road in front of you is very very long, you need to put in much more effort along the way.”

Upon hearing that, Zhou Weiqing was delighted, “So Heavenly Jewel Masters can have such a long lifespan, I have really gained a lot. Oh right, Senior, can I still keep this remaining 99 scrolls?”

Feng Yu passed Zhou Weiqing the wooden box, saying with a faint smile: “Hey kid, do you know why I took a liking to you?”

“Why?” Zhou Weiqing carefully took the box and covered it, then swiftly stored it in his own bag.

Feng Yu said: “Because you are not artificial. A real villain who shows his colours is better than a hypocritical gentleman. Furthermore, you, this child, are also not a villain. Certainly, I am

very curious, for someone so young, who did you learn to be such a ruffian from.”

In Zhou Weiqing’s mind flashed a rascally old man’s image immediately, though that was clearly not his father. Smiling, he said: “That... I cannot say.”

Chapter 14 – Physical Jewel Consolidated Equipment Sets

Feng Yu stood up, saying: “I estimate that your little girlfriend probably will not be able to complete her Consolidating Equipment in such a short time could, let’s go look for Huyan Old Man first to consider the future now okay.”

The two of them left the empty room, returning to the main room that they had come from earlier, barely a short while ago. Zhou Weiqing followed behind Feng Yu, his mind lost in thought. He was getting more and more curious about the black winged tiger that appeared in his mind. Without a doubt, the reason why he could become a Heavenly Jewel Master and also succeed in cultivating the Immortal Deity Technique, and even his easy success with Consolidating Equipment, definitely had a close relationship with that black pearl that he had eaten.

Returning to the main hall, as soon as Feng Yu entered the room he saw that Huyan Aobo was there pacing back and forth, looking somewhat anxious.

“Eh? Why are you two back so quickly?” Huyan Aobo looked doubtfully at Zhou Weiqing who had come in together with Feng Yu.

Zhou Weiqing grinned and said: “Heh, once I’ve handled things, of course I’ll come back right?”

Feng Yu said: “Huyan Old Man, I think that we have met with a

true talent, his first time using a Consolidating Equipment Scroll and he succeeded. Have you ever witnessed something like that before? In any case, I've never heard of such a thing."

Huyan Aobo looked with surprise at Zhou Weiqing, "Little brother, your luck is just too good right, you succeeded with just one scroll? Where are the surplus scrolls?" Just like talking trash was Zhou Weiqing's habit, the disposition of being stingy was already deep down in the marrow of Huyan Aobo's bones.

Zhou Weiqing instantaneously put on a righteous face and said, "Huyan Senior, gifts that have been given out, how can they be taken back?"

Huyan Aobo was embarrassed by his words, and said to himself: "Could this really be some divine punishment?"

Feng Yu said happily: "Haha, it looks like you, this miser, must give something up now. Stop being so hesitant, just decide quickly."

Huyan Aobo heaved a deep sigh, both his hands holding his big round belly, "Alright, enough, you do not need to come to his aid so subtly. Little brat, show me your Elemental Jewel. As long as we confirm that you have the appropriate Gold-Green Cat's Eye which signifies the Spatial Attribute of the Heavenly Jewel Masters, I will accept you as an apprentice. Later on, I will be responsible for all your Consolidating Equipment and Skill-Storing. That should be okay right."

Zhou Weiqing immediately shook his head, swinging it so vigorously like a [Bu Leng drum](#).

Huyan Aobo said angrily: “What else do you want??”

Zhou Weiqing said aggrievedly: “Senior, you don’t have to be so fierce. You must think, husband and wife are a linked together as one, how about my wife? Furthermore, we must add on one more rule, you cannot restrict my freedom.”

Huyan Aobo immediately started breathing rapidly again, “Little brat, you are taking advantage of me. I’ve never seen such a disciple.”

Zhou Weiqing smiled and said: “Haha, I’ve also never seen such a stingy person like you! You’ll get used to it, you’ll get used to it.”

Huyan Aobo looked with a face of pain to Feng Yu, but Feng Yu actually looked up into the sky, with the innocent look that all of this did not concern him.

“Feng Yu, you cannot defend him earlier for nothing, from now on their Elemental Jewel Skill Storing I’ll depend on you to be responsible for. I will deal with all their Consolidating Equipment, okay?”

Feng Yu nodded and said: “For below six jewels, I will be responsible. Anyway I am idling around nowadays, going around with the young people is much better than staying with you, old

thing.”

Huyan Aobo gave a humph and said: “Okay, good. Alright brat, I have agreed to your condition. As long as you can overtake me in creating Consolidating Equipment Scrolls, who will limit your freedom? Quickly show me your Elemental Jewel.”

Zhou Weiqing’s eyeballs swirled around as he said: “You must first use your Jewel to make an oath, if my Elemental Jewel contains the Spatial Attribute, you will accept me as disciple and agree to the previous conditions.” When he swore his own vows he had been slippery and deceitful by using the fake name, but he could see from Shangguan Bing’er’s expression at that time, for Jewel Masters, pledging an oath with their Jewels was truly a very serious pledge.

Huyan Aobo scolded: “I have never seen such a sly brat like you.” Although he was stingy, but once he decided on something he no longer wasted any time, and he lifted his left hand, immediately, a layer of dim silver light covered his body, and Zhou Weiqing could clearly seeing seven green color Cat’s Eye Jewels simultaneously appear to revolve around his wrist.

Seven Spatial Attribute Elemental Jewels, that was the rank of a lower position Zong Elemental Jewel Master! Not only was this fat old man a Consolidating Equipment Master, he was unexpectedly of such high ranking, indeed you can never judge a book by its cover.

For ordinary Elemental Jewels, the Spatial Attribute is denoted by the green coloured Cat’s Eye Jewel, but for Heavenly Jewel

Masters, it is the highest quality Cat's Eye Jewel, the gold green Cat's Eye that Huyan Aobo mentioned earlier.

The seven green Cat's Eye Jewels looked like seven eyes glittering with a strange light, and Huyan Aobo solemnly took the oath by the seven Jewels as according to what Zhou Weiqing had requested. When he said the last few words, the seven Jewels simultaneously flashed with a bright light, and a silver light flashed from the sky to strike Huyan Aobo's brow area, and a light tattoo appeared for a while before vanishing.

Huyan Aobo completed his oath, and in his heart was a little uncomfortable, he gave a humph and said impatiently: "Brat, that is okay already right. Quickly."

Zhou Weiqing smiled and said: "Heh, two Seniors, the time to witness a miracle has arrived, I hope your hearts do not have any problems, and you are not frightened by my sheer genius talent of my Elemental Jewel."

Huyan Aobo said exasperatedly: "Little Brat, your remarks are too much, as if I haven't seen the gold green Cat's Eye before....." Just as he was saying those words, Zhou Weiqing pulled up the sleeves of his left hand and Released his Elemental Jewel from his Taiyuan Acupuncture Point, and the rest of his words died in his throat.

Feng Yu originally had a very happy look as Zhou Weiqing was teasing Huyan Aobo, but as soon as Zhou Weiqing's Elemental Jewel appeared in front of them, his face instantly changed and froze.

It was still a Cat's Eye Jewel, and there was only that single one around Zhou Weiqing's wrist, but it was not the gold green colour they had expected, but instead a noble looking deep red like a ruby.

Feng Yu and Huyan Aobo had been in the world of Jewel Masters for over 60 years, yet this was the first time they had ever seen such an unusual Cat's Eye Jewel.

The room was filled with silence, so much so that even a fallen needle could be heard instantly. Feng Yu and Huyan Aobo's gazes were locked on the Elemental Jewel around Zhou Weiqing's left wrist.

"Red, how can it be a red Cat's Eye?" Huyan Aobo finally opened his mouth and muttered.

Zhou Weiqing turned around, shoved open the door and walked outside, "Two seniors, please come here and look again."

Huyan Aobo and Feng Yu quickly followed him, but this time, they were not just startled, but their jaws actually gaped open. It was still the same Cat's Eye Jewel, but this time, its colour had actually turned into a clear sea bluish green. If the red was noble, then this bluish green colour was profound.

Zhou Weiqing said with an innocent look on his face: "I reminded you both a moment ago, this is the time to witness a miracle."

卜楞鼓 – A sort of children's toy that you shake vigorously

Chapter 14 – Physical Jewel Consolidated Equipment Sets (2)

Suddenly, Feng Yu took a quick step forward, grabbing Zhou Weiqing by the left hand, covering his Elemental Jewel and said fiercely: “Quickly Receive it.”

Zhou Weiqing was startled by his quick movement, but Feng Yu was way too fast, so he quickly activated the Taiyuan Acupuncture Point’s energy whirlpool and Withdrew his Elemental Jewel.

As soon as the Elemental Jewel disappeared, Feng Yu and Huyan Aobo also relaxed and sighed in relief. In the next instance, Feng Yu pulled Zhou Weiqing by the arm, and in a quick flash, they appeared back in the room, and slammed shut the door instantaneously. Huyan Aobo, in a swift motion that seemed as if they had trained together innumerable times, his left hand lifted up and his third Cat’s Eye Jewel shone out in a brilliant light, a silver shining light that expanded outward instantaneously to cover the entire room completely. Although Zhou Weiqing did not know what he was doing, but after the silver light dispersed, he actually could no longer hear the sound of the insects from the courtyard outside.

Feng Yu looked up to Huyan Aobo, his face having a strange expression as he said in a low voice: “Is this a miracle? Is there really such a Elemental Jewel?”

Huyan Aobo’s body flashed with a silver light again, and Zhou Weiqing felt a flash before his eyes before that fat old man’s belly had almost bumped into him. Huyan Aobo had both hands firmly

held on his shoulder, and in a rapid speed he asked: “Little Fatty Zhou, tell me, in your Elemental Jewel, besides the Spatial Attribute, is there also the Wind Attribute?”

Zhou Weiqing said with surprise: “How did you know? Can you see the Attributes in my Elemental Jewel?”

Huyan Aobo whole body seemed to deflate and stiffen, and he swallowed hard, in the next instance he loosened his hold on Zhou Weiqing’s shoulder and took two steps back, both his hands forked on his waist.

“Wahahahahaha, Hahaha.....” A demented laughter exploded suddenly, so loud that not only Zhou Weiqing, but also Feng Yu was startled by him. However, this fat old man was actually dancing with joy there, looking at him it seemed like he was excited to the extreme.

Zhou Weiqing gave a bewildered look at Feng Yu and said: “Feng Senior, Huyan Senior isn’t having a fit right?”

Feng Yu looked deeply at Zhou Weiqing, muttering to himself: “Envy, jealous, hate! Little boy, you only have one set of Jewels, how can you dare show your Alexandrite Cat’s Eye to other humans? I never expected that in this world there really exists an Alexandrite Cat’s Eye. Huyan Old Man naturally went crazy, having accepted a disciple with such an Alexandrite Cat’s Eye Jewel. Let alone him, even those Heavenly Jewel Masters with 9 Heavenly Jewels would also be grinning from ear to ear. Furthermore, he did not actually know that you have the Wind Attribute, but was just hoping that you had it. And you really did.

To have both the Spatial and Wind Attributes, it can be said that you are born to be a Consolidating Equipment Master, moreover one of the most outstanding ones.”

Huyan Aobo finally stopped laughing, and when he looked at Zhou Weiqing again, it was as if he was looking at a precious treasure. “Little brat, uh no, my treasured apprentice, you should have said earlier that you had both Spatial and Wind attributes! In that case, I wouldn’t have to waste time considering! Even if this old man goes bankrupt, it will be worth it. Let alone the rank of grandmaster Consolidating Equipment Master, even ZongShi level, or god level, you can also achieve it.”

Zhou Weiqing laughed, stepped forward two steps and held Huyan Aobo’s shoulders, saying with a proud face: “Teacher, you shouldn’t be so excited, I already said that it was the time to witness a miracle. However, just now when you were laughing it really sounded terrible.”

Huyan Aobo was still smiling happily, even though Zhou Weiqing just gave him an insult he didn’t care, he was really just too excited, “Little brat, can’t you be a little more modest?”

Zhou Weiqing said: “My other teacher always said that modesty makes a human regress. If you are not proud of yourself, how can others be proud of you?”

Huyan Aobo’s smiling face froze, “You have another teacher?”

Zhou Weiqing said carelessly: “I’ve hung out with him for two

years, what's wrong? Is there a restriction to number of teachers I can have? However you can rest assured that when I was with that perverted old man, my Heavenly Jewels had not awakened yet. I haven't seen him in a long time, I'm not even sure where he went."

On hearing that, Huyan Aobo relaxed and said: "Since your Heavenly Jewel just awakened, that means you are less than 16 years old. How long till you are 16? To start creating Consolidating Equipment Scrolls, you need to be at least 16 years old, otherwise you do not have grown sufficiently and will not be able to control the materials."

Zhou Weiqing blinked and said: "Teacher, I will be 14 years old in two months time."

"What? You aren't 14 years old yet?" Huyan Aobo said in surprise, staring at him.

Zhou Weiqing said with pride: "No choice, I matured early."

Huyan Aobo shook his head, saying: "I do not mean that, what I mean is that you are only 13 years old and you have so many dirty tricks. I am really suspicious on what your first master has taught you, no wonder you called him a perverted old man, looks like he is not any good thing. You're just 13 years old and you are already like this, I can't imagine when you have grown up!"

"....." Zhou Weiqing scratched his head, "Teacher, I am actually a very proper person, pure and good-hearted. People have given me the nickname 'Honest and dependable little gentleman,

Spotless and beautiful youth.”

“Bah.” Once Huyan Aobo had accepted Zhou Weiqing as his disciple, the arrogance on his face had vanished, and he said with a smile: “You, this little brat, really are a funny little treasure, I really do not know why that so called miracle Alexandrite Cat’s Eye will appear for you. However, since you are still less than 14 years old, evidently you cannot study how to create Consolidating Equipment Scrolls for quite some time. What are you doing in the Heavenly Bow Empire now?”

Zhou Weiqing said: “I’m enlisted in the army, I just joined this year, and I’m in the Heavenly Bow Empire’s Fifth Regiment 3rd Archery Battalion, my wife is the 3rd Battalion’s Commander, I am her Personal Aide.”

Feng Yu gave him a strange look, saying: “You entered the military and Awakened your Heavenly Jewel after right?”

Zhou Weiqing nodded, “How did you know?”

Feng Yu said with a smile: “Silly kid, if you were a Heavenly Jewel Master before your enlistment, with the Heavenly Bow Empire’s lack of Jewel Masters, wouldn’t they treat you as an absolute treasure! Your little girlfriend, I remember her, she is known as the greatest genius in the younger generation of Heavenly Bow Empire. Well, it is very good to be in the military now, it will help you to conceal your ability. Besides your little girlfriend, does anyone else know about your Alexandrite Cat’s Eye Elemental Jewel?”

Zhou Weiqing said: “Just two more.”

Feng Yu was taken aback, and at the other side, Huyan Aobo suddenly had an imposing aura of bloodlust, giving out a hand signal and said, “That is not good. We should kill them to eliminate a potential information leak.”

Zhou Weiqing laughed, “Teacher, do you want to commit suicide? The two that I mentioned, isn’t it you and Feng Yu Senior?”

Huyan Aobo gawked in surprise, “Damn brat, you better speak properly to me. You must remember, as long as you have not broken through six sets of Heavenly Jewels and entering the Heavenly Zong State, you must ensure that as few people as possible know about your Alexandrite Cat’s Eye okay? Otherwise, you will face two types of people. One will be resorting to all means to win you over or recruit you, and the other type will be resorting to all means to kill you.”

Chapter 14 – Physical Jewel Consolidated Equipment Sets (3)

Zhou Weiqing nodded his head and said: “I know, generally geniuses are the target of much envy and jealousy.”

Huyan Aobo looked at his complacent proud appearance and almost couldn't help but thwap him with his palm, “Damnit, Your Father, I, am starting to suspect that accepting you as a disciple is a good thing or a mistake that this old man made late in his life that will cause me to lose everything.”

Zhou Weiqing said with a grin: “Heh, Teacher, did you forget? You had just taken an oath by your Elemental Jewels a moment ago, it's too late for regrets.”

“I” Once again Huyan Aobo felt the urge to choke Zhou Weiqing to death. However, he was quick he relax once again. After all, he was not a little girl like Shangguan Bing'er, having such an apprentice, although it might give him a headache, but from another perspective, such an apprentice would obviously have a much strong survival capabilities than an honest child.

“Teacher, I have made a mistake, do not be angry. Have you ever heard of any other places where Heavenly Jewel Masters with the Alexandrite Cat's Eye has appeared?” Zhou Weiqing asked curiously.

Huyan Aobo looked at Feng Yu, and they both shook their heads simultaneously. Huyan Aobo said: “The Alexandrite Cat's Eye

Jewel should have appeared before, but that belongs to the realm of Heavenly Jewel Masters. Both I and Feng Yu are ordinary Jewel Masters, and we have very limited understanding regarding Heavenly Jewel Masters. In this world, many places belong to the domain of Heavenly Jewel Masters specifically. I believe that there definitely should have some Alexandrite Cat's Eye Jewels existing, but where or how many is not to my knowledge.”

Zhou Weiqing said: “So mysterious!”

Feng Yu sighed and said: “Although Heavenly Jewel Masters are considered a type of Jewel Master, but in fact, Heavenly Jewel Masters are many levels above ordinary Physical and Elemental Jewel Masters. It is not just that the total sets of Jewels already outnumber the ordinary Jewel Masters, but even a Heavenly Jewel Masters of the same level as an ordinary Jewel Master will be a lot stronger. For example, I have nine Physical Jewels, but if I am compared to a Heavenly Jewel Master with nine sets of Heavenly Jewels, it is like the difference between heaven and earth. Even if there were a hundred of me, we would still probably lose to one of Upper Level Heavenly Zong Jewel Master like that. Little Fatty, you have an exceptional talent, and you need to treasure it well and work hard.”

Zhou Weiqing nodded and said: “I will.”

Huyan Aobo hesitated and said solemnly: “Since you have already chosen to enlist in the military, after that little girl has completed her Consolidated Equipment, you can go back to the military compound with her first. The Heavenly Bow Empire is not fighting any war now, and the military compound is one of the

best places to conceal your Alexandrite Cat's Eye Jewel. That little girl should also be able to protect you, and you can practice hard there, train up and store your strength. When you reach 16 years old, your teacher will naturally look for you and teach you the arts of creating Consolidating Equipment Scrolls."

"Okay, good." Zhou Weiqing complied happily. Although he did want to learn how to make the Consolidating Equipment Scroll, but he also did not want to leave Shangguan Bing'er, and having these two extra years would be just great.

Huyan Aobo continued saying: "Although the possibility of you promoting to your second set of Jewels in two years is not likely, but I must still remind you. From now on, all your Physical Jewel Consolidating Equipment needs to be permitted by me your teacher, you cannot use any other Consolidating Equipment Scrolls easily."

Zhou Weiqing said with a smile: "Teacher you can rest assured that I will never buy one when I have a free one to use. Furthermore, I do not have the money."

Huyan Aobo's face fell, "I am not joking with you, this relates seriously to your future achievement. Ok, I must tempt you in order to ensure you this boy will listen. Feng Yu, let him have a look."

Feng Yu and Huyan Aobo have been staying together for many years, and he naturally understood the meaning of his words. With a very serious look on his face, he held up his right hand, and layers of gentle light appeared from his wrist and dispersed

outwards. Nine Jade Physical Jewels simultaneously appeared around his wrist.

Feng Yu was only a Physical Jewel Master, and thus his Physical Jewel was a mixed coloured Jade. About one-third of it was the Icy variant, while the other two-thirds was actually totally the Red Jade, for Physical Jewels that represented the Coordination boost.

The nine Red/Icy Jade Physical Jewels encircled Feng Yu's wrist, and although he had not activated much Heavenly Energy yet, but Zhou Weiqing could sense an admirable and indomitable aura when he looked at him.

Just at this moment, all of a sudden, five of the nine Physical Jewels around Feng Yu's wrist flew off quickly; they had moved so fast that Zhou Weiqing had not clearly seen which order those five Physical Jewels had been.

After those five Physical Jewels flew apart, they fell onto the forehead position between the eyebrows, chest, lower abdomen as well as two at the shoulders of Feng Yu respectively. The five Physical Jewels seemed to melt into Feng Yu's body, starting from the forehead, where a twin-coloured hard helmet of similar appearance to his Physical Jewel appeared. It was then followed by a Heart-Protection Mirror at his chest, then a Protective Waistband around the waist, and finally a shoulder pauldrons on the shoulders.

Once the five Physical Jewels had finished Consolidating in their respective Equipments, a strange scene followed. Each of the respective armour pieces shot out rays of light which spread out

and linked up with each other, connecting in a bright flash suddenly. The armour pieces which had only protected the five individual positions had suddenly turned into a full-body armour. to turn into the whole body armor unexpectedly. It seemed though that besides the five main positions, the other areas of the armor seemed rather shadowy and a bit unreal, but they definitely covered and protected the whole of Feng Yu's body.

The suit of armour was not very beautiful, and did not have any unnecessary patterns or designs, but it seemed simple and in harmony, giving forth the impression of intense strength. Feng Yu seemed to look like a totally changed person after Consolidating this suit of Armor, as if all his actions were graced by a halo of light, making it seem as if any movement of him held an explosive strength that could burst out upon his will.

Huyan Aobo, as the Consolidating Equipment Master, explained from the side: "Do you see that? If they are just ordinary Consolidated Equipment, those five Physical Jewels of his can be said to be rather trash, being only able to defend such a small part of the body, how much use can it be at a cost of five Jewels? However, after these five Physical Jewel Consolidated Equipment, they actually protected the entire body, that is the main difference. With this whole body armor, even if Feng Yu is facing a Upper Level Heavenly Zong Jewel Master, he will at least be able to last several rounds of attacks, and not be instantly killed."

"This is the final and deepest secret of Consolidating Equipment – Set Armors. When a full set of Consolidated Equipment Scrolls are used by the same Jewel Master, they will be able to resonate and communicate with each other, allowing an improved overall superimposed protection range. To create such a Consolidating

Equipment Set Scrolls, it requires at least the Grandmaster standard like myself. However, even for myself, I can at most only create a set of five or six Physical Jewel Consolidating Equipments. Yet, when a set consists of more Physical Jewel Consolidated Equipments, the entire set will become much more formidable.”

“Legend says that Consolidating Equipment Masters of the Zong Level can create Sets that include eight Physical Jewel Consolidated Equipments. Only God Level Masters can create Sets that are composed of ten Physical Jewel Consolidated Equipments. You have currently already Consolidated the Overlord Bow now. In the future, you will at most be able to have another 11 more Physical Jewels to Consolidate Equipment, of course that is on the condition that you are capable of breaking through to the Heavenly Zong Level. However, in any case, since you have the genius talent of the Alexandrite Cat’s Eye, it is possible you reach this Level. Therefore, from the next Physical Jewel onwards, you need to prepare for your Physical Jewel Consolidated Equipment Set! You definitely cannot waste any more Physical Jewels.”

Chapter 14 – Physical Jewel Consolidated Equipment Sets (4)

After hearing Huyan Aobo's words, Zhou Weiqing's eyes both lit up in joy, his heart fiery with passion. When he had first heard of Physical Jewel Consolidating Equipment, he had told Shangguan Bing'er that he had wanted a set of high defense armor to protect his precious life. Now, wasn't this Consolidating Equipment Set Armor just what he wanted? Now that it was place right before him as an opportunity, how could he possibly not be excited? As he listened to Huyan Aobo's words, he nodded his head quickly and repeatedly in agreement.

After Huyan Aobo spoke these words, his eyes revealed a proud light. "If one day, my disciple can have a full set of ten God Level Consolidated Equipment Sets, I will not have lived in vain. Little Fatty, you do not need to care about the Consolidated Equipment Scrolls at all, you just need to practice hard and cultivate with your best efforts. These next two years will be especially important to you, and without creating Consolidating Equipment Scrolls to divert your attention, you must practice wholeheartedly with every possible effort, understood?"

Zhou Weiqing said seriously with a very resolute look on his face: "Teacher, you can rest assured that I will try extremely hard even if you did not ask me to." For the sake of this formidable Consolidated Equipment Set to protect his life, he will definitely not be lazy.

When humans are alive, as long as they have a goal to work towards, they will not feel empty and lost. It is definitely necessary

to have a goal in order to be competitive and to have the zest to work. This was definitely the situation for Zhou Weiqing. Although he was an intelligent person who liked to do things in the easiest way possible, he was not really a lazy person. This was especially so after the door to the world of Heavenly Jewel Masters had been opened for him, bringing him to a whole new mysterious world. which made him yearn for strength and to become formidable.

Huyan Aobo took down the silver light shield protecting the room, and Feng Yu also released his Consolidated Equipment Set, smiling faintly as he said: “You can go cultivate in that side room while waiting. A servant will bring you food and drinks later, and the bathroom is at the west corner. After that little girl has completed her Consolidated Equipment, you both can leave together. If you need to go out for any reason, just let me or your teacher know first.”

“Many thanks, Feng Yu Senior. Teacher, I’ll go first then.” As he said that, Zhou Weiqing turned and walked out. As he reached the entrance, he suddenly stopped and turned his head, smiling at Huyan Aobo before saying: “Teacher, I think that you really should lose weight.” After he spoke those words, he did not wait for Huyan Aobo to react and he turned around and ran off quickly.

Huyan Aobo took a look at his round belly, while Feng Yu couldn’t help but burst out laughing.

Huyan Aobo shook his head helplessly, “That funny little brat, I will be irritated to death by him sooner or later.”

Feng Yu Wei said with a smile: “Isn’t it good that he has such a personality? Luckily, this child was born in the Heavenly Bow Empire, if he were born in the Fei Li Empire, how could you possibly have the chance to receive him as a disciple?”

Huyan Aobo said with a smile: “This is called ‘A person with luck need not worry’. I had thought that this would be it for my achievements in this life, I never really expected that heaven would actually give me such a huge gift. Feng Yu Old Man, when do you plan to bring my treasured disciple to go Skill-Storing?”

Feng Yu shook his head and said: “I think we should not let him go through Skill-Storing for now at least.”

Huyan Aobo started in surprise, saying: “Why?”

Feng Yu said: “With that kid’s lively personality, if he went through Skill-Storing on his Alexandrite Cat’s Eye, it will be very difficult to guarantee that he will not use it, and that would increase the chance of his Elemental Jewel being found out, which would be very bad. We might as well wait for two years before we decide. At that time, his second set of Heavenly Jewels should be close to cultivated, if not already. After he has 2 sets of Heavenly Jewels, we can go through the Skill-Storing all at once, by that time he can easily protect himself against simple opponents.”

Huyan Aobo thought about it and nodded, saying: “That makes sense. This child came in bearing a longbow on his back, and he is also an archer in the army. That is quite a good choice for him actually. The Alexandrite Cat’s Eye is more than three attributes, I forgot to ask earlier what are his other attributes.”

Feng Yu said with a smile: "It's ok, it's best that we do not ask for now. Too much excitement within a day is not good for the body. Little Fatty Zhou this little kid, is really an interesting fellow."

Zhou Weiqing did not return to the room where he went through the Physical Jewel Consolidating Equipment, but instead went directly to outside Shangguan Bing'er's room, and lifted his hand to knock on the door, calling out: "Wife, how was your Consolidating Equipment?" Since Feng Yu had said that they could only go through Consolidating Equipment once a day, he thought that Shangguan Bing'er would probably be finished by now, regardless of whether she succeeded or not.

As he had guessed, the door opened, and the angry and embarrassed Shangguan Bing'er appeared before Zhou Weiqing, saying in a low tone: "Who is your wife?! Come in!" She seized him by the ear, dragging him into the room.

"Aiyo, that hurts! Wife, are you trying to murder your husband? That is a serious crime!" Zhou Weiqing, even while he was in pain, did not forget to take advantage with his mouth first.

"You still dare to say?" Shangguan Bing'er's fingers who were holding his ear twisted in a 90 degree motion, instantly causing Zhou Weiqing to shout out in pain again and again, shouting out that he dared not already, before Shangguan Bing'er finally let go.

This room was exactly the same as the one that Zhou Weiqing had been in, completely empty of any furnishing. Zhou Weiqing

looked at the wooden box on the ground and asked, “Wife, err... no, Battalion Commander, how did your Consolidating Equipment go?”

Shangguan Bing'er's expression turned slightly better, “I have already gone through the Consolidating Equipment of today, and was cultivating to restore my Heavenly Energy. I did have some experience and understanding after today's try. You must repeatedly feel and try to understand the energy contained within the Scroll when you go through Consolidating Equipment, when you just start, failure is inevitable, but once we deepen our understandings, we can succeed quickly.”

Zhou Weiqing grinned as he shrugged, saying: “But, I have already succeeded!”

Shangguan Bing'er said exasperatedly: “[Do not blow hot air](#). You being shameless is one thing, but I really hate people who just talk big without results.”

Zhou Weiqing said with an innocent expression: “Even if I must blow, I'll also blow you, not blow cows. Alas, I do not have sufficient Heavenly Energy currently, or I would release my incomparably suave Overlord Bow for you to see.”

Shangguan Bing'er said with disbelief: “You really succeeded in Consolidating Equipment?”

Zhou Weiqing stuck out his chest and said: “Of course! Having such a talented genius husband, aren't you very proud?”

Shangguan Bing'er was so full of shock that she did not even notice Zhou Weiqing taking advantage of her with his words as usual, muttering to herself: "That's impossible! Since when is it possible to succeed on the first try of Consolidating Equipment. Did Feng Yu senior help you with some special method?"

Zhou Weiqing shook his head, and explained everything that occurred earlier in detail to her, including his Darkness and Evil attributes superimposing together to aid his Consolidating Equipment. His Heavenly Jewel was awakened due to Shangguan Bing'er's sacrifice, and he did not want to conceal anything from her. If Shangguan Bing'er wanted to be do anything disadvantageous to him, even a hundred of him would have died by now. Therefore, after after leaving home, the person he trusted the most was her.

Listening to the entire process that Zhou Weiqing related in detail, Shangguan Bing'er's eyes couldn't help but reveal a tinge of envy, but she said: "You take too many risks. The secret of your Alexandrite Cat's Eye, the fewer people who know it the better."

Zhou Weiqing said helplessly: "We used his Consolidating Equipment Scroll for free, if I did not reveal to him, with my teacher's stingy personality, he will probably not allow us to leave so easily! Furthermore, with his oath by his Elemental Jewel, we do not need to fear anymore."

吹牛 literally translates to 'Blow Cow', means to boast and brag about something that they did not do – the reason why I wrote the literal translation here is because he makes a pun about it in the next paragraph which is impossible to translate properly so I'll just

do it literally.

Chapter 14 – Physical Jewel Consolidated Equipment Sets (5)

“En. Since that’s the case, you can just wait here for me to finish Consolidating Equipment, then we will both leave together. With Huyan Senior as your teacher, your cultivation path in the future will be much smoother.”

Zhou Weiqing said with a grin: “It is not I, it is we. Teacher promised to help us both with our Consolidating Equipment and Skill-Storing.”

“I do not need it.” Shangguan Bing’er said passively. “I may not have much money now, but when I have enough funds, I will return Huyan Senior the money for the Wind Wielding Boots Scroll. Also, Little Fatty Zhou, let me emphasize again, You are you, and I am my ownself. We do not have any special relations at all. I will cultivate with my own efforts, and I do not need you to give me anything.”

Looking at the resolute look in Shangguan Bing’er’s eyes, Zhou Weiqing grew silent.

When Shangguan Bing’er said these words, her heart did not feel good, but she definitely did not want Zhou Weiqing to take advantage of her just because of free Consolidating Equipment and Skill-Storing, even if the advantage was just words. Although she had already lost her first time to him, but she would not allow anyone to trample upon her dignity. She deeply remembered that when she was very young, her mother had said to her – If you want others to respect you, then you must want respect yourself.

Looking at Zhou Weiqing who had gone silent, Shangguan Bing'er thought that he had gotten angry, and was somewhat apologetic in her heart as well. Just as she was about to try saying something to ease up the atmosphere, Zhou Weiqing actually raised his head up again.

Zhou Weiqing gave a thumbs-up to Shangguan Bing'er, saying: "Very good, Battalion Commander, you are truly our Heavenly Bow Empire's Viscount. Self-respect, always striving to improve and self-love. With those words you spoke a moment ago, I have found that I have a deeper understanding about you, and also a greater admiration for you. This has also strengthened my conviction to pursue you. You will definitely become my wife!"

Looking at him saying that with such a serious face, yet such teasing words, Shangguan Bing'er felt a sense of helplessness. How could she be so foolish as to think so much. How could such a shameless fellow be angry?

"You rascal, get lost now. I will not give you the opportunity!"

In the previous instance Zhou Weiqing had been totally serious, the next moment his expression turned into a deeply loving look as he stared at Shangguan Bing'er affectionately, saying: "How do you know my childhood nickname?"

Shangguan Bing'er did not understand what he meant, and gave him a querying look: "What did you say?"

Zhou Weiqing continued to gaze at her affectionately, “I meant that my childhood nickname was called Rascal Ah!”

“Get lost –!” Shangguan Bing’er let loose a flying kick onto that rascal, she did not know that if she continued staying in the same room as him, she would go crazy.

Zhou Weiqing dodged quickly, did a lazy roll, and actually tumbled a few meters before jumping up quickly. He did not actually exit the room, but instead stuck his head out the door and looked around.

Just as Shangguan Bing’er was about to land a foot on his ass to kick him out, that fellow actually turned his head back with a mysterious manner. With a lowered voice, he said: “Battalion Commander, I’m not joking with you now. Lend me some money, I have some serious use.”

Shangguan Bing’er said suspiciously: “What do you need to borrow money for?”

Zhou Weiqing took a step forward, and was about to whisper in her ear, but Shangguan Bing’er took a vigilant step back, keeping her distance as she said: “You can stand there and say. If you do not convince me clearly, I will not lend you the money.”

Zhou Weiqing said in a low voice: “I want to go to Skill-Store my Elemental Jewel by myself.”

“En?” Shangguan Bing’er looked at him surprisedly, saying: “Why? Didn’t you say that Feng Yu Senior will help you with the Skill-Storing?”

Zhou Weiqing said with a strong sense of righteousness: “I thought that what you said was very true, we cannot owe others too much. Therefore, I decided to go about the Skill-Storing by myself.”

Shangguan Bing’er said with a cold humph: “Speak the truth.”

Zhou Weiqing’s face fell immediately: “I knew that I cannot hide the truth from you. I actually just wanted to borrow 2000 gold coins. Didn’t you say that Skill-Storing cost 500 gold coins for one try? I wanted to test whether my Darkness and Evil attributes will superimpose again and help in Skill-Storing for my Elemental Jewels as well. If that is true, then perhaps I can also succeed in Skill-Storing for my Elemental Jewels in a single try?”

Shangguan Bing’er’s eyes brightened, “That makes sense, but, I will go with you.”

Zhou Weiqing said: “Don’t you trust me? I will not use your money to do any misdeeds. The money that the wife gives, I must naturally use it in the proper place.”

Anger flashed in Shangguan Bing’er’s eyes and killing intent rose: “Little Fatty Zhou, what did you call me?”

“Battalion Commander, I certainly called you my Battalion Commander.”

Shangguan Bing'er gave a humph, “I’m going with you to help you with your cover, otherwise, if it is only you by yourself, it is easy to arouse suspicion.” Actually, her original intention was truly to monitor that this rascal was really goes to the Skill-Storing Palace.

Zhou Wei nodded and said: “Okay, we will go and try tomorrow, after all Skill-Storing can only be attempted once a day, and I currently do not have sufficient Heavenly Energy.”

Shangguan Bing'er said: “Okay, tomorrow early morning then.”

Zhou Weiqing said: “Good. Then we should rest early today.”

“Less idle talk, go to the hotel to withdraw the room, then come back here to cultivate.” Shangguan Bing'er discovered that the longer she spent together with with Zhou Weiqing, the number of times that she got angry increased by many times as compared to before. Even after she had joined the army, she had tried to be more serious, and she had also occasionally scolded her subordinates. However, that could not compare to this rascal who had angered her so many times.

Zhou Weiqing went to let Huyan Aobo know his whereabouts before heading to the hotel to withdraw their room, then he returned to the little courtyard once again; this time he does not disturb Shangguan Bing'er anymore, but instead went to his own

room.

Feeling his own Heavenly Energy, Zhou Weiqing discovered that the Heavenly Energy that he had consumed in going through his Physical Jewel Consolidating Equipment trying out his new Overlord Bow, had actually automatically been restored about a third by the four Death Acupuncture Point's energy whirlpools. Focusing his will upon his Heavenly Jewels, his heart itched to try his new abilities.

“How I wish I could find a place to test the might of this Overlord Bow. Alas, I do not have sufficient Heavenly Energy. I wonder with my current amount of Heavenly Energy, how many arrows can I shoot with with this overlord bow. No wonder my beautiful Battalion Commander said that Heavenly Energy is the basis of Jewel Masters. Having insufficient Heavenly Energy is really painful!”

After arriving at Flying Hill City, Zhou Weiqing could be said to have his horizons greatly widened, and had learnt a much greater understanding about Heavenly Jewel Masters. What he really wanted to know most is what fortuitous encounters he would have tomorrow when he went to try out Skill-Storing. What really was that black pearl that he had swallowed? Why was it that the Darkness and Evil Attributes could automatically superimpose?

BOOK 3 – ELEMENTAL JEWEL SKILL- STORING

Chapter 15 – Zong Level Heavenly Beast Elemental Jewel Skill-Storing (1)

In the morning, Zhou Weiqing arose from his cultivation.

He took a deep breath, his whole body feeling refreshed and energised, and his maximum Heavenly Energy seemed to have increased.

This was his first time that he had replaced actual sleep with cultivation, and although it was not as comfortable as sleeping, but that energetic feeling he had now actually felt better than after a night of sleep.

As he shoved open the door, the fresh air from the rushed in, causing him to breathe in deeply, and in a huge breath expelled all the foul air from his body gathered through the night of cultivation, and he felt a refreshing feeling course through his body.

All of a sudden, he recalled the words that his first master had told him two years ago when they were parting: “You are now just a little rascal, but you are still far off from the true mastery of being a rogue. The highest state of a rogue is that even when you are being a rogue, others will think of you as a gentleman. When you are facing another rogue, you must be more roguish than him, but when facing a gentleman, you can be more suave and gentlemanly. Only then can you reach the ultimate stage and be a true Rogue, a genuine scoundrel.”

At that point, Zhou Weiqing had just turned 12, and did not really understand those words. However, without knowing the reason, when he ended cultivation and shoved the gate open this morning, a sudden inexplicable feeling overcame, as if he had gained enlightenment on those words.

As enlightenment dawned upon him, Zhou Weiqing said to himself with sudden understanding: “Yes! I’m no longer the trash of before, I do not need those low level rascally methods to conceal myself anymore. I am a great Heavenly Jewel Master. What is a Heavenly Jewel Master? Isn’t that a great person who can be a True Rascal?” At this moment, it was as if he had truly grown up and matured, his mental age growing even further from his actual age of 13.

In the short amount of time that he was muttering to himself, the door to the side opened, and Shangguan Bing’er walked out from next door, both hands held up as she stretched, under the shining light of the sun, her beautiful figure was revealed to Zhou Weiqing in all her glory.

“So beautiful.” Zhou Weiqing couldn’t help but sigh in praise.

Shangguan Bing’er turned her head around and gave him a cold glare, but Zhou Weiqing just gave her a faint smile and said: “Battalion Commander, let’s go eat now.”

After saying that, he turned and walked out of the room towards the dining hall.

Shangguan Bing'er actually paused in surprise, at that moment, she almost thought she had recognized the wrong person, Zhou Weiqing's bright smiling face had been shining with sincerity, was that really the rascally Little Fatty Zhou?

During their whole meal, Zhou Weiqing did not speak to Shangguan Bing'er at all, and after quickly wolfing down his breakfast, he went to Huyan Aobo and told him that he and Shangguan Bing'er were heading out for a while.

When they left the courtyard, they headed to the Skill-Storing Palace which was just opposite. Before long, they had entered the Skill-Storing Palace, and at that point Shangguan Bing'er finally could not bear it and asked Zhou Weiqing, who was about three steps away from her: "Little Fatty Zhou, are you alright?"

Zhou Weiqing asked curiously: "Yes I'm very good, what issue could I have?"

Naturally, Shangguan Bing'er could not ask him: How come you aren't trash talking to me? With a rather curious frame of mind, they entered the Skill-Storing Palace once more.

The Heavenly Jewel Master badge and Robe that they had just received yesterday was the best pass, and they smoothly entered the Skill-Storing Palace's main hall.

"Battalion Commander, how do I start on Skill Storing later?" Zhou Weiqing asked Shangguan Bing'er.

Shangguan Bing'er said: "The rules of the Skill-Storing Palace are very simple, besides the registration that we went through yesterday, the other nine entrances lead to their respective Heavenly Beast enclosures. According to the order they are separated in, which is – Water, Fire, Earth, Wind, Light, Darkness, Spatial and Life these eight attributes. The last entrance leads to the enclosure to those Heavenly Beasts with some special or unique attributes and abilities."

"Within each attribute's enclosure, the Heavenly Beasts are divided into three stages just like us Jewel Masters, the Shi Stage, Zun Stage and Zong Stage respectively. Entering the Shi Stage region to carry out Skill Storing costs 500 gold coins per try, Zun Stage is 2000 gold coins, and the Zong Stage is 10,000 gold coins."

Zhou Weiqing nodded and said: "Are there any dangers during Skill-Storing?"

Shangguan Bing'er said: "There shouldn't be any danger. Do you know why amongst the eight attributes, four of them are called the Greater Attributes?"

Zhou Weiqing shook his head, at a loss.

Shangguan Bing'er said: "That is because those four Greater Attributes each have their own additional special capabilities. For example, you already know that the Spatial Attribute allows you to become a Consolidating Equipment Master. However, for the other three Greater Attributes, the Light and Darkness Attributes' special characteristics lie in sealing, while the Life attribute's special capability is resurrection. Hence, these four attributes are

called the four Greater Attributes.”

“Sealing? Resurrection?”

Shangguan Bing'er said: “The Heavenly Beasts that the Skill-Storing Palace are rearing in the enclosures now have actually been Sealed by either Light or Darkness Attribute Jewel Masters with strong capabilities. As such, when Jewel Masters carry out Skill-Storing, it is not so dangerous. As for the Life Attribute's Resurrection Ability, it is even more difficult to get than the Consolidating Equipment Scroll, furthermore the Resurrection Ability also has a success rate.”

Zhou Weiqing said: “Since they are sealed, does that mean I can choose a Zong Stage Heavenly Beast to carry out Skill-Storing? What exactly is the difference in storing a skill from a higher ranked Heavenly Beast?”

Shangguan Bing'er said: “Generally speaking, you will carry out Skill-Storing on a Heavenly Beast of the same rank. If you try to carry out Skill-Storing on a Zun Stage Heavenly Beast, the probability of success will be 1% of the success rate on a Shi Level Heavenly Beast, the total probability is extremely low, less than 1 in 10000. Similarly, if it is Zong Stage Heavenly Beast, it will be yet another 1% of that.”

“Actually, no matter what rank of Heavenly Beasts you carry out Skill-Storing from, the skill we get on our Elemental Jewel is at the lowest level, but the skills will improve automatically as our Elemental Jewels increase. However, the rarer skills are only available from the higher ranked Heavenly Beasts. For example,

the resurrection skill that Life Attribute Elemental Jewel Masters want the most, can only be found from at least a Zong Stage Heavenly Beast.”

Zhou Weiqing said suddenly: “I understand. Battalion Commander, do you want to go in together?”

Shangguan Bing'er shook her head, “I do not plan to carry out Skill-Storing yet, we do not have sufficient funds. You should just try the method that you mentioned yesterday. The rules here are very simple, as long as you enter the enclosures, you must make a payment. When you enter, you can only stay for not longer than four hours, since everyone can only carry out Skill-Storing once a day. The next day if you want to go in again, you'll have to make a payment again.”

Zhou Weiqing paused for a moment before saying: “Battalion Commander, lend me 10,000 gold coins first, I will definitely return it to you in future.”

Shangguan Bing'er said in surprise: “You want to

Zhou Weiqing grinned: “I will just consider it as an experience to see a Zong Stage Heavenly Beast for now, which will be good for me as well. I will return the money to you in the future.”

Shangguan Bing'er went silent for a moment, before fishing out a red card from her bosom and passed it to Zhou Weiqing. “This contains 50,000 gold coins. You go and try. Regardless of success or failure, this card will be sufficient for you to try five times, in the

future you can just return me 50,000 gold coins directly. Do you need me to wait for you?”

“No, it is okay. Battalion Commander, you should just go back to continue with your Consolidating Equipment.” Zhou Weiqing knew that that was a Gold Coins Storage Card, and the red card denoted an upper limit of 50,000 gold coins. He did not say anything further, and after receiving the card he walked towards the entrance which led to the wind attribute enclosure.

Chapter 15 – Zong Level Heavenly Beast Elemental Jewel Skill-Storing (2)

“Be careful, you must definitely not break the seal on the Heavenly Beast, a Heavenly Beast is much stronger than a Heavenly Jewel Master of the same rank.” Shangguan Bing'er herself felt a little weird that she had said those words to Zhou Weiqing.

Zhou Weiqing turned his head to smile to her, giving her a self-confident hand signal, before walking through the entrance.

Looking at his departing figure, Shangguan Bing'er's brow furrowed slightly. What happened to this Little Fatty Zhou today? Previously, he had seized every opportunity to take advantage of her with his words, continuously testing her limits, but today it was as if he was totally someone different, and was almost as simple and honest as he looked.

Little did she know that Zhou Weiqing was pinching his face uncomfortably after entering the entrance; he had been suppressing himself the whole morning not trash talking, and it had been a laborious endeavour.

“Hmm.. it looks like there is some effect! It looks like that perverted old man's words indeed bear some truth. To let my beautiful lady Battalion Commander accept me, my old method is not good.”

As he proceeded down the tunnel, Zhou Weiqing could feel that it

was inclining downwards as he moved further along, and after going ahead about 200 meters, it started to curve around, and after several twists and turns, he finally reached an open hall.

The hall was not decorated, and once again three entrances presented themselves before Zhou Weiqing. Above them were inscribed three large characters respectively – Shi, Zun, Zong.

At the side there was a table where an old man sat, wearing the robe of a Shi Level Heavenly Jewel Master, though he did not have the rank symbol on his robe. At this time, perhaps because it was rather early, there weren't any other people around.

“Payment.” The old man said indifferently to Zhou Weiqing.

Zhou Weiqing walked forward and passed the Red Gold Coins Storage Card that he had gotten from Shangguan Bing'er to the old man, saying: “Senior, I want to enter the Zong Stage Wind attribute Skill Storing Enclosure.”

“Zong Stage?” The old man paused in surprise, sizing up Zhou Weiqing with appraising eyes.

Zhou Weiqing grinned and said: “Actually, I just want to get an experience of what a Zong Stage Heavenly Beast looks and feels like, I have heard that a Zong Stage Heavenly Beast is extremely strong.”

The old man said coolly: “It is up to you, as long as you pay up,

you can do as you wish.” As he said that, he took out a spatial attribute equipment which was specially made for swiping the Gold Coin Storage Cards and recording. He quickly swiped out 10,000 gold coins, as if fearing that Zhou Weiqing would change his mind. When he returned the Gold Coin Storage Cards, he also passed along a small round token.

“You will have to come out in four hours time, when you are carrying out your Skill-Storing, you just need to place your hand on top of the Heavenly Beast’s head. Go on ahead.”

“Thanks Senior.”

The old man continued looking at Zhou Weiqing after he entered the Zong Stage Wind Attribute Heavenly Beast’s enclosure, before giving a humph of disdain, “Yet another overreaching youngster, I wonder if that dumb kid is just trying his luck, or is he another black sheep of some rich family.”

In less than an hour, the old man who was just about to take a nap, noticed Zhou Weiqing walking out hurriedly from the Zong Stage Heavenly Beast’s enclosure, his face full of dejection.

Zhou Weiqing returned the small round token to the old man and sighed, saying: “Zong Stage Heavenly Beasts are just too terrifying already.”

The old men gave another cold humph, saying: “Young men like you should not overreach yourselves, next time just enter the Shi Stage enclosure, you will have a much higher chance of success.

10,000 gold coins per try on the Zong Stage enclosure... at your age, even if your father is the crown prince, he also will not be able to support your Skill-Storing attempts.”

“Yes, yes, you are right in your teachings.” Zhou Weiqing said timidly and agreed, before turning around and fleeing the scene.

As he walked away back into the tunnel exiting, the look on his face suddenly changed, his face now full of self-satisfaction, and he flailed his fist vigorously in a victory pump.

Over the next few days, Zhou Weiqing went to the Skill-Storing Palace once a day, and each time he entered a different tunnel, with only the final two days the same. On the other hand, Shangguan Bing'er barely left her room, as she worked hard on Consolidating her Wind Wielding Boots Scroll.

Five days later, after Zhou Weiqing had finished spending all the gold coins from the Gold Coin Storage Card that Shangguan Bing'er lent him, and he stayed in the room to cultivate Heavenly Energy silently, as if all of that had not happened.

The time that Shangguan Bing'er spent on her Physical Jewel Consolidating Equipment had fully proven to Zhou Weiqing the difficulty of it, taking two entire months, 61 days, before she finally completed Consolidating her Wind Wielding Boots.

The new barracks was also about to finish shortly, and as a Battalion Commander, naturally Shangguan Bing'er needed to hurry back as soon as possible. As such, they both said goodbye to

Feng Yu and Huyan Aobo before leaving Flying Hill City to head back towards Heavenly Bow Empire.

“Little Fatty Zhou, I did not have time to ask you previously, was your Skill-Storing successful?” Shangguan Bing’er asked Zhou Weiqing as they made their way.

For the past two months, besides meal times where they occasionally spoke a few words, they almost had no communication between them, and staying in Huyan Aobo’s little courtyard, she did not want to ask Zhou Weiqing clearly about his Skill-Storing. What made her feel very strange was that Zhou Weiqing actually seemed to turn into a proper Personal Aide; since that day when they went to the Skill-Storing Palace together for the second time, he had not spoken any trash talk to her since.

“It’s a secret okay? Battalion Commander, didn’t you say previously? The Elemental Jewel Skill is most important secret of a Heavenly Jewel Master.” Zhou Weiqing said mysteriously.

Shangguan Bing’er said in surprise: “You really succeeded?”

Zhou Weiqing said with a faint smile: “You will know in the future.”

“Hmph, if you do not want to say then forget it.” Shangguan Bing’er turned around and ignored him, continuing to hurry along.

As time passed, Shangguan Bing'er could obviously feel that Zhou Weiqing's Heavenly Energy was improving by quite a large margin. Although it still could not be compared with hers, but he could definitely maintain his Physical boost for a much longer period of time now.

In truth, when Zhou Weiqing had initially Awakened his Heavenly Jewels, he had not actually reached the amount of Heavenly Energy of a normal level four Heavenly Jin Energy, but had just broken through to that stage only. After these two months of cultivation, the Heavenly Energy in his body was truly much more abundant.

As with the trip to Flying Hill City, Zhou Weiqing prepared food all the way for them. Although he occasionally chatted with Shangguan Bing'er, but as compared to previously he was acting like a different person. By the time the two of them had reached the military camp in ten days time, Shangguan Bing'er had found it a little weird and unnatural. Regardless of what you could say about Zhou Weiqing, he was the man who had taken her first time, the man who made her angry and yet happy at times, she naturally did observe some good to him unavoidably, and this transformation of Zhou Weiqing, she could not really say if it were good or bad.

Outside Heavenly Bow City, the Military Camp.

"Battalion Commander, you have returned." Xiao Se looked at Shangguan Bing'er with a faint smile on his face, giving her a proper military salute.

Shangguan Bing'er and Zhou Weiqing had just returned to the military camp and changed into their military uniforms and she returned to her command tent. After leaving for nearly three months, she was eager to understand the conditions of the recruiting.

“Company Leader Xiao, how is the situation of the new recruit barracks? It should be finishing soon right?”

Xiao Se shot a look at Zhou Weiqing who was standing behind Shangguan Bing'er and said: “The new recruit barracks will be completed in three days. You shouldn't be asking me about the situation of the new recruit barracks, before you left, didn't you leave Company Leader Mao Li in charge of this new group of recruits?”

Chapter 15 – Zong Level Heavenly Beast

Elemental Jewel Skill-Storing (3)

Shangguan Bing'er looked at him and said coldly: "Company Leader Xiao, do not forget that I am your boss."

Xiao Se said mockingly: "A boss who was absent from post for two months without authorization? Battalion Commander, do not worry, I have already reported this to the military headquarters regarding the matter of you being absent without authorization. Three days later when the new recruits barracks are completed, if the new 3rd Battalion Recruits suffer a disastrous defeat in the Fresh Recruit Tournament, I'm afraid your position as Battalion Commander will likely come to an end. Heavenly Jewel Masters are truly genius talents, but that does not mean that you also have the talent or ability in commanding."

As soon as he spoke these words, Xiao Se turned around and walked away unexpectedly, causing Shangguan Bing'er's beautiful face to be angered into a pallid white.

Zhou Weiqing had been standing beside Shangguan Bing'ers, and as he saw Xiao Se was walking away, he took a step forward to pursue; he had long since disliked that handsome gigolo.

Shangguan Bing'er lifted her hand, catching hold of Zhou Weiqing's arm, shaking her head at him.

Xiao Se vanished as he exited the command tent, and Zhou Weiqing could no longer resist and said: "Battalion Commander,

why don't you let me teach him a lesson? What's the matter with this Xiao Se?"

Shangguan Bing'er said with a solemn voice: "Company Leader Xiao is the only son of the Empire's Finance Minister Marquis Xiao Yunchen, otherwise did you think I would endure him til now?"

When he heard Shangguan Bing'er's words, Zhou Weiqing was also very surprised, "That can't be? Marquis Xiao is called the God of Wealth of our Empire, it could be said that one of the main reasons why our Heavenly Bow Empire's national strength can progress and improve, has a lot to do with him. How could he possibly have such an arrogant son?"

"You also know Marquis Xiao?" Shangguan Bing'er looked somewhat surprisedly at him.

Zhou Weiqing realized that he had somewhat made a mistake, and hurriedly tried to recover and said: "Many have said that our Heavenly Bow Empire is sustained in a big way by our two great officials, one against the outside world, and one governing the inside world. The one who holds the outside is Admiral Zhou, and the governing the inside isn't it Marquis Xiao?"

Shangguan Bing'er nodded, then sighed lightly, saying: "Actually, I cannot blame Xiao Se for treating me like that. Before I came to the 3rd Battalion, the 3rd Battalion Commander position was vacant, and although he isn't a Heavenly Jewel Master, but he is indeed a military genius with very capable commanding ability, and was the person who was most likely to succeed the Battalion Commander position, yet that position was actually snatched by

me, that is why he feels so uncomfortable in his heart. Xiao Se's elite 3rd Company is also the main trump card of our 3rd Battalion."

Zhou Weiqing's expression suddenly grew extremely strange, as he suddenly recalled some past events from his childhood.

.....

"Bro Shuiniu, look at those two kids enjoying themselves play together. What a pity, your son is six years younger than my little daughter, otherwise, I will definitely snatch this son-in-law from his Majesty, hahaha."

"Old Xiao, why do you trouble yourself with this? Weiqing this child is born with his meridian passages blocked, sigh... he is doomed to not have a great talent!"

"Old Zhou, is your brain damaged? As bros how can you say this to me? I'm telling you now very clearly, if in the future the Princess Her Highness and Weiqing are not good together, even if Ruse is older than your son, I will marry her to Weiqing!"

.....

A 13-14 year old young girl was running in front, followed by a little boy whose nose was dripping with mucus.

"Zhou Weiqing, you little mucus monster, come quickly over

here! Let's go grab that birds nest."

"Elder Sis Ruse, wait for me!!"

.....

A young girl with a firm and resolute expression on her face was standing protectively before a little boy, facing them were another four to five young boys encircling them.

"I won't allow you guys to bully him, who dares to bully him will be punched by me!"

.....

"Papa, where did Elder Sis Ruse go? How come she doesn't come to play with me anymore?"

"Your Elder Sis Ruse has gone to school. Little brat, starting today, your misery has come, from today onwards you will get up at 5am to go through special training, otherwise, your father I will punch till your ass blossoms."

.....

"Little Fatty Zhou, what are you thinking about?" Shangguan Bing'er lifted her hand and waved it in front of Zhou Weiqing's face, asking him puzzledly.

Zhou Weiqing awoke from his train of thought and quickly shook his head, saying: “Nothing, Battalion Commander. What was the Fresh Recruit Tournament that Company Leader Xiao mentioned earlier?”

Xiao Se... Xiao Ruse, those two names superimposed in his heart gradually, and the edges of Zhou Weiqing’s mouth edged up slightly, in the heart he was thinking: As far as I know, Uncle Xiao only has a daughter, Elder Sis Ruse, where did a son come from? Haha, they say that females go through a huge change at 18 years old, it seems like Elder Sis Ruse, you did not recognize me, and I also did not recognize you. You are pretending to be a man!

Shangguan Bing’er’s brow furrowed as she said: “”We are talking about the Fresh Recruit Tournament, why are you smiling so slyly?”

“Ah? Did I smile? Battalion Commander, what I mean is that I am also a recruit, so naturally I can participate in this Fresh Recruit Tournament right?” Zhou Weiqing responded quickly, immediately finding a reason for himself.

Shangguan Bing’er said: “The Fresh Recruit Tournament is held after the new recruits have finished their training, and the various Companies in the Battalion will be competing against each other as a unit. This is for the purpose of selecting talented people, those recruits who put up a good display; for example the most outstanding recruit will directly be promoted to squad leader. I remember that this was how Company Leader Xiao had risen in his rank initially too, he has enlisted in the military for about three

years, yet his performance has been absolutely outstanding. If I had not appeared with the rank of Heavenly Jewel Master, perhaps he has already been promoted to the rank of Battalion Commander. Furthermore, he has always relied on his own ability for promotions, and not relied on any help from Marquis Xiao. I truly admire and respect him in that aspect. Well, in any case, you will also have to participate in the Fresh Recruit Tournament, otherwise our new Company will be short of one person. However, you are absolutely not allowed to use your Heavenly Jewels.”

“Battalion Commander, I have a condition.” Zhou Weiqing said with an impish grin on his face. After realising that Xiao Se was unexpectedly his Elder Sis Ruse, he was in an excellent mood, suddenly could no longer repress his true colors.

Shangguan Bing'er did not know why, but looking at him acting this way, several ripples coursed through her heart, it was as if this rascal in front of her had become real again.

“What condition?” Shangguan Bing'er put on a serious face and asked.

Zhou Weiqing grinned: “Lend me your Purple Dawn Bow. Even if I cannot use my Heavenly Jewels, I will still give them a huge surprise. Battalion Commander, just wait and see your Personal Aide Little Fatty Zhou show his suave valiance in the Fresh Recruit Tournament. However... is there any reward?”

Shangguan Bing'er got angry: “What, do you still want a reward?”

Zhou Weiqing said: “Doesn’t the army pride itself on its fairness, discipline is upheld and punishment meted to those who deserve it, but rewards are also given to those who deserve it as well? I do not want that rank of squad leader; if I bring our 3rd Battalion’s fresh recruit Company to get the first in the tournament, in the future when there is no one else around, you will let me call your name directly, this request isn’t too excessive right?”

Shangguan Bing’er originally wanted to reject him immediately, but with a quick thought she changed her mind. After all, they were both Heavenly Jewel Masters, it was no big deal letting him call her name. Furthermore, after thinking about Xiao Se’s arrogant appearance just now, she grit her teeth and said: “Alright, fine. If you can lead our fresh recruit squadron to win the first position in the tournament, then I’ll let you do so.”

Zhou Weiqing had not expected that Shangguan Bing’er would comply so easily, and was immediately overjoyed: “Battalion Commander, lend me your Purple Dawn Bow first, there are still three more days, I’ll practice some archery.”

Chapter 15 – Zong Level Heavenly Beast Elemental Jewel Skill-Storing (4)

“Practicing at the last minute, are you sure you can do it?” Shangguan Bing’er looked at him with her face full of doubt. However, though she said that, she actually removed the Purple Dawn Bow from her back and handed it to him.

“Whether or not I can, you will know after you see the result.” Zhou Weiqing took the Purple Dawn Bow and ran off in high spirits. Although he did not know what the exactly the Fresh Recruit Tournament entailed, but his father had been training him like a soldier since he was seven years old. Before he actually enlisted in the army, the thing he lacked most was physical strength, but now that he had become a Heavenly Jewel Master, even without using his Physical Jewel, his physique was already improved beyond that of any average person, which definitely granted him much more self-confidence.

Three days later.

In the military camp outside the Heavenly Bow City, the morning bugle sounded out loud early in the morning. Squads of soldiers quickly streamed out of their tents, and lined up in their formations outside the camp.

There were more than 2000 soldiers in total, of which more than 1000 were the Fifth Regiment’s various Battalions’ manpower who were responsible for recruiting soldiers, while the other 1000 were this time’s fresh recruits.

The Fifth Regiment's 10 Battalions had each recruited a Company of soldiers to supplement their front line and non-combatant personnel which they had lost.

After three months of new recruit training, the recruits did have the appearance of a soldier, at least they were standing there smartly with their backs straightened, their brand-new military uniforms made them seem rather valiant and spirited.

At this moment, Zhou Weiqing was standing amongst the 3rd Battalion's new recruit Company, but in a rather unnoticable corner. However, he was carrying Shangguan Bing'er's Purple Dawn Bow on his back.

In front of the formation of 2000 soldiers stood several military officers, and the one in front was Shangguan Bing'er who was dressed in her Battalion Commander uniform. She was the only Battalion Commander from the Fifth Regiment who was attending this round of recruitment in the Heavenly Bow City, the other Battalions had sent Company Leaders.

Shangguan Bing'er stood beautiful and valiant in the front, surrounded by Company Leaders. She was at this moment a lot more dignified and imposing as compared to her usual look, and as her gaze swept across the 2000 soldiers present, she said in a solemn voice: "I am very honored to be assigned the task of recruiting soldiers by the Fifth Regiment headquarters. My name is Shangguan Bing'er, and I am the Fifth Regiment's Third Archery Battalion Commander."

The veterans were still alright, as they had mostly seen this beautiful female Battalion Commander before, but most of the recruits had not, and the originally orderly formation immediately had some disturbances.

“Wow, the top beauty of the Empire! She is actually our Fifth Regiment 3rd Battalion’s Battalion Commander?”

“Heh heh, you’ve just found out now? We, the recruits of the 3rd Battalion, actually personally received our equipment from the Battalion Commander and saw her then.”

On hearing the discussions of the soldiers around him, Zhou Weiqing felt very proud in his heart, secretly thinking to himself: That is my wife. Of course, he certainly did not proclaim that out loud.

As the sounds of discussion resounded continuously, the recruits were obviously turning sloppy. The Company Leader who was responsible for the recruit training gave a loud shout: “Silence!”

The new recruits quickly quietened down. Although they had been recruited for the respective Battalions, but the recruit training was done together in the new barracks, and now that the recruit training had ended, once the Fresh Recruit Tournament ends, they would return to their respective Battalions.

Xiao Se stood at Shangguan Bing’er’s side, and looking at the rather chaotic scene in front of them, curled her lip in disdain. The battlefield is ruled by Man, yet Shangguan Bing’er has not

understood this. How could such a person snatch my position of Battalion Commander. Isn't she just a Heavenly Jewel Master? What's so great about that.

The next step was basic routine administrative business, and under the various Fifth Regiment's Company Leaders leadership, the new recruits were dismissed, and the various recruits returned to their respective Battalion headquarters. After all of that was completed, Shangguan Bing'er once more entered the stage.

"Good, starting from today, the 1000 new recruit brothers now officially belong to our Fifth Regiment. Next, we will be examining the results of your three months of rigorous training. The recruits who shows outstanding displays in the upcoming Fresh Recruit Tournament, will be directly promoted to the rank of Squad Leader. Alright, all the various Battalions, your preparation starts now."

"Yes." All the Company Leaders said in compliance, rapidly leading their respective troops to start their formation.

The Fifth Regiment was an Infantry Regiment, and amongst the ten Battalions, four of them were archery Battalions, and of the other six, four were Light Infantry Battalions and two Heavy Infantry Battalions. Without a doubt, the two Heavy Infantry Battalions were the trump card Battalions of the Fifth Regiment. The Battalion Commanders responsible for these two Battalions also held the duty of the Fifth Regiment's Vice Regimental Commander. Of course, they were currently not here, but were at the front lines.

Due to the difference in the type of soldiers, therefore, the so-called Fresh Recruit Tournament was actually not with all ten Battalions competing against each other, but being carried out according to their service arm. If not, if we were to let the Light Infantry and Heavy Infantry to fight against each other, what would be the point?

The three main main service branches were quickly divided into their respective tournament areas. For the Heavy Infantry Recruits consisting of only 2 Battalions, it was very simple, they just need to face off straightforwardly, and charge against each other without weapons, purely a competition of strength. The soldiers which were overwhelmed would be eliminated immediately, and this will carry on till a single winner arose; this final winner would also be directly awarded with rank of Squad Leader. In the Fifth Regiment, it must be known that a Squad Leader of the elite Heavy Infantry Battalions were sometimes given even more authority than a normal Company Leader of the ordinary Battalions. As such, this reward was one of the best of the whole tournament.

As for the Light Infantry, their Fresh Recruit Tournament was actually split into two portions, one was similar to the Heavy Infantry competition with a direct charging clash, while the other was the individual operational prowess of soldiers, without needing to draw lots, the four Battalions would be in their own formations and it would be a 500 vs 500 free for all, with anyone who was overwhelmed and beaten would be eliminated. The next round would then begin, after a fifteen minute rest, until a final winner was left.

To be honest, the Fresh Recruit Tournament was actually not of any big significance to most ordinary recruits, and it was just a

formality for them. However, for those skilled recruits who had ambitions, it was truly the perfect opportunity. With this, they had the opportunity to prove themselves amongst the huge amount of recruits, it was not just simply the quick promotion to Squad Leader, but also the opportunity to leave behind a mark in their service history, which would allow easier future promotions, for example Xiao Se.

As for the archery Battalions, their Fresh Recruit Tournament was the most unusual. For the four Battalions, they would be split into two sides, each with 200 recruits. There would be a 200 yard middle spacing between the two sides, and both sides would be shooting arrows against each other. All the arrows were blunted and stained with lime, thus as long as any hit, it would leave an obvious trace, and the target which was hit would immediately withdraw from the battlefield, it could also be said to be the simplest fight of the Tournament.

However, although this method of competition was relatively simpler, but it also also had its intrinsic meaning. How many recruits could actually shoot accurately at a distance of 200 yards? Those who could even shoot that far would already be considered pretty good. Therefore, for the Archery Battalions, this was actually a very direct and effective way to select talented soldiers. Several Company Leaders, even Shangguan Bing'er as a Battalion Commander, was paying most attention there. Also, they were responsible for directing the recruits of their own Battalion. Of course, being a wide open, spacious location, it would not be easy to dodge the opponents' arrows.

At this time, the Battalions were arranged in their respective formations, on the left was the first and second Battalions, and on

the right were the third and fourth Battalions. This Fresh Recruit Tournament was not just a competition between recruits, but was also a competition between the various Battalions, if one side totally overwhelmed the other side, that was a manifestation of their overall strength.

Chapter 16 – Fresh Recruit Tournament (1)

The reason why Xiao Se did not favor the 3rd Battalion's fresh recruit Company was mainly because she had been watching critically during the recruit training, and had found that the First and Second Battalions both had many talented recruits. Although they may not be very accurate in shooting at a 200 yards distance, but they were at least able to shoot that far, and with an acceptable control. In comparison, the Third and Fourth Battalions' recruits were obviously not as good, although Mao Li Company Leader was quite good at leading, but it would be difficult to just fight against greater talents. With just a short training of a few months, it was not sufficient for hard work to make up for the lack of natural talent.

Zhou Weiqing was standing right beside Mao Li Company Leader, and said in a low voice: "Company Leader, can you point out all the skilled recruits on the opposing side to me."

Mao Li looked at him questioningly, saying: "What are you planning?"

Zhou Weiqing grinned and took off the Purple Dawn Bow he was shouldering on his back, saying quietly: "I'll make a roll call!"

Mao Li's eyes brightened. He was originally very worried in his heart for this fight, and had not thought much about Zhou Weiqing participating in the Fresh Recruit Tournament. In his eyes, Zhou Weiqing had only practiced a little Heavenly Energy and might have slightly greater strength, but archery was skill dependant, and it was not just a matter of having some extra

strength. However, when he heard Zhou Weiqing mentioning ‘Roll Call’, he was actually pleasantly surprised; that was because this terminology was only used amongst archers, and meant killing/sniping a target. It was generally only used by archers who had proper training from a master, to know such a term. Obviously, this Battalion Commander’s Personal Aide recruit, who had also ‘touched’ the Battalion Commander’s chest was no mere simple recruit.

“Alright, that’s good. I’ll tell you now and you try to memorise it. On the opposite side, from the left, the fifth, ninth

Shang Gong Bing Er was standing at the side watching the Fresh Recruit Tournament with a critical eye. Of course, she was paying most attention to Zhou Little Fatty naturally, and looking at him and Company Leader Mao Li talking in whispers, she was rather curious to what they were discussing.

“Battalion Commander, which side do you think will win at the end?” Xiao Se’s resounded out unharmoniously in Shang Gong Bing Er’s ear.

Shang Gong Bing Er turned her head and said: “Naturally it is our Third Battalion, I have confidence in Company Leader Mao Li’s leadership abilities.”

Xiao Se curled her lip, saying mockingly: “This is only the fresh recruit company, they are a crowd who have not gone to the battlefield, nor have they seen bloodshed, how can a simple few month training be of much use? Talent is the most important at this stage. Certainly, since Battalion Commander did not look in on

the recruit training, you are naturally unclear on which side has the more talented recruits.”

Shang Gong Bing Er’s delicate eyebrows furrowed again, and she decided to no longer pay attention to Xiao Se, instead taking a step forward, shouting out loud: “The Fresh Recruit Tournament, Begin.”

The recruits in all three regions were covering a large and broad area of land, but with Shang Gong Bing Er’s shout, her clean delightful voice was clearly heard throughout the battlefield, her eighth level Heavenly Jing Energy giving her a very strong foundation in her Heavenly Energy.

On hearing Shang Gong Bing Er’s voice, Xiao Se gripped her fist. In truth, the greatest disappointment of her life was that she did not manage to Awaken her Power Jewels to become a Jewel Master. Although she had put in so much effort on other fronts and had some achievements, but she still could not change that fact.

As Shang Gong Bing Er issued the order, the Fresh Recruit Tournament formally started. The light infantry and Heavy Infantry sides both started their charge, while the four archery Companies also launched their first round salvo.

The recruits had after all gone through three months of recruit training, and this first round salvo was pretty decent, with both sides having 200 arrows directly soared towards the opposite line.

However, although the recruits had trained for three months, but it was still their first time facing off in combat like this, and their mood appeared to be very excited, causing many of the arrows to miss, and after they had taken their shot, they were standing around looking silly, watching their arrows fly.

Zhou Weiqing was mixed in the midst of a mass of recruits, and as he shot out an arrow, while the other recruits were still standing around gawking, he quickly retreated backwards, hiding behind the other recruits and squatting down to reduce the probability that the enemy arrows would hit him.

“Ahh, ahhh.....” Screams resounded continuously, as recruit after recruit were hit by the the lime arrows, and under each Company Leader’s direction, they had to withdraw from the battlefield after being hit, and could no longer participate in the Fresh Recruit Tournament.

Zhou Weiqing listened the cries resounding out, and then he quickly stood up, his Purple Dawn Bow drawn in a full crescent, and while the other recruits were still looking at their first arrows, his second arrow was already in the air at lightning speed. With the power of the Purple Dawn Bow, how could those recruits dodge it? .

“Little Fatty, good archery.” Mao Li called out in pleasant surprise. Just like Zhou Weiqing had said earlier, as soon as his first arrow had shot out, he had successfully ‘Roll Called’ one of the outstanding recruits from the opposing Battalion pointed out by Mao Li.

However, compared with the pleasant surprise that Mao Li was showing, Shang Gong Bing Er's expression was actually pretty ugly. As a Heavenly Jewel Master, her eyesight was naturally astonishing, and after this first round salvo, she saw clearly that the Third and Fourth Battalions had lost around 40 soldiers as compared to the First and Second Battalions only losing about 10 soldiers. Without a doubt, this really showed the huge disparity in the quality and talent of the recruits on both sides. No wonder Xiao Se had such a confident appearance.

After the first salvo was launched, Zhou Weiqing seemed to be a changed man, just like a swift and flexible leopard, the strength Purple Dawn Bow in his hands firing unceasingly like lightning, and every time he shot out an arrow, he always managed to use another recruit as cover, and only in that instance when he shot out an arrow would he appear in a quick flash.

At the beginning, the opposing First and Second Battalion did not really notice him, but after four to five rounds of salvos, as the Third and Fourth Battalions lost more than half of their recruits, Zhou Weiqing's impressive rate of fire and accuracy immediately drew the attention of the opposing side's Company Leaders.

In just that short amount of time, Zhou Weiqing had already "Roll Called" 11 people, causing them to leave the field. The Purple Dawn Bow was indeed an extremely strong bow, even though the arrowhead had been removed, the targets that he hit were unable to recover in a short period of time. Furthermore, his rate of fire was a lot higher than an ordinary longbow, and the opposing recruits did not have any way to dodge his arrows. Furthermore, Zhou Weiqing's arrows were all quite accurate, almost always hitting his target's chest area. With such a precision, to describe it

as ‘[Hundred Step Hit](#)’ was not overrating him.

“Focus fire on that sly little rascal.” One of the Company Leaders from the Second Battalions shouted out loud.

As soon as Zhou Weiqing shot forth his 12th, he immediately sensed that something was not right. Ever since his Heavenly Jewels had Awakened, he had found that his sensitivity and detection capabilities had increased manifold, and the sudden attention from the opposing Battalions sudden caused him to be alarmed immediately. This fellow did not even hesitate for half a second, and immediately turned around and ran.

At this point, there were still more than 70 recruits remaining for the Third and Fourth Battalions, and from such a crowd having one recruit suddenly leap up, turn around and run off naturally caught the attention of all the observing military officers in the audience. At least two Company Leaders had attended the tournament from each of the Battalions, and with one directing the recruits, the remaining officers were gathered around Shang Gong Bing Er’s side. Since the archery Battalion’s tournament usually ended much faster, they were watching it first.

百步穿杨 A Chinese idiom denoting superb accuracy from archers. Arose from the Warring States Period where a Chu General was able to hit the leaves of trees from a hundred steps away.

Chapter 16 – Fresh Recruit Tournament (2)

“Why is there a deserter?” Some of the Company Leaders asked doubtingly.

Shangguan Bing'er and Xiao Se naturally recognized Zhou Weiqing instantly, and Xiao Se smiled and said: “Aiyo, isn't this the Battalion Commander's Personal Aide Little Fatty Zhou? What happened to him? How

Before Xiao Se could finishing speaking, the complexion of all the Company Leaders suddenly changed. This was because just as Zhou Weiqing had started to run away, right behind him, at least 30 to 40 arrows blotted out the sky behind him, clearly targeted at him.

Zhou Weiqing seemed as if he had eyes on his back, and just as he had dashed 7-8 meters to the front, he suddenly dove and rolled forward, and then executing a quick roll of his body to the side; his movement was rapid and coordinated, looking as if he had practiced this a thousand times before. The 30 to 40 arrows that were aimed at him were actually mostly hitting the area which he had been in, and by running, he had already dodged the majority of them. In addition to that, his dive and roll, he only heard a ‘Duo duo’ sound as arrow after arrow hit the ground behind him, and not a single one hit their target.

Xiao Se said in surprise: “What did he do that brought about [the wrath of god and the resentment of men](#)? Why was he targeted by the enemy salvo?”

The archers from the First and Second Battalions who had targeted Zhou Weiqing earlier were the most outstanding recruits of the 2 Battalions, and this salvo actually gave the opportunity for the 70 remaining recruits of the Third and Fourth Battalions the breathing room to recover a little, and this was the first that their losses were actually lower than their opponent's.

Zhou Weiqing had rolled about 3-4 meters away, and his body quickly bounded up from the ground, and you could only see this fellow plant the tip of his feet onto the ground as he jumped up in a swift motion a whole meter high, and with a whizzing sound, another arrow was launched from the Purple Dawn Bow.

Due to his running and rapid dodging movements, he had attracted the attention of all the military officers observing the fight. At this moment, all of them also wanted to take a look at his accuracy. After all, this sort of instantaneous jump-shot was extremely difficult to pull off, especially since the time he had to aim was extremely short. The reason that he had to jump up was to avoid all the soldiers from his side in front of him.

Whizz. It was almost as if whenever Zhou Weiqing moved his Purple Dawn Bow, a soldier from the opposing side would drop down. The Company Leaders looked at each other blankly; many of them were experienced archers themselves, and with some self-examination, they realised that even if they were in Zhou Weiqing's place, they might not necessarily do better.

The Company Leader in charge of directing the First and Second Battalions was very experienced, and on discovering Zhou Weiqing's skill, he immediately changed target again, ordering the

next round salvo to focus once again on the remaining soldiers in the Third and Fourth Battalions instead. The idea was very simple, since Zhou Weiqing was very accurate, he would just 'kill' off the all the others first, and leaving him for the last before they all targeted him.

Immediately, misfortune fell upon the remaining recruits of the Third and Fourth Battalions. As if having received a huge stimulation from the display of Zhou Weiqing, the archers from the First and Second Battalions displayed an improved accuracy. Originally, the Third and Fourth Battalions only had around 70 left standing, and after this salvo, 40 of them had unexpectedly fallen. On the other side, there were still 80 recruits standing, and it was a very obvious contrast on both sides.

Zhou Weiqing saw that the opposing side had been distracted from him, and quickly tried to make the best use of this time to shoot. However, just as the Company Leader directing the First and Second Battalions had judged earlier, no matter how accurate he was, he was just one single person. By the time the rest of the Third and Fourth Battalions besides Zhou Weiqing had been annihilated, the opposing side still had more than 50 people remaining.

“Holy S***!” Looking at the rain of arrows blotting out the sky and raining down towards him, Zhou Weiqing turned his head to run again, feeling extremely gloomy in his heart! The quality disparities between the recruits of both sides were just too big. He had at least killed 16 to 17 enemies just by himself, but they still had almost 50 till alive, how could this be possible?

A Company Leader from the First Battalion shouted out loud: “Chase him and shoot him down! Whoever manages to shoot him down, Your Father, I, will bestow on you the best archery recruit of today.”

At this time Zhou Weiqing no longer had other recruits to cover him, and the situation was much more dangerous than earlier. The massive amount of arrows showering down from the sky had such a coverage on the battlefield that it seemed like an artillery barrage, and it was much more difficult for him to dodge like he had earlier.

This scenario actually displayed Zhou Weiqing’s superior physique after Awakening his Heavenly Jewels; even without actually making use of his Heavenly Jewels, his speed and strength already far surpassed those ordinary soldiers. As he ran, he kept spinning around and switching directions unceasingly, trying as much as possible to not run in a predictable manner so that the opposing side would not be able to catch him. However, for the soldiers from the First and Second Battalions to catch him, they not only had to chase him, but also had to stop in order to shoot. After Zhou Weiqing had managed to dodge and run with much hardship through two salvos of arrow rain, the distance between both sides had widened to about 300 yards. This distance was already beyond the accurate distance of those outstanding recruits, and they could only fire high up into the air to attempt to cover the area where Zhou Weiqing was with projectile fire.

Seizing the chance to catch his breath, Zhou Weiqing managed to turn around while running to shoot, and he quickly managed to take down another 7-8 enemies.

“Is he kiting them? This recruit is really too strong, Company Leader Xiao, you mentioned earlier that he is the Personal Aide of the Battalion Commander? That boy is really quite good!” One of Company Leaders standing beside Shangguan Bing’er couldn’t help but exclaim.

Kiting was basically a type of hit-and-run technique that archers used very effectively, but generally speaking it was used to deal with melee units, making use of the firing distance of arrows and now allowing their enemies to attack them. However, Zhou Weiqing was relying on his superiority of strength and the power of the Purple Dawn Bow, and actually using this disparity in prowess and range with the other archers to kite them around, and that indeed made these senior veterans impressed and appreciative.

One of the Company Leaders of the First Archery Battalion couldn’t help but say: “Shang Gong Battalion Commander, how about letting us have this little brother? Not mentioning the rank of Squad Leader, with this this brothers’ abilities, he can even be my deputy.”

Shangguan Bing’er smiled faintly, thinking secretly in her heart: That Little Fatty Zhou is a Heavenly Jewel Master, let alone being your deputy, as long as we report it up the ranks, he is more than sufficient to be my deputy.

“[A gentleman does not seize another’s love](#), Company Leader Li, I cannot agree with that.”

Xiao Se smiled at the side, saying: “Does that mean that the

Battalion Commander has fallen in love with him?”

Shangguan Bing'er expression turned cold, “Company Leader Xiao, please have some self respect.”

The other Company Leaders knew the grudge between Shangguan Bing'er and Xiao Se and they did not try to speak and intervene. At this point, that Company Leader Li from the First Battalion said doubtingly: “What is this Little Fatty Zhou doing? He was just about to reach the woods for cover, why did he turn around and come back?”

Just as Company Leader Li had said, Zhou Weiqing who had already pulled away and increased the gap had unexpectedly turned around to charge towards the First and Second Battalions, facing more than 40 people.

The others also did not understand what was happening, but Xiao Se quickly grasped the situation: “He is out of arrows!”

君子不夺人所爱 – literal translation, it's an idiom describing that she won't give him up. She isn't actually saying she loves Zhou Weiqing

天怒人怨 Direct translation – basically just meaning ‘What did he do to piss them all off?’

Chapter 16 – Fresh Recruit Tournament (3)

Indeed that was true, after all, the arrows for this sort of tournament had to have their arrowheads removed, and their quantity was not high. As such, each of the recruits were only issued 25 arrows for this Fresh Recruit Tournament, and by now Zhou Weiqing's quiver had been emptied, and he was also at a loss, and could only charge back and try to pick up some arrows in order to continue fighting.

However, he is after all not a god, after he had picked up two arrows and used them to shoot down two opponents, the opposing team had already closed the distance to 150 yards, and such a distance allowed the enemies' longbows to shoot out arrows quickly and with much power. Although he was flexible and agile, but in the situation and also being restricted from using his Heavenly Jewels' abilities, he was also unable to do much, and could only look at more than 40 arrows flying towards him.

Zhou Weiqing realised he could not dodge this salvo anymore, and quickly squatted down, both his hands covering his chest, trying to reduce the body surface area exposed as much as possible as he lowered the head, covering most of himself with his Wind Hat.

Ping Ping sounds resounded out constantly above Zhou Weiqing's head, and his hat was covered with the lime as at least 7-8 arrows landed on top of his hat.

Seeing that they had finally taken down their target, the remaining recruits from the opposing team started cheering out

loud immediately.

“Cheering? Cheer your head! If not for the fact that he ran out of arrows, he could have killed all of you slowly.” The Company Leader directing the team scolded them ill-humoredly. Although the First and Second Battalions had won the Third and Fourth Battalions in the end, but they had not actually won that extremely outstanding recruit. There was really no need to compete; Zhou Weiqing alone had taken down 25 opponents, how could anyone other recruits be more outstanding than him in this Fresh Recruit Tournament?

Before the Company Leader had even finished speaking, a sudden Ping sounded out and an arrow hit his chest. The arrow was shot at an extremely high speed, and with an ooof sound, the Company Leader fell down with a look of disbelief on his face, his breath stuck in his chest causing a fierce pain and a stuffy feeling in his chest causing him to nearly faint.

“What’s going on?” Just as the recruits from the First and Second Battalions were looking around in surprise, several more Pings sounded out and several of them fell. Only then did they awaken from their surprise, and when they turned their head to look, they saw Little Fatty Zhou on the other side with his hat full of lime, shooting out arrows quickly and silently.

Immediately, the recruits from the First and Second Battalions were enraged. You might be very strong, but you still have to obey the tournament rules right? After being hit by us, how could you still continue shooting? Getting shot was after all still very painful.

Before they could charge forward, Shangguan Bing'er shouted angrily, "Stop! Little Fatty Zhou, what are you doing?"

Xiao Se said gloatingly: "Battalion Commander, you do not need to blame him, I think he was defiant and unconvinced by that loss. However, a Country has its Laws, Families have their family rules; this is a breach of military discipline. Soldiers who do not listen to orders should not be promoted easily!"

Zhou Weiqing heard Shangguan Bing'er shouting at him, and he stopped shooting to shoulder the Purple Dawn Bow onto his back, taking off his Wind Hat to brush off the lime, before running over.

Shangguan Bing'er glared angrily at Zhou Weiqing, "Little Fatty Zhou, what were you doing? The fight had already ended, why did you continue shooting?"

Zhou Weiqing blinked: "Did the fight end? No! I am still alive, why can't I attack?"

The Company Leader Li from the First Battalion knitted his brow and said: "Little Fatty Zhou, trying to outdo others is a good thing. However, this is the army, and everything must be according to rules. You were struck by at least seven arrows, your Wind Hat was full of lime, if this were a genuine battlefield, you would have already died. At that time, your correct choice should have been to escape immediately, instead of returning to the battlefield to pick up arrows. As Company Leader Xiao said a moment ago, you have breached military discipline. Although your performance was very outstanding, but I'm afraid you will not be able to be promoted to Squad Leader. Do you want to consider joining our First

Battalion?”

Shangguan Bing'er had only just been promoted to Battalion Commander not long ago, and her prestige was still insufficient. The First Battalion was the strongest amongst the four archery units in the Regiment, and this veteran Company Leader was not afraid of recruiting her men right in front of her.

Zhou Weiqing shook his head immediately, turning towards Shangguan Bing'er with a stubborn look on his face: “No, Battalion Commander, I have not lost.” As he said those words, he was laughing deep in his heart, thinking to himself: These people are really coordinating well to my script.

Shangguan Bing'er frowned: “Little Fatty Zhou, do not deliberately cause trouble. You are dismissed.”

Zhou Weiqing said with his face looking like he had suffered from much injustice: “But, I really have not lost! Look!” As he said that, he removed his Wind Hat and handed it to Shangguan Bing'er.

Shangguan Bing'er took the Wind Hat from him and was rather shocked. This was obviously much heavier than an ordinary Wind Hat, and pinching it with her hand, she immediately understood. Looking again at Zhou Weiqing with that suffering expression on his face, she almost laughed out loud. This rascal really was afraid of death These few days she had thought he had turned proper, but it seems like, it was not easy for a leopard to change his spots.

Xiao Se looked at that the strange expression on Shangguan Bing'er's face, and focused his gaze on the Wind Hat. "Hmmm, eh-hh that Wind Hat seems rather big."

Shangguan Bing'er passed the Wind Hat to her, and in an instance, Xiao Se's expression also changed, looking at Zhou Weiqing with a rather solemn and sombre expression, making Zhou Weiqing feel very uncomfortable.

The Wind Hat was passed around, and after a while, the expressions of all the Company Leaders had turned strange. The Company Leader Li of the First Battalion sighed and said: "Talented... damned you really are a talented person. You can even come up with such a method... This little hat is made out of titanium alloy right, otherwise it wouldn't be so light with such mass. No wonder you said that you have not died, even a normal arrow probably will not be able to penetrate it! Battalion Commander Shang Gong, our First Battalion has lost this Fresh Recruit Tournament. Little Bro Little Fatty Zhou, this older brother has a favorable impression of you."

Very obviously, such a titanium alloy Wind Hat was impossible to be widely distributed in the army, after all its creation cost was way too expensive. However, who could say more in this Fresh Recruit Tournament. Did Zhou Weiqing violate any rule? He had spent his own money for his own equipment, how could that be considered violating a rule? Furthermore, Zhou Weiqing's impressive archery had gotten the approval of all these Company Leaders.

Shangguan Bing'er shot a look at Zhou Weiqing, then a look at Xiao Se at the side who was silent now, and the corners of her mouth went up slightly. "Let's go then, it's time for us to have a look at the situation of the Light and Heavy Infantry Companies."

Zhou Weiqing continued on his Personal Aide role, and moved to stand behind Shangguan Bing'er. As he passed her, he said in a very low, gentle tone that only the two of them could hear "Bing'er".

Shangguan Bing'er's shoulder shook a little obviously, but she had to concede her gambling debt. Furthermore, she could not act out in front of so many people, lest Zhou Weiqing said anything aloud to embarrass her, instead she quickly hastened her steps to lead the other Company Leaders towards the other two tournament grounds.

Zhou Weiqing was just about to follow them, but suddenly one of his arms was tightly gripped by someone. When he turned his head to look, he realised it was Xiao Se.

Xiao Se's expression was somewhat ugly, saying in a low tone: "Little Fatty Zhou, do you have the guts to compete with me?"

Chapter 16 – Fresh Recruit Tournament (4)

Zhou Weiqing looked at her carefully, shaking his head without hesitation and said: “No I don’t want to.”

Xiao Se arched her eyebrow and said: “Are you afraid?”

Zhou Weiqing asked in return: “Why should I compete with you? What advantage would that bring me?”

Xiao Se said coldly: “If you can defeat me, how about I give you my position of Company Leader?”

Zhou Weiqing’s eyeballs swirled around and he said: “And what if I lose?”

Xiao Se said bitterly: “Then you get lost from our military camp, or at least from our 3rd Battalion.” She knew that she definitely could not beat Shangguan Bing’er in individual strength as she was a Heavenly Jewel Master, but she definitely believed she was much stronger than her in military command. However, this Little Fatty Zhou had suddenly appeared and actually completely disrupted her plan to upset Shangguan Bing’er. That also meant that it would be even more difficult for her to snatch the position of Battalion Commander, furthermore, her most important goal was to prove she excelled as much as Shangguan Bing’er.

“Nope, what’s so good about being a Company Leader? How can it compare to following the beautiful Battalion Commander, that’s so comfortable.” Zhou Weiqing shook his head once again

repeatedly, a serious expression on his face. Of course, within his heart he was already laughing, thinking to himself: Xiao Se, Xiao Ruse, heh heh.

“How old are you? Do you think of nothing but romantic relationships in your head? What do you want then?” Anger flashed in Xiao Se’s eyes.

Zhou Weiqing shrugged and said: “How about this, if I lose, as you said I will leave the Battalion Commander, and leave our 3rd Battalion. However, if you lose, you must accept one condition from me. However, I haven’t thought of what this condition will be yet.”

Xiao Se’s brow furrowed as she looked sharply at Zhou Weiqing, however this Little Fatty Zhou had a pure and good-hearted looking face with a simple and honest appearance, and just notice anything from just looking at him, that was really too difficult.

“It can only be something that I can do, and it cannot involve my family, or do something against my conscience.” After some thought, Xiao Se agreed in a solemn voice. She really needed to make this Little Fatty Zhou leave Shangguan Bing’er, otherwise with such a recruit with such high potential on her side in the army, how could she compete with her? Furthermore, she had trained hard on her archery all these years, although Little Fatty Zhou had displayed some impressive archery earlier, but she was still confident in beating him.

“Okay.” Zhou Weiqing complied happily.

“Come with me.” Xiao Se turned around and walked off, heading towards the Stars Forest near the Heavenly Bow City.

Zhou Weiqing took a quick look Shangguan Bing'er who was watching the remaining tournament. Seeing that she was not paying attention to him, he quickly slid away quietly.

Xiao Se walked to the edge of the Stars Forest before stopping to wait for Zhou Weiqing.

Zhou Weiqing arrived at her side and asked: “How do you want to fight?”

Xiao Se said solemnly: “1v1, you and I. The forest is the place which can best display an archer's strength. We will enter the forest at the same time, get a distance of 300 yards between us, and when I say start, we shall both attack each other. Whoever hits the enemy first will win, how does that sound?”

Zhou Weiqing said cautiously: “Company Leader Xiao, you aren't trying to shoot me with a real arrow right?”

Xiao Se said angrily: “Bullshit, you are a soldier of our Empire, why would I want to kill you? Although your father I do not like you, but you are not worth me killing you. We'll be using the training arrows.” As she said that, she took off a quiver of arrows and threw it to Zhou Weiqing, while she took out another quiver of her own, with both quivers holding 50 arrows.

Zhou Weiqing stretched himself and said: “Please go ahead, Company Leader Xiao.”

Xiao Se gave a cold humph, and quickly entered the Stars Forest. Zhou Weiqing could clearly see a Purple Dawn Bow on her back as well. With her family’s influence in the Heavenly Bow City, it was really easy to get hold of another Purple Dawn Bow.

Upon seeing Xiao Se entering the Stars Forest, Zhou Weiqing also made his move and entered. In his heart he mused: Ruse Sis, let me see how your skill now after the seven years that we haven’t met.

Very soon they had both entered deep into the forest, and after a while, Xiao Se’s sound resounded from the distance: “Little Fatty Zhou, are you ready?”

“Yes, let’s do this.” Zhou Weiqing shouted back in agreement. As he said that, he quickly moved from his previous position, vaulting up into a tree.

“Start!” Xiao Se shouted out coolly.

Just as they were starting their fight in the Stars Forest, at the other side, Shangguan Bing’er had also discovered Zhou Weiqing’s disappearance.

“Where is Little Fatty Zhou?” Shangguan Bing’er looked somewhat anxiously around for Zhou Weiqing.

One of the Company Leaders said in a low voice: “Battalion Commander, I saw him and Company Leader Xiao walking off just a while back, they are both from your Battalion, there shouldn’t be any issue right?”

Shangguan Bing’er’s expression changed slightly, but quickly returned to normal again and she said passively: “Alright, no worries, it’ll be good to teach him a lesson.”

The Company Leader grinned and didn’t say anything else. Alas, how would he know that the “him” that Shangguan Bing’er was referring to was not Zhou Weiqing, but Xiao Se.

In the Stars Forest, Zhou Weiqing was waiting quietly deep in a large tree full of leaves and branches, with the Purple Dawn Bow in his grasp. He was like a cheetah awaiting its prey, and in his body, his Heavenly Energy was revolving quietly, and his Heavenly Jewels appearing around his wrist. The six color wheel disk was present in his sight, and his senses were all significantly improved, every slight sound and movement from the surroundings being processed by him.

“Little Fatty Zhou, are you afraid?” At this time, Xiao Se’s sound sounded out suddenly, obviously much closer than before. His sound was somewhat drifting, and it was obvious that she was moving at high-speeds.

Zhou Weiqing naturally was not silly enough to reply, as he continued his silent ambush in the tree. The attribute wheel disk

in his eyes revolved to the black region representing the Darkness Attribute, and immediately a dark and gloomy aura proliferated his entire body. 12 black shadows silently moved forth from his body, spreading out from the tree and gliding off all around into the shadows. If one looked carefully, he would discover that those black shadows looked very much like vines as thick as a human's arm, but they did not have any actual substance, and they passed by silently and without any disturbance.

This was Zhou Weiqing's first Skill Stored in his Alexandrite Cat's Eye Elemental Jewel from one of the Zong stage Darkness Heavenly Beast, and the skill name was called the 'Touch of Darkness'.

In the Skill-Storing Palace, Zhou Weiqing's Skill-Storing attempts had actually all succeeded. However, it was unlike during the Physical Jewel Consolidating Equipment which had depended on his Darkness and Evil attributes superimposing to succeed. When Zhou Weiqing had first entered the Skill-Storing Palace and saw the sealed Zong Stage Heavenly Beasts, he was actually unbearable frightened. Most of the Zong Stage Heavenly Beasts were extremely huge, and all of them gave forth a terrifying aura.

When Zhou Weiqing attempted a Skill-Storing on a Zong Stage Heavenly Beast, a different phenomenon occurred. The reason why Skill-Storing on the Elemental Jewel usually failed easily was because even if the Heavenly Beast was at its weakest and sealed up, it would still subconsciously resist with all its might. This would affect the Elemental or Heavenly Jewel Masters who were trying to absorb their Skills into their own Elemental Jewels. However, when Zhou Weiqing carried out the Skill-Storing on the Zong Stage Heavenly Beast, according to the normal process, a

Zong Stage Heavenly Beast's internal energy resisting would easily shake him away to fly off. However, the reality was that the sealed Heavenly Beasts actually did not resist at all and instead coordinated with him to allow him to Store Skills. As he had continued to do so with several Zong Stage Heavenly Beasts, Zhou Weiqing even felt that those Heavenly Beasts actually seemed to be shivering, seemingly afraid of him.

Chapter 17 – Touch of Darkness (1)

After discovering that the Zong Stage Heavenly Beasts were afraid of him and thus coordinated with his Skill-Storing, Zhou Weiqing thought for a long while and realised that without a doubt, this had to be connected to that strange black pearl. The black pearl had often given him the image of the large winged black tiger, and the tiger was also considered the king of beasts, it was likely that all the Heavenly Beasts were afraid its aura.

After only spending 50,000 gold coins, Zhou Weiqing had managed to complete a magnificent feat that many others would fail even with 5 million gold coins. Presently, he was truly a Heavenly Jewel Master at full strength, complete with Skills and Equipment.

The Touch of Darkness at its current basic level could send forth 12 dark tentacles, which could be dispersed around the body in a radius of 25 meters, within this radius, Zhou Weiqing's senses would be tripled by the Skill. At the same time, once he had selected a target, and it was touched by any of the tentacles, the tentacles would latch onto the target at a 1000 jin pulling force under his control. As long as the target's strength was less than 1000 jin, or perhaps it would be more accurate to say if its strength of struggling to break free did not reach 1000 jin, then it would be immediately drawn to Zhou Weiqing in a stunned state.

This was a skill that Zhou Weiqing had gotten from a huge black big octopus, and it was said that if this Zong Stage Heavenly Beast used it, the Touch of Darkness' radius was up to one kilometer, and once it reached its target, it's sealing strength was more than 100,000 jin strength and it was used to pull in its food

instantaneously.

Zhou Weiqing knew from Shangguan Bing'er that the skills would improve and evolve automatically as the number of Elemental Jewel increased, and the evolution rate of the skills for Heavenly Jewel Masters was once again one-and-a-half times that of an ordinary Elemental Jewel Master. As such, if his cultivation in the future reached a certain point, the strength of this 'Touch of Darkness' skill would also naturally become extremely terrifying, and could absolutely be classified as one of the Darkness Attribute's top skills.

After releasing the 'Touch of Darkness' Skill, Zhou Weiqing did not have any more worries; a radius of 25 meters was definitely not small, and as long as Xiao Se entered the region, he would definitely win. Using archery alone to compete? Only a fool would do that, after all looking at her self-confident appearance it was clear that her archery was definitely very good. Previously since he had never been able to cultivate Heavenly Energy, during the Fresh Recruit Tournament Zhou Weiqing had only been able to make use of the archery that he had learnt previously and brought it to its maximum capacity. As for much more profound archery skills that required the support of Heavenly Energy, he naturally had not learnt them yet.

At this point, Xiao Se was also feeling strange, why did this Little Fatty Zhou not have any sound or movement. Normally, since she had already purposely made some noise for him to hear, even if he did not reply, he should have shot some arrows! As she thought about it, she advanced cautiously forward.

Unfortunately for Zhou Weiqing, after a short bout of self-satisfaction, he became a little depressed. This was because he discovered although this Touch of Darkness skill was a very good, but after releasing it, it actually consumed a huge amount of Heavenly Energy to maintain it. Although due to the fact that he had not fully activated the target yet, the speed of consumption was still considered not very fast, but with his level four Heavenly Energy, the amount of time that he could sustain it was still quite limited.

What should I do? It seems like it isn't possible to just wait any longer, otherwise, if my Heavenly Energy has been exhausted, I may not necessarily be able to defeat her.

As he thought about that, Zhou Weiqing carefully slid down from the tree, picked up a the stone from the ground, and threw it to the front.

The stone fell in the shrubbery, immediately giving out a light ping sound. However, to Zhou Weiqing's surprise, Xiao Se's arrows did not actually shoot forth.

At the other side, the corners of Xiao Se's mouth twitched upwards. Throwing a stone to scout me out? Are you really trying to deceive me with such a small trick? She jumped up gently, grabbing hold of a branch of a big tree and vaulting up, quietly and slowly approaching the area where the sound came from. As an outstanding archer, being calm and steady were essential qualities.

Zhou Weiqing seeing that his previous idea had failed, came up with another suddenly. With his back to a large tree, he suddenly

called out: "I am here."

This time, Xiao Se did not hesitate at all, and an arrow whizzed out instantly, accurately hitting the large tree that Zhou Weiqing was hiding behind, giving forth a light ping sound. After all, she was also using a Purple Dawn Bow, and the arrow had much inertia behind it, and upon striking the tree, caused it to shake.

Just as Zhou Weiqing wanted to change positions, he suddenly felt an intense sense through the Touch of Darkness skill, and he immediately froze. Whiz Whiz Two arrows arrived almost instantaneously in the next moment, hitting the area the previous arrow had struck.

Damned, so strong! Rapid fire arrows plus a double salvo shot at the same time, no wonder she had such self-confidence.

The so-called rapid fire arrow was referring to shooting arrows one after the other at extremely high speeds, and a double salvo shot referred to using a bow to shoot out double arrows at the same time. These were all extremely high-grade archery, and was difficult to master. This was especially so for the the double salvo shot, to simultaneously shoot two arrows accurately at the same time, you could imagine its difficulty.

At this point, Xiao Se was about 150 yards away from Zhou Weiqing, and as she continued shooting, she had jumped down from the large tree, moving quickly towards Zhou Weiqing. Her right hand was moving like lightning, arrows leaping into her hands one after another unceasingly, and being shot out instantly by the Purple Dawn Bow, suppressing Zhou Weiqing completely at

the large tree he was hiding behind, causing him to be unable to flee. At the same time, Xiao Se was quickly changing positions all the time, closing in onto him as she circled around to try to get a clean shot off.

Xiao Se's rapid fire arrows were just too quick, even with Zhou Weiqing relying on the increased senses that the Touch of Darkness granted, he was not able to fully grasp their path to dodge them. After all, at a 100 yards distances, the strength of the Purple Dawn Bow coupled with this astonishing rate of fire, with his present skill it was too difficult for him to dodge.

As the distance between them closed quickly, it was only a matter of seconds before the gap had been reduced to 80 yards. Xiao Se's arrows also came faster and faster, and Zhou Weiqing could only depend on his instincts to unceasingly move around the tree, making use of it as cover.

Xiao Se's mouth was curled in a cold smirk. In her eyes, she had already won this competition. She still had more than 20 arrows in her quiver, and as long as she reached the distance of 50 yards, with her own cultivation stage of second level Heavenly Energy, it was more than sufficient to shoot through that battered large tree. When that time comes, how would Zhou Weiqing hide without any cover. This would be an easy victory.

However, at this moment, the hiding Zhou Weiqing suddenly got a burst of inspiration, thinking to himself, I'm not just a Heavenly Jewel Master, I'm a Heavenly Jewel Master archer!

Quickly withdrawing the Touch of Darkness, Zhou Weiqing

leaned the Purple Dawn Bow onto the trunk of the large tree, though the attribute wheel disk still remained in the black Darkness region.

With a lift of his right hand, a dim icy fog spread, and the Overlord Bow appeared in his grasp as he continued pouring his Heavenly Energy into the Physical Jewel, and after a while the bowstring finally appeared quietly. Zhou Weiqing switched the bow over to his left hand, and with a quick thought focusing on his Elemental Jewel, the Alexandrite Cat's Eye on his wrist moved off, rolled down quietly, and actually fell into the indentation of the Overlord Bow. Immediately, the whole Overlord Bow shone with a bright light from the Alexandrite Cat's Eye.

Chapter 17 – Touch of Darkness (2)

At the instance when the Alexandrite Cat's Eye entered the socket on the Overlord Bow, Zhou Weiqing felt his Heavenly Energy drop drastically, and he did not dare to delay any further, quickly drawing the bow and nocking an arrow.

To his surprise, he found that the tensile strength of the Overlord Bow was unexpectedly almost ten times that of the Purple Dawn Bow; even with the strength boost from his Physical Jewel, he barely managed to fully draw the bow to a full crescent. By the time he had managed to do so, his forehead was already full of perspiration from the exertion, and almost a full third of his Heavenly Energy had been consumed.

Under the control of his will, the black light instantaneously spread out from the Alexandrite Cat's Eye Jewel, with black tattoos quickly spreading over the whole Overlord Bow, even down to the bowstring turning black totally. The arrow nocked on the bowstring started to quiver slightly, as if it was almost unable to withstand the huge energy within, and might rupture at any moment.

Taking in a deep breath, Zhou Weiqing turned round suddenly and fiercely, revealing only his right hand and the Overlord Bow, while his body still remained hidden behind the tree. With a quick aim, he released his grip on the bowstring, and the arrow flew out.

It was not possible to directly use the Elemental Jewel Skills on a bow and arrow, but through the Physical Jewel's Consolidated Equipment which had the indentations inscribed, it was actually

possible to do so. This was Zhou Weiqing's first time really using his Physical Jewel Consolidated Equipment fused with his Elemental Jewel Skills, and just this arrow alone drained half of his Heavenly Energy.

At the moment when Zhou Weiqing loosened the Overlord Bow's bowstring, he felt as though his entire body had been drained dry, his whole body shivering, and a loud roar resounded through the forest in an explosion. Even with Zhou Weiqing's eyesight, he had still not been able to see the arrow's movement clearly, and had only been able to hear the deafening roar thundering about 70 yards away, and the trembling of the earth transmitted through the feet.

"Damned, is this lighting of fireworks?" Zhou Weiqing was greatly startled and he quickly jumped up to look, and what was in front of him was an incredibly shocking scene.

Just 70 yards away, on the ground, there was a huge hole of about five meter diameter, one and a half metres deep. Around the hole, the surrounding area in a radius of about 30 meters were leafs, wood and various plant parts dropping from the sky everywhere. The 12 black tentacles were tightly wound around Xiao Se's body, and Xiao Se was right in the middle of the huge hole, obviously having been drawn forcefully there by the Touch of Darkness, and she was in a dazed state.

Once the Touch of Darkness had latched onto a target, unless the target was able to break free through sheer strength, otherwise, before Zhou Weiqing's Heavenly Energy ran out, it would continue binding the target.

Zhou Weiqing quickly kept the Overlord Bow, calmly picking up his Purple Dawn Bow and nocked another arrow before walking towards Xiao Se.

After a short bout of being stunned, Xiao Se gradually awoke, the stun duration lasting around 4-5 seconds. This was not just the effect of the Touch of Darkness, but also due to the sheer power of the Overlord Bow's arrow, causing her to be stunned by the impact as well. Zhou Weiqing had really not expected the Overlord Bow combined with the Alexandrite Cat's Eye had such immense power.

This Overlord Bow that was just his first Physical Jewel's Consolidated Equipment had an attack range of almost a whole kilometer, and by itself possessed an explosive effect. This was also the reason why it consumed so much Heavenly Energy from Zhou Weiqing. In addition to the Touch of Darkness, Zhou Weiqing barely had a third of his Heavenly Energy left currently.

Xiao Se could not believe that everything before her was real. Just a moment ago, she had been completely suppressing Zhou Weiqing, and was just a short step away from victory. All of a sudden, a huge roar sounded out, and before she could react, a large explosion had blown up just a few yards from here, and the corresponding shock-wave had stunned her. She was after all not a Jewel Master, although although she had managed to cultivate to the second level of Heavenly Energy, and her physique was definitely above average, but faced with such a sudden strong explosion, she had been knocked away and stunned. By the time she had awoken, she had already found herself bound by those black shadowy tentacles and she was unable to break free of them,

and that Little Fatty Zhou was already in front of her with a drawn arrow pointing at her.

“You’ve lost.” Zhou Weiqing said lazily.

Xiao Se’s eyes narrowed as she said: “Are you a Jewel Master?”

Zhou Weiqing nodded, lifting up his right wrist and revealed the glittering, translucent Icy Jade Physical Jewel and said: “More accurately, I am a Heavenly Jewel Master.”

Xiao Se shivered slightly, her eyes full of shock, and seeing that Zhou Weiqing was less than 50 yards from her, she said dejectedly: “I admit defeat. Losing to a Heavenly Jewel Master, I guess it isn’t an unjust loss.”

Quickly expelling the Touch of Darkness, Zhou Weiqing grinned as he also kept the arrow. Just as he was about to go forward to greet Xiao Se and tell her who he was, all of a sudden, the dejected look on Xiao Se’s face disappeared, and in a quick flash, her Purple Dawn Bow was drawn and nocked, pointed at Zhou Weiqing. Her speed was just too quick, and with some self-examination, Zhou Weiqing found that even if he used the wind attribute, he would still be slower than her. This was the result of years of repeated training in archery.

Zhou Weiqing quickly halted his footsteps. At such a close distance, it would be impossible for him to dodge an arrow fired from that Purple Dawn Bow.

“You’re cheating so shamelessly!” Zhou Weiqing stared at Xiao Se.

Xiao Se’s eyes revealed a teasing light, “Did I act shamelessly? Oh, were you referring to my words earlier admitting defeat? How foolish, how can you believe the words of enemies so easily? If this was the battlefield, you would already be dead. Didn’t we agree to the terms of the competition? The terms were the person who hit the opposite side would get the win, there was nothing mentioned about admitting defeat orally. You are the one who has lost.”

As she said that, Xiao Se lifted her finger lightly, and the arrow flew out at top speed toward Zhou Weiqing. Since she had pointed out Zhou Weiqing’s mistake, naturally she would not commit the same mistake.

However, in the next instance, Xiao Se’s pupils suddenly contracted and her body stiffened in shock. This was because the arrow that she had thought was a definite win had actually failed somehow. Zhou Weiqing seemed to have vanished into thin air just as Xiao Se released her arrow. He then quickly appeared three yards away, and a silver light flashed around his body. His whole body then quickly leapt forward like a leopard towards Xiao Se.

‘Blink’, did he use the Blink skill a moment ago? Although Xiao Se was not a Jewel Master, but she was experienced and knowledgeable. She was very clear that this Blink skill was considered the top supporting skill within the first three Elemental Jewels! This was not even considering that he had used a skill from the darkness alignment earlier. Did he really have a dual attribute Elemental Jewel? This was really the main cause for her surprise.

Chapter 17 – Touch of Darkness (3)

Xiao Se's response was considered extremely quick, after a short period of shock, she quickly lifted up her Purple Dawn Bow again. After all, she believed that Zhou Weiqing was only at the level of a single Jewel, and it would be impossible for him to keep using the Blink Skill. Under her own rapid fire arrows, he should not be able to continue dodging.

However, at the instance that she lifted up her Purple Dawn Bow, she suddenly felt the surrounding air twist fiercely around her, a blue light descending upon her as she realised that she could no longer move.

Within the time it took to take three breaths, Zhou Weiqing had crossed the 50 yard gap and was now standing in front of Xiao Se, with a big smile on his face, his usual simple and honest smiling face on display. Then, that rascal took out an arrow from his quiver, using the white lime on the arrow to draw a circle in the middle of her chest, before completing the circle with a dot in the middle.

“This counts as my win right?” After he had completed that, Xiao Se discovered that she could move her body again.

“Wind, that was a Wind Attribute Skill you used just now. You, you...” This time, Xiao Se had totally forgotten about winning or losing, and was staring at Zhou Weiqing, her eyes filled with shock and disbelief.

Earlier, when Zhou Weiqing had showed his strength as a Heavenly Jewel Master, although she was rather shocked in her heart, but she could still maintain her calm. After all, if the Empire got another Heavenly Jewel Master, it was definitely a good thing, no wonder Shangguan Bing'er made him her Personal Aide. However, at this moment, seeing Zhou Weiqing in front of her and drawing the mark on her chest, she finally realised that this seemingly foolhardy was unexpectedly even more talented than Shangguan Bing'er! He had actually used two different attribute's Control-Type Skills, and also a support skill one after the other! It was known that no matter Elemental Jewel Masters or Heavenly Jewel Masters, what they were most feared for was not the attack or defensive skills, but this sort of Control Type or Support Skills. However, it was extremely difficult to store these type of Skills, and only Zun Stage Heavenly Beasts and above had these Skills. As such, most Heavenly Jewel Masters had to cultivate to at least six sets of Jewel before they could get these Skills. Seeing Zhou Little Fatty displaying three of them in succession, how could she not be surprised?

“Hey, Company Leader Xiao, you’ve lost. This time you won’t go back on your word again right?” Zhou Weiqing lifted his hand in front of Xiao Se’s eyes and waved it around, though in truth, the pride in his heart was long gone.

After using those few skills in succession, the Heavenly Energy in his body was nearly totally exhausted, but he was only facing an ordinary person who was not even a Jewel Master. Of course, there was a small factor that he could not unleash his full power onto Xiao Se or risk killing her, but it was also a sign that his usage and application of the skills were still very lacking, and he needed a lot more practice.

Blink, Zhou Weiqing's first Spatial Attribute Skill, and even being at the most basic first jewel stage, Blink still allowed him to instantaneously teleport anywhere within a three meters diameter instantaneously. It seemed very simple, but this skill was not the Top Support Skill for the first Three Jewels for nothing, and was indeed a formidable skill that could save his life many times over. Indeed, without this skill, he would have lost earlier.

The 'Fetters of Wind', this was Zhou Weiqing's first Wind Attribute Skill, and at the basic first jewel stage, it was able to lock onto a target within 50 yards instantly, as long as the target's Heavenly Energy did not surpass him by more than five levels, he would be bound for three seconds. If the targets' cultivation was even lower than his, he would be bound for an additional second for every level of Heavenly Energy he was lower than Zhou Weiqing.

Although both the Touch of Darkness and Fetters of Wind were control type skills, but they both had pretty different effects. In terms of effective range, the Touch of Darkness had a radius of 25 meters, but the Fetters of Wind was that of 50 meters. However, the Touch of Darkness could affect multiple targets as well as inflicting some additional supporting effects, but the Fetters of Wind was a pure single target control ability.

It could be said that the Touch of Darkness was inferior to the Fetters of Wind in terms of just pure single target control ability, but adding on its enhanced senses and other functions, it was on the whole slightly stronger than the Fetters of Wind. This is the superiority of one of the Greater Attributes.

Do not think that both these skills were overlapping and thus useless. With his present level of cultivation, Zhou Weiqing required an adjustment time of over five seconds after using any skill before using it again. However, once he changed attributes, this issue would disappear. Furthermore, there was also the difference in range and requirements that different situations would allow him to use different skills.

Of course, this did not mean that Zhou Weiqing was so intelligent in planning all of that during his process of Skill Storing. The main key was that he had did his Skill Storing on all the Zong Stage Heavenly Beasts; and of course, would such a Heavenly Beast have any trash skills?

Xiao Se looked at Zhou Weiqing with a changing complexion, before she finally sighed and threw away the Purple Dawn Bow in her hands, and turned around to walk away.

Lost, she had lost, not just to Shangguan Bing'er, but also to this Zhou Little Fatty. With these two Heavenly Jewel Masters together, how could she possibly compete with Shangguan Bing'er? Xiao Se was at this moment feeling very bitter and depressed in her heart. It seemed like no matter how hard she worked, she just could not compare with others' talent!

“Are you just going to walk away like that!” Zhou Weiqing picked up Xiao Se's Purple Dawn Bow and pursued her quickly, blocking her way.

Xiao Se looked at that simple and honest looking, but truly sly, Zhou Little Fatty, and said angrily: “I've already lost, what else do

you want?”

Zhou Weiqing said leisurely: “If I did not remember wrongly, we were gambling on the outcome of this competition.”

Xiao Se’s look changed, “What do you want?”

Zhou Weiqing took a step forward, grinning as he said: “I suddenly remembered what you gambled – anything that I asked.”

Xiao Se took a step back and her brow furrowed: “Don’t stand so close to me. I will honour my gambling debts. Speak.”

Just as she finished speaking, all of a sudden, Zhou Weiqing took another step forward. The distance between them was originally less than one yard, and this step forward caused both their bodies to be pushed up against each other. Before Xiao Se could react, Zhou Weiqing had moved his head forward and kissed her.

Xiao Se was totally shocked by that kiss, and almost subconsciously reacted with a quick slap. Zhou Weiqing seemed to expect it coming, and with a quick duck, he managed to dodge Xiao Se’s slap “Ru Se Elder Sis, you cannot go back on your agreement, this is my condition for your gambling loss.”

Xiao Se had already awoken back to reality, her jade-like face flushed red in embarrassment. However, she stared at him with her eyes widened: “What did you call me?”

Zhou Weiqing took two steps back again and grinned as he said: “Ru Se Elder Sis, stop trying to act! Uncle Xiao only has one daughter, others might not know this, but how can I not know? I am Zhou Weiqing!”

“Ahhh? You are Zhou Weiqing that little mucus brat?” Xiao Ru Se’s face was full of shock. However, in the next instance, she had drawn out her sword from her waist, pointing it at Zhou Weiqing, saying coldly: “Who are you trying to deceive. Zhou Weiqing that little mucus brat should be 14 years old this year, look at yourself, do you think you can pass as 14 years old?”

Chapter 17 – Touch of Darkness (4)

Zhou Weiqing did not dodge, his face showing helplessness, “Ru Se Sis, I can’t be blamed for having an early good growth!” As he said that, he subtly shot a glance at Xiao Ru Se’s rather flat chest.

“What are you staring at! If you continue looking, [this old mother](#) will dig out your eyes! If you cannot produce any evidence supporting your claim, I will catch you and bring you back to the camp to handle according to military law.” At this time, Xiao Ru Se had become very flustered, almost forgetting that Zhou Weiqing was a Heavenly Jewel Master. Although her disposition was always very calm, but after just experiencing all these various shocks, added to the fact that Weiqing had kiss her face, how could she possibly maintain her calm?

Zhou Weiqing lowered his head, and both his hands started to take off his belt.

“What are you doing?” Xiao Ru Se’s long sword shot forward, arriving just in front of him.

Zhou Weiqing had an expression on as if he were suffering from injustice: “Didn’t you just ask me to produce some evidence? When we were younger, you led me to the riverside to play with water, and you’ve seen the red birthmark I have on my [***](#), let me show you as proof.” As he said that, he did not wait for Xiao Ru Se to reject the plan, and that little rascal had turned around and pulled down his pants, revealing his big white ***.

Indeed, on the left side of his ***, there was a bright red birthmark.

Xiao Ru Se was clearly stunned for a moment, as she blushed deeply, then she quickly turned around as she said: “Quickly wear your pants, so ugly!”

Zhou Weiqing quickly put on his pants again, and said with a smile: “Ru Se Sis, now do you believe me.”

Xiao Ru Se stole a quick glance back and saw that he had already worn back his pants, and sheathed her long sword while asking surprisedly: “Are you really Zhou Weiqing that snot nosed brat? That isn’t right! Weren’t your meridians blocked?” As she said up to here, she suddenly stopped talking.

“I used to be a trash last time, that doesn’t mean I’ll always be a trash.” Zhou Weiqing said nonchalantly. “Ru Se Sis, when I was young and was discovered to have blocked meridians, none of the children of the same age would pay any attention to me, only you were willing to bring me around to play. After we separated, seven years have passed! At that time, I was always thinking of you, thinking how good it would be if you really were my real biological older sister.”

As he said that, Zhou Weiqing’s eyes reddened with emotion. In his 14 years living, there were only two people who he was the closest to – one was his mother, and the other was Xiao Ru Se. It can be said that during Zhou Weiqing’s childhood, Xiao Ru Se occupied an enormous component.

“Little snot nosed brat, you’re already too big to continue crying so much like that! You have really changed so much, even this elder sister did not recognize you. Zhou Little Fatty, Zhou Little Fatty, I should have known that it was you!” Xiao Ru Se stretched out her arms, and hugged the taller Zhou Weiqing, just like in the past when she protected him.

In Xiao Ru Se’s arms, Zhou Weiqing only felt that her front was very hard, and did not know if she had padded it. Her body did not have a girl’s effeminacy, only a clean light smell that felt especially comfortable.

However, after hugging for few seconds, Xiao Ru Se suddenly awoke to reality and shoved Zhou Weiqing aside. “Little brat, you knew that it was me earlier right? Hmph, and you still dared to break my Purple Dawn Bow, and make fun of me? Is your skin itchy?”

Zhou Weiqing was given a scare: “Elder Sis, listen to my explanation. I had not recognized you at that time!”

“I don’t believe you. I was so angered by you just now. Let me first vent my anger then we’ll speak.”

“Ahhhhhhhhh!!!”

One hour later...

Zhou Weiqing and Xiao Ru Se were sitting together under a large tree, as Zhou Weiqing told her about the recent events; him swallowing the black pearl, how he ran to to sign on in the army, as well as the events after that in detail. He regarded Xiao Ruse as one of his closest, most intimate friends, and naturally did not conceal anything from her, even telling her about Shangguan Bing'er's relations with him.

“No wonder she treats you so differently, I had not expected that, you actually did that to her...Hahaha...” Xiao Ru Se suddenly laughed out loud, startling Zhou Weiqing into jumping up.

“Elder Sis, what are you laughing at?”

Xiao Ru Se rubbed her belly which was aching from her excessive laughter, before saying: “This repays any enmity I have with her. Shangguan Bing'er snatched my position of Battalion Commander although she does not know anything about directing or commanding an army. I never expected that she'll be taken advantage of by a brat like you. Oh well, [rich waters should be kept in our own fields](#), after all she is a Heavenly Jewel Master. Who knew that she would actually become the sacrificial offering to Awaken your Heavenly Jewels, little snot nosed brat, I hadn't expected that your luck was so good.”

Zhou Weiqing said with a woebegone expression on his face: “Elder Sis, I have already enlisted in the military, can you not call me Little snot nosed brat anymore?”

Xiao Ru Se gave a hmph as she said: “No matter how big you are, in my eyes you are still that little snot nosed brat. What are your

future plans though? Why didn't you tell Uncle Zhou about you becoming a Heavenly Jewel Master? He has dreamed of this day for so long."

Zhou Weiqing shook his head and said: "I do not want to go back. When I was still a trash, I was tortured so much by that strict father, if he knows that I have become a Heavenly Jewel Master, how can I have a good life?"

Xiao Ruse said with a faint smile: "Little Brat, I think it is more that you do not want to give up Shangguan Bing'er right."

Zhou Weiqing did not try to conceal the fact and nodded as he said: "Yes I do not want to give her up. Although it was a misunderstanding that day, I was the one who hurt her! If it had been Princess Difyua, she probably would have killed me then. Yet, Shangguan Bing'er not only did not kill me, but also taught me how to cultivate. Elder Sis, I really really like her."

Xiao Ru Se looked at Zhou Weiqing; she did not know why, but she suddenly felt a bitter and sour feeling in her heart. After an awkward silence, she finally said faintly: "If you like her, then go ahead and pursue her. With our [Little Wei's](#) abilities, are you still afraid that you can't successfully chase her? Although Shangguan Bing'er is not much of a military commander, but she is really a good person. In the future, Elder Sis will not oppose her."

"Elder Sis, are you alright?" Zhou Weiqing looked at her doubtfully.

Xiao Ru Se was startled in her own heart. Yes! What's wrong with me? I am older than Weiqing by seven years!

“Why wouldn't I be alright. Let's go, it's time that we head back already. Otherwise, your beautiful Battalion Commander will be worried about you.” Xiao Ru Se made use of the chance to get up and prepare to move off, in order to cover the blush on her face.

Zhou Weiqing also stood up quickly, holding Xiao Ru Se's hand and said with a grin: “Elder Sis, if I had known earlier that Xiao Se was Xiao Ru Se, then I would have wished that you were the one who ran over on the day that my Jewel Awakened.”

“Bah! You even dare to tease your Elder Sis, do you think that I will not punch you!” Xiao Ru Se lifted her hand and thwapped Zhou Weiqing on the head, which he dodged with a large grin. As they ran towards the military compound, he said: “Does Elder Sis know? When I grew up, when father told me that my fiancée is Princess Difuya, I told him that I did not want Princess Difuya, but I wanted Ru Se Elder Sis instead.”

As he spoke those words, Zhou Weiqing ran off quickly, leaving Xiao Ru Se alone standing there for a while, before she followed. This time, she really felt the sense of disquiet in her heart.

Initially, after she had parted with Zhou Weiqing, she had gone all out in training in an attempt to complete her father's wish. However, she had fallen just short at the age of 16, and had not succeeded in Awakening her Power Jewels. Ever since that time, she dressed up as a man to enter the military school to study. She had also trained hard in archery, and two years ago she had finally

achieved something, managing to join the army with honours and had worked hard up till today. You could even say that there were only 2 men in her life who were most intimate to her, one was naturally her father, and the other was Zhou Weiqing.

like the female version of Your Father

The author literally puts ** there, 3rd one is mine =p He means ass here

肥水不落外人田 literal translation, basically means that it's better to keep any advantages within their circle, instead of letting outsiders get it

小维 Xiao/Little Wei, she is using it as a nickname for Weiqing.

Chapter 18 – Body Evolution, Super Right Leg (1)

“En...” A sudden stuffy and stifled cry awoke Xiao Ru Se from her thoughts; it was clearly Zhou Weiqing’s voice, and she hurried towards the direction the voice came from. When she saw Zhou Weiqing again, she was extremely surprised. “Little Wei, what happened to you?”

At this moment, Zhou Weiqing was rolling around on the ground, his military uniform had been thorn a lot by the thorny undergrowth, revealing his arms as well as the shining titanium alloy internal armor.

His breathing was ragged and heavy, and what made Xiao Ru Se’s heart tremble was the fact that both his eyes had turned bloodshot, and his whole body’s muscles had ballooned out, causing him to look as if he was a whole size bigger than before.

“Elder Sis, I am feeling so uncomfortable.” Zhou Weiqing’s voice was so hoarse, sounding just like an old man, while his body was twitching unceasingly. The most unusual thing was that although he was lying down on the ground, but his right leg was actually raised up high and curled upwards, and you could clearly hear his bones of his right leg moving and grinding from within, as if a heavy hammer was smashing the bones open and reforging them.

“Little Wei, what’s going on?” Xiao Ru Se wanted to go forward and support him, but a strong force actually emitted from Zhou Weiqing’s body suddenly, causing her to back up several steps before falling down.

With a ripping sound, Zhou Weiqing had torn off the clothes on his upper body due to the excessive pain, with only the internal armour remaining on his body tenaciously. On his granite-like, muscled body, the black tattoos were surging forth again just like tiger stripes, and on his forehead, a clear black 'King' word reappeared as well.

At this moment, the entire Stars Forest seemed to have quietened; just a moment ago the forest had been extremely lively with insects crying and birds warbling, and they had all stopped suddenly. The silence in the forest was almost deafening, and made it seem rather eerie, with only Zhou Weiqing's heavy breathing breaking the silence.

If it were anyone else, perhaps they would have been afraid of Zhou Weiqing's fierce appearance, but Xiao Ru Se was not. She grit her teeth tightly and threw herself forward a second time, grasping Zhou Weiqing's head and shouting to him loudly: "Little Wei, calm down, you need to calm down. Focus your Heavenly Energy and use it to calm your internal breathing."

Zhou Weiqing was currently feeling his heart being filled with a cruel, tyrannical, ruinous aura, giving him the urge to tear everything around him into shreds, with both his hands contorted into a claw shape as his bones were cracking. His hands had also grown to double the usual size in this short amount of time, with sharp claws faintly protruding out. The black tiger striped tattoos on his body became more and more obvious, and it felt as if he had inexhaustible strength surging forth from his body unceasingly...

His head being hugged by Xiao Ru Se, Zhou Weiqing subconsciously lifted his tiger claws and firmly grasped Xiao Ru Se by the shoulder, opening his mouth and was about to bite her on the neck.

Xiao Ru Se being held by his tiger claws, felt her whole body go numb, and found that she was not able to move at all, and her mind also fell into a blank.

Just as Zhou Weiqing was about to bite down, he suddenly stopped. Xiao Ru Se also awoke at that instance, and she could actually clearly feel his hot breath on her neck, making her skin crawl and shiver.

“No, No I cannot. You are Ru Se Elder Sis.” Zhou Weiqing muttered in a hoarse voice as he breathed heavily, and he quickly loosened his grip on Xiao Ru Se and shoved her backward. However, his head was grasped by her again.

“Little Wei, if it makes you feel better, you can go ahead and bite. Elder Sis is not afraid.” Xiao Ru Se extended her hand resolutely and placed it in front of Zhou Weiqing.

Zhou Weiqing's bloodshot eyes were filled with a cruel light, which seemed to become more intense. However, he managed to restrain himself and not bite down. In his heart, he had a very intense uneasy feeling, the feeling that if he took that bite, he would lose his Ru Se Elder Sis forever.

That intense feeling made him able to suppress the strong

negative feelings that had risen within him, though the cruel, tyrannical aura in his eyes did not diminish, but at least they did not continue increasing. Xiao Ru Se continued hugging his head, as he took in big gulps of air, panting hard for breath.

“You... What are you two doing?” All of a sudden, a surprised voice resounded out of nowhere. In a flash of light, [a person appeared right next to them.](#)

It was Shangguan Bing'er who had just arrived.

Earlier, when she had heard that Zhou Weiqing had been brought away by Xiao Se, she had not thought much about it. After all, Zhou Weiqing was a Heavenly Jewel Master, and how could Xiao Se be of a match to him? However, the Fresh Recruit Tournament had already ended, and yet both of them had not returned, and Shangguan Bing'er was feeling rather restless and uneasy in her heart. Although in her heart she claimed that she still abhorred and hated that Zhou Little Fatty for taking her first night, but she herself did not know that deep in her innermost feelings, Zhou Little Fatty had already inscribed his shadow there. This was a possible situation, when a girl had given her first time to someone, naturally she would form a profound impression of him, furthermore she had been spending every day with Zhou Weiqing for the last few months.

She decided to go around and look for them to assuage her feeling of unease. Relying on her new Physical Jewel Consolidated Equipment, the Wind Wielding Boots, she entered the Stars Forest at lightning speed, and just a moment ago, the roar that Zhou Weiqing had issued had drawn her to the scene.

From a distance, she saw Xiao Se and Zhou Weiqing, but she had never expected to see the scene before her – Xiao Se was hugging Zhou Weiqing's head unexpectedly, looking extremely intimate... In her understanding, Xiao Se was a man! A man hugging another man? This...

As she got closer, only then did Shangguan Bing'er realise that something was very wrong. When she saw Zhou Weiqing's fierce appearance with the tiger striped tattoos and the huge expanded muscles, and his terrifying bloodshot eyes, the trembling feeling in her heart spread over her entire body instantaneously. Was this not not just the circumstances that he was in when he took away her most precious thing a few months ago?

Xiao Ru Se saw Shangguan Bing'er standing there stunned, and immediately cried out angrily: "Silly! What are you doing standing there like that? Help me to hold him down quickly! You are also a Heavenly Jewel Master, what's going on?"

"I, I do not know..." Shangguan Bing'er squatted down in panic, although in the heart she was frightened of Zhou Weiqing's present appearance, but she did not want to just walk away.

As she squatted down, Shangguan Bing'er immediately saw how much pain Zhou Weiqing was in, how his whole body was wrecked in convulsion, and quickly called out: "Zhou Little Fatty, Zhou Little Fatty, calm down a little."

All this while, Zhou Weiqing had been semi conscious and not

very aware of what was going on, but all of a sudden he heard a familiar sound, and an incomparably familiar smell, and his body stiffened, suddenly moving on its own accord; springing loose from Xiao Ru Se's embrace, and with a low roar his two tiger claws had grasped onto Shangguan Bing'er's shoulders.

Shangguan Bing'er could have easily dodged it, especially since she had the Wind Wielding Boots. However, she chose not to do so, and in that instance, the thought in her mind was unexpectedly that if she died in his hands, that would be okay.

#Busted!

Chapter 18 – Body Evolution, Super Right Leg (2)

Although an immense strength was applied onto her, but Shangguan Bing'er was not torn into shreds by Zhou Weiqing as she expected, instead he grasped onto her shoulders, and hugged her closely.

Shangguan Bing'er was being choked by his grasp, and was gasping for breath; Zhou Weiqing's body was fiery hot, and she could feel it clearly even through the internal armor. Furthermore, his whole body was shivering constantly, and the heat was being transmitted to Shangguan Bing'er who was also starting to feel hotter. In her mind, she was subconsciously remembering that embarrassing day, he... he... shouldn't be doing that again...

Xiao Ru Se was also rather shocked at the side, in her heart she mused: This boy has turned bad...

Actually, what Xiao Ru Se did not know was that in the instance that Shangguan Bing'er appeared, Zhou Weiqing who had been semiconscious then had subconsciously grabbed hold and hugged Shangguan Bing'er totally by instinct. As he hugged her, he instantly felt a cooling breath flood into his body from her, allowing his dazed state of mind to slowly awaken; although his body was still in extreme pain, but that tyrannical, cruel and crazy mood actually started to subside.

The reason for his present condition was naturally once again the black pearl that he had swallowed. The black pearl was not from this world, and the vast amounts of energy it contained was

comparable to that of those top Heavenly Jewel Masters in this world. Although Zhou Weiqing had already went through the process of absorption once, and Awakened his Heavenly Jewels in that process, but it had by no means been able completely absorbed. Earlier on, while he was fighting with Xiao Ru Se, he had almost totally exhausted his own Heavenly Energy. In addition to that, he had a strong innermost feeling to of wanting to grow stronger, and that combined had caused the black pearl to act up once again, starting the process of them fusing for the second time.

As compared to the previous time when he had Awoken his Heavenly Jewels, this round of fusing was much lighter. The main reason that he felt the extreme pain in his body was because the energy in the black Pearl was actually improving and evolving his body forcefully, his bones, meridians, muscles, flesh and blood were all going through changes of varying degrees, it was as if he was having his bones broken and re-knit together in a unique way, how could this not be painful? Luckily, Shangguan Bing'er's appearance had allowed him to stabilize his feelings, otherwise Zhou Weiqing might have actually gone crazy.

Zhou Weiqing had taken Shangguan Bing'er as a sacrifice to Awaken his Heavenly Jewels, therefore Shangguan Bing'er's aura was very complementary and linked in some degree to himself. When he hugged Shangguan Bing'er, their auras merged, and the power from both her Heavenly Jewels helped alleviate his pain and stabilize him, allowing his state of mind to sober up. This was the factor that pulled him back from the brink of danger.

Peng Zhou Weiqing fell down while still hugging Shangguan Bing'er, his whole body pressing down onto her, almost causing this delicate and exquisite young girl to faint from lack of air. The

strangest thing was that his right leg was still curled in a weird angle, although the sounds of bones breaking and moving had obviously lessened.

Both of Shangguan Bing'er's hands fell on Zhou Weiqing's waist, at first to push and resist him, but now they fell into an embrace as their bodies were just too close together. Zhou Weiqing's [unique manly scent](#) as well as that strong dark aura were mixed together, causing Shangguan Bing'er to feel rather giddy. Although being crushed together with him almost made her faint, but a strange feeling also arose in her heart.

He, he won't do that, that again right? Xiao Se is still at the side too! Suddenly, Shangguan Bing'er felt both ashamed and angry, but Zhou Weiqing's strength was too great, how could she possibly break free?

Luckily, this time, Zhou Weiqing was not doing anything untoward like she imagined, but was only hugging her. Time seemed to stand still, as Xiao Ru Se stood at the side staring dumbfoundedly at them. However, Zhou Weiqing's heavy breathing started to return to normal, the muscles reducing, sounds from his meridians and bones were also gradually quieting down.

Zhou Weiqing's face was pasted right to Shangguan Bing'er's cool tender little face, making her feel constant intermittent gusts of heat emitting from him, though the anxious feelings in her heart had started to relax. He did not violate me, he did not violate me luckily. In Shangguan Bing'er heart she was thinking like that, but she also discovered that this time it felt rather different when

Zhou Weiqing was holding her, and she did not feel as repelled as before, but instead had a feeling of being protected, as if that big and tall body would defend her and bring her safety.

Zhou Weiqing's right leg which had been awkwardly arched upwards finally came down slowly, and as it fell down onto Shangguan Bing'er's leg, all the sounds of bones moving and breaking also stopped, and the black tattoos on his body disappeared as well.

"That really hurt." Zhou Weiqing let out a sigh of relief as he slowly opened his eyes, the bloodshot colour had also resided by now, as did the intense pain earlier. What replaced it was an extremely comfortable feeling, as if his whole body was full charged with energy, each and every cell glowing with vigor. It felt as if there was something different with his body, although he could not tell what the difference was exactly. The only feeling he had now was that there was something soft and substantial in his arms.

He subconsciously tightened his arms, moving his body around, and felt that the soft and pillowy object pressed against his body was extremely comfortable, as if it were made to be melded against his, and his heart was indeed full of satisfaction, as he even rubbed his face against it.

"En." A soft cry shocked Zhou Weiqing awake, causing him to finally look up, only to see Shangguan Bing'er with both her eyes shut tightly, that movingly beautiful and tender face so close to his own.

“Errr.. Battalion Commander, [why did you run into my arms?](#)” Zhou Weiqing asked in surprise.

Only then did Shangguan Bing'er realise that he had recovered his state of mind, and she quickly opened her eyes, saying in embarrassed anger: “Let me go now!”

A look of vigilance flashed through Zhou Weiqing's eyes as he said: “I'm not letting you go unless you promise not to hit me.”

“You...” Shangguan Bing'er nearly fainted from anger, what made her most helpless was that as Zhou Weiqing recovered his senses, she could feel something below prodding her '[unmentionables](#)'.

“Oi oi, if you guys want to flirt with each other, you should find a place where no one else is around?” Xiao Ru Se's exasperated voice sounded out. This time though she had finally used her female voice.

“Ah! Ru Se Elder Sis, you are here!” Zhou Weiqing realized that Xiao Ru Se was still at the side, and quickly let loose of Shangguan Bing'er, jumping to his feet and darting sideways to hide behind Xiao Ru Se.

Shangguan Bing'er was breathing rather heavily as she stood up, her beautiful face was deep red as she flushed bashfully. Furthermore, she was also shocked to find out that this short period of time that she had been hugged by Zhou Weiqing, her eighth level Heavenly Jing Energy had been drained by nearly half

unexpectedly, and she did not even know when or how it had vanished.

Zhou Weiqing poked his head out from behind Xiao Ru Se, saying with a wronged looking face: “Battalion Commander, I really did not do anything intentionally. This absolutely is another misunderstanding.”

Yes... You read it right lol

Lol I almost spit out my morning coffee. Thick Skin indeed!

Nothing clearly described here, but... (͡° ͜ʖ ͡°)

Chapter 18 – Body Evolution, Super Right Leg (3)

Shangguan Bing'er gave a cold humph, taking a look at him, then at Xiao Ru Se. After the embarrassment in her heart had subsided after a while, she asked curiously: "You two?" She also knew that Zhou Weiqing's actions were not intentional and did not blame him.

Xiao Ru Se looked at the sky innocently, as if she had nothing to do with the situation. Zhou Weiqing grinned and said: "I was chatting and comparing notes with Company Leader Xiao after our fight earlier, and we realised that we were actually childhood playmates. Right after that, some problems occurred with my body..."

"But, I just heard you call her elder sis a moment ago!"

Zhou Weiqing looked at Xiao Ru Se's eyes, and saw the warning in them, and immediately understood, saying: "Battalion Commander, don't you think that Company Leader Xiao looks like a pretty girl? When we were young he already looked like that, therefore all our friends called him Elder Sis. [It is his nickname.](#)"

Shangguan Bing'er's breathing gradually stabilised and she said solemnly: "So what happened to you earlier? Why did you suddenly go crazy again?"

Zhou Weiqing said helplessly: "I don't know either! All of a sudden my body started turning cold, and then my whole body was

struck with severe pain, after that I don't really recall what happened clearly.”

Shangguan Bing'er thought about it for a while, and all of a sudden her expression changed, and she exclaimed: “Could it be the Demonic Change?”

Both Zhou Weiqing and Xiao Ru Se revealed a surprised look on their faces, asking at the same time: “What is the Demonic Change?”

Shangguan Bing'er said: “Zhou Little Fatty, don't you remember? I was telling you about Heavenly Jewel Masters like you who Awaken with the Evil Attribute, which can cause them to have an unstable mental state, and they may eventually turn into [a mentally unstable Evil Heavenly Jewel Master](#)?”

Zhou Weiqing nodded and said: “I remember! However, you mentioned that those were due to Awakening their Heavenly Jewels, and they usually killed those close to them, normally family members. They definitely do not have my self-control.”

Shangguan Bing'er's face reddened, as she actually had no way of refuting his words. Indeed, if Zhou Weiqing did not have sufficient self-control, she would have already died that day, becoming a genuine sacrifice to his Heavenly Jewel's Awakening.

“I heard that amongst those Heavenly Jewel Masters who have the Evil Attribute, some are especially formidable; when their spirit receives a provocation or their body reaches some sort of

limit, they enter a special state called the Demonic Change. In the Demonic Change State, these Heavenly Jewel Masters enter a berserk state, receiving a massive short term increase of strength and power, but their state of mind is longer stable even awake, becoming a mindless killing machine. Because their existence was deemed too dangerous, the Skill-Storing Palace of the various large Empires in the world united a collective manhunt to exterminate these Heavenly Jewel Masters, massacring most of them but at a huge loss to themselves as well. From then on, there has never been any news of Heavenly Jewel Masters who have the ability to enter the Demonic Change State.”

Xiao Ru Se’s expression changed upon hearing the news and she said: “Little... Little Fatty, I will bring you home.” In her anxiety, she had almost called Zhou Weiqing by his given name.

Zhou Weiqing naturally understood her meaning; she wanted him to go home to be checked by his father for safety, but he quickly shook his head repeatedly, saying: “No, no, I do not want to go back. Battalion Commander, you are worrying too much, that was not the Demonic Change State earlier; if it were, I would have killed both of you! I can feel now that after I regained consciousness, my body has evolved somehow, I feel like I’m filled with massive strength, it should be a function of the black pearl that I swallowed. Perhaps it is just that the black pearl’s power is too formidable, and I am unable to fully absorb it.”

Shangguan Bing’er heard his explanation and relaxed slightly, but still said solemnly: “Little Fatty, you should always follow by my side from now on. At least, if anything bad happens, I can still help you restrain yourself. I do not know when that black pearl of yours can finally subside for good.”

On hearing Shangguan Bing'er call his name directly, Zhou Weiqing was extremely delighted in his heart, immediately latching onto it and saying: "Bing'er, you can rest assured that I will never leave you."

Only then did Shangguan Bing'er realize her own improper word usage, her beautiful face flushing deep red and she quickly said: "Let's head back to the military compound. I've already helped you get your rank of Squad Leader, but you will still continue being my Personal Aide. Go back and pack your things, we will be heading to the front lines early in the morning tomorrow."

"Yes, Bing'er." Seeing that she had not refuted him when he called her name, especially doing so in front of Xiao Ru Se, the excitement in Zhou Weiqing's grew even further. This should be considered a huge step forward... right?

Xiao Ruse did not say anything further as well; having observed what had happened just now, she had realised that Zhou Weiqing's state had definitely taken an obvious turn for the better once he hugged Shangguan Bing'er, having him stay together with her would obviously be the best choice for now.

As night fell, the military compound outside the Heavenly Bow City was bustling with activity. For the Fifth Regiment, everyone from recruit to veteran, were packing their luggage after finishing their dinner. They had to prepare everything so that they could move off in the early morning after tearing down their tents, and head to the front lines. Only after experiencing real combat on the battlefield would a recruit be considered a veteran, and this would

be their only stage in the near future.

Zhou Weiqing was one of the few idle people around; Shangguan Bing'er was especially busy tonight since she was the overall in charge responsible for the entire recruitment this time. Since he had nothing much left to do, he was taking a stroll around the military compound after dinner, as he tried to feel out the changes in his body.

After dinner and some rest, the Heavenly Energy in his body had been basically restored, fully showing the superiority in terms of recovery of the Immortal Deity Technique. He also discovered that his total Heavenly Energy had only increased a little after the events in the woods, unlike the instantaneous massive increase of four stages like when he first Awakened his Heavenly Jewels. However, the greatest change would be the raw physical strength of his body; after coming back, Zhou Weiqing had tried the Purple Dawn Bow once again before returning it to Shangguan Bing'er. He found that he did not need to even apply much strength before almost breaking it. This was purely using physical strength alone!

At the same time, Zhou Weiqing kept feeling that there was something strange about his right leg, especially when he moved his right leg, he discovered something very different.

When he lifted his right leg, he found that it could instantaneously rise above the top of his head unexpectedly; the most mysterious and surprising thing was that he could now lift it behind and beyond his head! Such amazing flexibility, it might even be beyond those Heavenly Jewel Masters who had the Flexible Physical Attribute! Alas, it was only his right leg which

had such a change, when he tried his left leg, it did not have the same effect. Furthermore, Zhou Weiqing discovered that his right leg's strength and speed had increased manifold, which was why he felt it had such difference compared with all the other parts of his body.

Alas, at least for now, the change to his right leg was not of any advantage to Zhou Weiqing, and in fact was somewhat detrimental. When he walked normally, it was still relatively alright, but once he started running, he found that the strength of his right leg was too great, the moment he exerted any strength, his whole body would leap forward, causing him to lose his balance. It would probably take some time for him to adapt and get used to it.

Looking at the busy soldiers around him, Zhou Weiqing stood firmly on the ground with only his left leg supporting him, then lifted his right leg and gave out a few kicks into the air. His right leg blurred in the air rapidly, causing several afterimages through its sheer speed, and there was also a faint shrill sound generated in the air, It was as if his entire right leg was boneless, and he could kick from any angle.

Awww how can you hide secrets from your love when you revealed everything else to Ru Se!

See [Chapter 6](#) for this explanation, though it isn't stated exactly when she told him about it... or maybe I missed it when I referred

Chapter 18 – Body Evolution, Super Right Leg (4)

Zhou Weiqing couldn't help but grumble a little in his mind. Even if it is evolution of the body, you should at least let me evolve both legs together right? What's up with this evolving of just one leg? It doesn't seem to be easy to control the strength of just the right leg alone.

During dinner time, Shangguan Bing'er had told him that she needed to go to the military headquarters to report the results of this recruitment drive, and also to freight over a large batch of grain and fodder which had been prepared beforehand. The Fifth Regiment would then be returning with a military strength of about two Battalions; that was not just for the new recruits, but also mostly to escort the rations to the front lines. Since they were moving out early in the morning tomorrow morning, Shangguan Bing'er naturally [had to handle the matter as the commanding officer](#).

Head back to cultivate? Zhou Weiqing mused about what to do, then inspiration struck him. He decided to check in with his Ru Se Elder Sister first.

For military officers of the rank of Company Leader, they already had their own individual tents. Earlier today after they had returned, Xiao Ru Se had told him where her tent was. At this time, since he was idle, he strolled leisurely to outside of Xiao Ru Se's tent, and from outside he could see that the light was shining from within.

If it were any other common soldier, or perhaps even any military officers, they would offer a greeting from outside before entering, but Zhou Weiqing did not care about that. He pulled up the tent flap and walked in directly.

As soon as he entered the tent, he was startled, as the first thing he saw was a head of soft black long hair, with the hair reaching the waist and almost covering the back. The owner of the long black hair heard the sound of the tent flap opening and turned around. Naturally, it was Xiao Ru Se.

When she turned her head, Zhou Weiqing immediately saw that she had been unwrapping a strip of white cloth with its width of approximately one foot, and the cloth strip was encircled around her upper body in an unknown amount of rounds. Although her key positions were currently still covered, but her shoulders, arms and also her slender waist were all exposed to him completely.

As compared to her valiant looking appearance when wearing men's clothing, the Xiao Ru Se now was full of a different kind of special attraction. She was 20 years old now, and her physical growth was naturally better compared to Shangguan Bing'er now. Currently, she was only wearing a pair of long pants, from her slim waist downwards in an astonishing arc that made Zhou Weiqing swallowed hard as he stared with widened eyes, staring at her steadily.

Originally, Xiao Ru Se had a scare when someone entered, but when she turned around to see that it was Zhou Weiqing, she gave a sigh of relief as she blushed, before she said angrily: "Why didn't you call out before you come in! Sit at the side, don't peep!"

“Errr... Elder Sis, isn’t it uncomfortable to bind yourself like that everyday? It will affect your growth as well!” Zhou Weiqing said primly.

“Bah, what does a kid like you know? Do you think I really want to do this? It is really too hard for a woman to do well in the army, that is why I dressed up as a man to do so. Turn around! If you keep looking, be careful that I will latch onto you and depend on you.” As compared to Shangguan Bing’er’s shyness, Xiao Ru Se was much bolder.

Zhou Weiqing grinned, and took a few steps forward instead, as if to get a better look, as he said: “Elder Sis, if you latch onto me, I will be more than happy!”

It was Xiao Ru Se’s turn to be a little flustered, and she grabbed the clothes beside her and threw them at Zhou Weiqing. “You dare tease your Sister like that? Don’t you want your Bing’er anymore? Be careful or I will tell on you. Turn your head around quickly, or tomorrow I will go and tell Uncle Zhou that you ran off to the army to pick up chicks. Hmph, even taking advantage of her, you will see how Uncle Zhou will take care of you.”

Zhou Weiqing shuddered involuntarily; the person he feared the most was his father, and it was as if he could see that gigantic palm brandished at him. He dared not continue teasing her and quickly turned around.

Looking at his fearful appearance, Xiao Ru Se couldn’t help but

burst out laughing, quickly stripping of the cloth strips binding her upper body, liberating the bountiful pair completely, and that was so comfortable that she couldn't help but sigh in happiness, causing Zhou Weiqing who was listening with his back turned to feel itchy in his heart.

“Alright, you can turn around now.” Xiao Ru Se said with a laugh.

When Zhou Weiqing turned around again, she had already changed into a cotton garment, the flat chest earlier was now a bountiful mountain range, and in his heart he was musing: So big, how can this be, is it empty inside? From my estimation, it should be at least 36D... no, it is so pert, perhaps it is even an E cup...

Xiao Ru Se saw that Zhou Weiqing's eyes kept staring at her chest, and said exasperatedly: “Little Brat, you have really learnt the wrong things. [Stop staring](#) around like that, let us bro and sis chat for a while, it's been so long. What are your future plans?”

Only then did Zhou Weiqing recover and he quickly said: “Naturally it is to enter the battlefield and kill our enemies, to forge a name and career for myself!”

Xiao Ru Se's brow furrowed and she said: “If it were before, Uncle Zhou would definitely be very happy if you did something like that. However, now...”

Zhou Weiqing was surprised, asking: “What about how?”

Xiao Ru Se said solemnly: “In truth, the situation is not optimistic for our empire. Little Wei, you must remember, what Shangguan Bing’er said was very right. No matter what happens, you must ensure that you do not expose your Heavenly Jewels. These few years, the situation on the front lines have been getting worse, Our Empire is surrounded by the Fei Li Empire on the north and northeastern borders, but since we are attached to the Fei Li Empire, we are saved from dispatching troops to guard those two borders. However, our main enemies come from the southern Kalise Empire. Further south from the Kalise Empire is the formidable Bai Da Empire.”

“Just comparing our two empire’s pure strength, we do not fear the Kalise Empire, and our land size even surpasses them. However, in recent years, the Kalise Empire’s army has been growing in both quantity and quality, and they have gradually started to surpass us. If I am not wrong, I estimate that they are getting a lot of support from the Bai Da Empire.”

This was the first time that someone had analyzed the political and military situation of the countries around to Zhou Weiqing, and he listened very intently before asking curiously: “Don’t we also have the support of the Fei Li Empire?”

Xiao Ru Se shook her head gently and said: “The Fei Li empire and the Bai Da Empire are both great nations similar in terms of their overall strength. However, due to the difference in geographical position, it has also caused their national policies to be very different. The Bai Da Empire has a very wide land area, and they are situated in the southwest of the continent. As such, they do not need to face any threats from their Western and Southern fronts, as their backs are to the sea there. Even for them, to the

East and the North, there are only a few other smaller countries who do not pose any threat to them. However, it is very different for the Fei Li Empire; to the North of the Fei Li Empire, there lies the formidable [Wan Shou Empire](#). The pressure on them can be imagined. As such, the majority of Fei Li Empire's military and national strength is at the northern border to guard against the Wan Shou Empire. Although we are attached to the Fei Li empire, the support we get from them is very limited."

Zhou Weiqing saw the light and said: "I see, so that means that the Bai Da Empire is able to support the Kalise Empire constantly, thus allowing them to grow their military to surpass ours gradually? That's why the present war situation is in our disadvantage."

Xiao Ru Se nodded and said: "Exactly. The Wan Shou Empire occupies most of the vast northern land, and their entire land area is almost the sum of Bai Da Empire and Fei Li Empire. If not for the fact that the Wan Shou Empire is comprised out of many big tribes, and they are not of one mind, with also the additional fact that they have other threats from other borders, perhaps the Fei Li Empire would have already lost to them. As such, the prospects of our country is really getting more and more disadvantageous. It is lucky that we have Uncle Zhou around to deter the Kalise Empire. However, if this situation continues for a longer period of time, it will only get worse for our Empire."

Learn to delegate, girl!

Marry you?

This came to mind instantly

Literally means Ten Thousand Beasts

Chapter 19 – Demonic Right Leg (1)

A cold light flashed in Zhou Weiqing's eyes and he said: "This is not something we can change. Caught between these two big empires, we have no route of escape. Perhaps others can run away, but both Elder Sis and I will never be able to do so. Godfather is a great king, and he has done much and made a lot of progress in governing and improving the country. Alas, our strength is just too small and weak. We can only take things a step at the time now and do our best."

Xiao Ru Se smiled faintly and gave a gratified nod: "It is good that you think like this, it makes elder sis very happy. Little Wei, we are alone here now, just us brother and sister. Although you are still young, there are some words that I want to remind you."

"What words?" Zhou Weiqing asked.

Xiao Ru Se said with a solemn look on her face: "If one day, when the war situation is just too disadvantageous, everyone or anyone can die for our country, but only you must not."

Zhou Weiqing was startled, "What, why?"

Xiao Ru Se's beautiful eyes narrowed slightly: "There is only hope when we live. You are different from any other person. You are His Majesty's Godson, and also the only son of Admiral Zhou. You have the rallying power in the Empire that no one else will have. More importantly, you are a Heavenly Jewel Master, someone with infinite potential and talent. I have also heard of the

Alexandrite Cat's Eye, and it is something that exists in legend, an incomparably formidable Elemental Jewel. I believe that as long as you have the time, one day, you will have the ability to change the course of events. Do not think that elder sis is joking. Your cultivation now may be shallow and weak, and you may not understand truly how terrifying Heavenly Jewel Masters can be. Heavenly Jewel Masters have always made impressive history in the continent, and the most recent one was approximately 15 years ago. A formidable Heavenly Jewel Master, for the sake of his beloved, charged alone into the Wan Shou Empire. Along the way, every road he took, every place he visited, he killed anyone who tried to stop him. When he arrived in the capital city of the Wan Shou Empire, the Wan Shou City, he had already killed thousands of Jewel Masters and Heavenly Beasts from the Wan Shou Empire. At last, when he finally arrived in front of the Emperor of the Wan Shou Empire, he got news that his beloved was not seized by the Wan Shou Empire, and just left without them being able to stop him. At that time, beside the Emperor, there were over a hundred Zong Level Physical and Elemental Jewel Masters, and more than 30 powerful Zong Level Heavenly Jewel Masters, yet nobody could stop him. It is said that this man had 11 sets of Heavenly Jewels."

As she told the story, Xiao Ru Se's eyes revealed a rapt, charmed look, perhaps even a slightly adoring look. "Little Wei, I believe that your talent is certainly comparable to that Senior, perhaps you must even surpass him. If one day, you can cultivate and reach his level, who would dare touch our Heavenly Bow Empire? Even if the empire is in crisis, you will be able to turn the tide then. I believe that you can do even better than Uncle Zhou in the future. Promise Elder Sis that no matter what happens in the future, you must always remain calm."

Zhou Weiqing nodded silently. For the first time since he was

born, he felt a heavy weight upon his shoulders. This burden was placed there because his Heavenly Jewels had Awakened, but he would not flinch or shirk away. His natural disposition was to be free and uninhibited, but deep down his bones he was just as stubborn as his father Admiral Zhou.

Xiao Ru Se gave a smile and said: “Dumb kid, relax. Elder Sis was just pointing out the worst possible situation. With Uncle Zhou around, it will not be that easy for us to fall into such a situation. Anyway, I digress. What are you planning to do with Shangguan Bing’er? Don’t forget, in the Heavenly Bow City there still is Difuya.”

Zhou Weiqing curled his lip and said: “Difuya? Forget it. That girl, I will not be able to enjoy her. If not for the appearance of that black pearl, perhaps I would already have been killed by her. When I left home, didn’t I leave a note to my father? There shouldn’t be any issue.”

Xiao Ru Se laughed as she said: “You are dreaming. Your father might agree without any issues, but do you think His Majesty will agree? Do you know how many times Uncle Zhou has accompanied His Majesty into danger, how many times he risked his life to rescue him? Even if you are not the talented Heavenly Jewel Master that you are now, and you were still the same as before, His Majesty would still force Difuya to marry you. Kings do not say things lightly after all.”

Zhou Weiqing’s face fell immediately, and he pleaded: “What can I do then? Elder sis, you must help me find a solution! You don’t want me to suffer everyday facing Difuya, that proud chick with

her eyes on top of her head, right?”

Xiao Ru Se gave a cold humph, “Ideas aren’t free you know, shouldn’t I get any reward?”

Zhou Weiqing grinned and said: “Heh, Elder Sis, if you are trying to fleece me, you have the wrong man. This little brother is totally cleaned out.”

Xiao Ru Se said: “I don’t want your money. Little Wei, how about this, if you accept one condition from me, I’ll give you some advice.”

Zhou Weiqing looked teasingly at Xiao Ru Se’s beautiful face, “Kiss you again? That will be no problem!”

“Bah, you’re asking for a beating again? Be serious! You must promise me, if some day you really become the pillar of the empire, you must support me in becoming the prime minister.”

Zhou Weiqing stared in wide-eyed surprise at her. He had really never expected that the condition that Xiao Ru Se put forward would be that, and was struck dumbfounded for a moment. “Elder Sis, your ambition is really not small! You really have a desire for rank.”

Xiao Ru Se gave a cold humph and said: “How could you, a little brat, understand? I just want to show that no matter what men can do, women can also do it equally well. I want to let the men of the

world see the strength of women. On what basis do women have to stay at home to do housework, to only be able to assist the husband and teach the kids? Why is it that only men can have power and influence? [My lifetime goal is to use my own skill and power to stand above men as well.](#)”

Zhou Weiqing gave her a big thumbs up, saying: “Now I truly understand the meaning of that saying [Women’s headdress not given to men](#). Elder Sis, I support you! However, if you get married in the future, wouldn’t there be a lot of pressure?”

Xiao Ru Se gave another cold humph: “When I started practicing archery, I already promised myself that I would not marry my entire life. Why should I waste my energy on men? I have many things that I want to accomplish. At most, I’ll find a man to have a child with in the future, then kick him away!”

Zhou Weiqing blinked, “Elder Sis, how about this? Instead of giving the advantage to others, why not let me have the advantage then. After all, we are close. Being able to do bad things without taking responsibility, that’s my favourite! Heh.”

“Get lost!”

...

The next morning, dawn had just broken, but the military compound outside the Heavenly Bow City which had been there for several months had vanished quietly. By the time the sun had risen, the land outside the city gates had returned to its original

smooth state. Under the leadership of the Fifth Regiment, Third Battalion's Commander, Shangguan Bing'er, the entire camp of 3000 soldiers, along with a large amount of military baggage and rations as well as an approximately 5000 strong baggage train, headed south towards the border of the Kalise Empire.

Having such a huge baggage train was necessary. Simply speaking, in war, it was normal to have a 1:1 ratio of support personnel and soldiers in the army. For those elite branches like Heavy Infantry, they required almost two support personnel to support each soldier, while Heavy Cavalry Soldiers might even need more than four support personnel to assist. Only then could these elites display their maximum strength in the battlefield. This was also one of the reasons why such elite troops cost so much to maintain.

The first Women's Rights Society!

A direct translation of 巾帼不让须眉了. Basically means Women can be better than men. 巾帼 is the women's headdress in ancient times, while 须眉 referred to men. In the past, women had very low societal rank, and if a woman had great accomplishments, this saying was used.

Chapter 19 – Demonic Right Leg (2)

With a total strength of about ten thousand people walking down the Stars Forest Boulevard, especially including the Heavy Infantry Companies which slowed down their total speed, it would take them at least 20 days to arrive in at the border.

Due to the fact that Zhou Weiqing was Shangguan Bing'er's Personal Aide, he was also assigned a warhorse and rode at Shangguan Bing'er side. Naturally, he knew how to ride a horse, although it cannot be said that he was skilled in doing so, he was at least competent enough to keep himself from falling. This rascal had gone through a huge change in gear, not only was he garbed in the leather armour depicting his Squad Leader rank, his bow was also no longer an ordinary longbow.

In the morning just before they had departed, Xiao Ru Se had a soldier pass him a brand new Purple Dawn Bow and four quivers of special arrows. Knowing that Zhou Weiqing's [strength was immense](#), she had given him a higher quality Purple Dawn Bow than even Shangguan Bing'er's, manufactured out of 500-Year-Old Stars Wood. The limbs of the bow were extremely strong and flexible, and the tensile strength was almost twice that of an ordinary Purple Dawn Bow. The bowstring was made out of top quality sinew from a Magic Tenacious Snake, and even the shaft of the arrows from the four quivers were also made using 500-Year-Old Stars Wood, while the arrow tip was crafted from titanium alloy. The value of these four quivers of 200 arrows would almost surpass even that Purple Dawn Bow.

Zhou Weiqing hung just one of the quiver of arrows around his waist, and left the other three hanging on his horse's back. Cavalry

archers were also established in the Heavenly Bow Empire, but there was only a single Battalion of them, and they were considered one of the Trump Card Elite Battalions. There were two greatest advantages that cavalry archers had, one was the speed of their horses, and the other was the sheer quantity of arrows that they could carry along. An ordinary archer who was skilled and strong could at most bring 100 arrows along to the battlefield, but if a cavalry archer brought any amount less than 200, he would be despised. With a warhorse helping to bear the load, that little bit of additional weight was naturally negligible.

Shangguan Bing'er was dressed in her silver armor with a white cloak trailing behind her, making her look extremely valiant as she led the troop from the front. Zhou Weiqing fell into position slightly behind her. Besides them, there were also two Companies of Scouts leading the way, [in charge of clearing the path and building bridges](#) or in general ensuring a smooth passage for the rest of the army.

“Bing'er, I want to get down and take a walk, my right leg is still feeling irritable, I need to move around to help myself adapt.” Zhou Weiqing said in a low voice that only the two of them could hear.

“En, go ahead, as long as you follow the main troop that's fine.” Shangguan Bing'er nodded and said. Ever since Zhou Weiqing started acting proper around her, she had also started treating him differently. Ever since that day he had hugged her, Shangguan Bing'er was a little afraid to look into Zhou Weiqing's eyes. Her heart was rather conflicted, she was afraid that Zhou Weiqing might suddenly relapse, but was also faintly anticipating a hug like that day.

Zhou Weiqing vaulted off his horse, giving Shangguan Bing'er his customary honest smile, then he landed on his right foot and his body shot off like an arrow as he entered the nearby woods.

The way he bounded off was very charming, particularly since his speed was extremely quick, only relying on the strength of his body. Alas, after he entered the woods, Zhou Weiqing discovered that he had misjudged his own speed.

Peng his body made intimate contact with a huge tree. Luckily, he had managed to block the impact with his arm, so he did not have it too terribly.

“F***!” Zhou Weiqing slid down from the tree, feeling rather dispirited, lifting his foot to kick the Stars Tree, which was large enough for 2 men to hug, in front of him.

A dull thumping sound rang out, and the dispirited Zhou Weiqing was shocked into staring, his jaw dropped so open that you could shove 2 eggs into his mouth.

The huge Stars Tree that he kicked had unexpectedly flown off in the air, smashing into another large tree at the side and falling to the ground with a loud crash and bang.

“Crap!” Zhou Weiqing looked down at his right leg which had kicked down that tree unexpectedly, he did not feel anything from his right leg, and it was as if everything was normal. However, he had actually kicked down an entire Stars Tree! For a Stars Tree of

such a size, even if they were to use saws, four men would still take an entire day to bring it down. Yet, he had actually smashed it down and thrown it back with just a kick.

In an instance, the dispirited feeling he had because of he was unused to the unequal strength of his legs was swept away. Zhou Weiqing quickly took off his pants and looked at his right leg.

On the surface, it seemed as if his right leg and left leg were not different in any way, but the difference in strength was unexpectedly to such a huge degree. Furthermore, despite kicking such a thick and rough tree trunk, he did not feel any pain at all.

He focused his will and manipulated his Heavenly Energy from his Dantian to move down into his legs, and as he did so, the differences in both legs once again showed itself.

As the Heavenly Energy coursed through the legs, both obviously felt more powerful, but on the surface, his left leg remained unchanged, but the skin of his right leg immediately showed the familiar black tiger tattoos once again, spreading across the entire right leg, surrounded by a black grey aura, and it also seemed to naturally tilt backwards a little. Zhou Weiqing saw that his right leg had become fully jet black, and as he moved it, it felt as though his right leg had turned into an incomparably powerful whip.

Using his left leg as a pivot, he took a leap forward and reached the front of another huge Stars Tree. His right leg swept forth like lightning, moving so rapidly that it blurred the air and seemed to leave a shadow behind.

This time, when his leg made contact with the tree, the sound had actually changed from a “Ping” into a “Puff”. The Stars Tree in front of him was once again knocked away and flew off, though the point of fracture now was actually extremely smooth, looking as if it had been cut off by a sharp knife blade.

Zhou Weiqing was even more shocked by what came next, as the tree flew in the air, its leaves suddenly started to wither and turn yellow quickly, and the bough itself started emitting a grey air, before withering. When the tree landed on the ground, it unexpectedly smashed into smithereens.

“This, this was really too awesome...” Zhou Weiqing looked at his right leg, then looked at the shattered Stars Tree, and muttered to himself: “Bing’er said that those Heavenly Jewel Masters who have the Demonic Change will lose control their minds; it doesn’t seem like I have the Demonic Change, instead I have this Demonic Right Leg. With such strength, if it hits a human at full strength, how much damage would it do?”

Furthermore, Zhou Weiqing discovered that pouring Heavenly Energy into his leg for the kick did not consume much Heavenly Energy at all. All of a sudden, he thought of something in his heart, recalling at once the huge winged black tiger that he had seen several times.

There were three places where the black tiger had left him with a deep impression; the first was its pair of ferocious bloodshot eyes, the second being its large dual wings, and lastly was the tall, hooked scorpion tail.

His right foot had turned black completely, and it also seemed to hook upwards automatically. Didn't this just seem like the scorpion tail of that black tiger? Had his right leg evolved from that?

By now, he was completely certain that that the black pearl was probably the Internal Core of the huge black tiger that he had seen, and he was absorbing the abilities of this extremely formidable black tiger.

Plus she's rich I guess =p Good to have a rich onee-chan looking after you!

Combat Engineers!

Chapter 19 – Demonic Right Leg (3)

“It looks like this is indeed a Demonic Right Leg. Wahaha!” Zhou Weiqing danced around with joy. Although it was currently difficult for him to control his right leg properly, and was rather problematic when moving right now, its sheer strength more than made up for that. After all, he could slowly train to control that great strength, but who else could have such an awesome right leg? This was absolutely in the territory of a secret weapon.

During the following long and dreary travel, Zhou Weiqing actually became the busiest person. He followed close to the troop, but did actually join them, instead moving forward completely on foot, unceasing using his Demonic Right Leg to improve its coordination with the rest of his body, and to ensure that he could control its strength. After these ten days of hard work, he had basically adapted to it. Although it couldn't be said that he could fully control it perfectly, he could at least move normally, and was whenever necessary he could still make use of its strength.

After much experimentation, Zhou Weiqing found that the strength of his right leg was truly quite terrifying, when he injected Heavenly Energy into the leg, it was boosted more than five times that of any other body parts. What was even more fearful was that it did not feel any pain, which was by itself another formidable weapon. When he discovered that fact, he was a little frightened and quickly [inspected his 'third leg' carefully](#); once he determined that it was not affected by the Demonic Right Leg, he breathed a sigh of relief and relaxed greatly. If his third leg no longer had any feeling, he would not want to live anymore...

The army has marched constantly towards the south, and

although the Heavenly Bow Empire was not very big, they had still taken 20 days to get close to the front lines.

“We just need to go forward another 300 miles before we arrive at the camp on the frontlines.” Shangguan Bing’er said to Zhou Weiqing. As they travelled together, although she wasn’t exactly very amiable, but she was not malicious or harsh, just treating him like an ordinary subordinate.

Zhou Weiqing could obviously feel Shangguan Bing’er relaxing a little after she said those words. He knew from what Xiao Ru Se told him that this was Shangguan Bing’er’s first time carrying out such a task, and now that she was on the verge of completing it, it was natural for her to feel a little relieved.

After all, Shangguan Bing’er was considered an important national treasure of the Heavenly Bow Empire, even if she was on the frontlines, the military command would not dare to put her in any danger, after all, a Heavenly Jewel Master who had not fully grown completely was still relatively vulnerable. If anything happened to her, it would be a huge loss to the entire Empire and their future plans.

“Bing’er, I want to discuss a matter with you.” Zhou Weiqing said solemnly.

Shangguan Bing’er shot a look at him and said: “Speak.”

“When we reach the military camp, let me return to the Company, I want to go forth into the battlefield to fight and kill

the enemy.” Zhou Weiqing was not joking, he knew that if he followed Shangguan Bing’er, he would likely not have any chance to actually enter combat.

Shangguan Bing’er was a little surprised, “You don’t want to follow me?”

Just as Zhou Weiqing was about to explain himself, all of a sudden, his expression changed drastically; both his feet trod on the stirrup, [as he used that as a pivot to throw his entire body sideways](#), leaping forth and hugging Shangguan Bing’er in his arms, his momentum knocking her off her horse.

Peng in the next split second, an arrow flew past their bodies, almost brushing them, before nailing deep onto the nearby road. If Zhou Weiqing had been just a little late in reacting, that arrow would have pierced right through Shangguan Bing’er.

“Enemy attack!” Zhou Weiqing gave a loud shout as he held onto Shangguan Bing’er and vaulted away, hiding both of them at the underbelly of her horse.

Shangguan Bing’er also awoke to the situation, and both of them suddenly simultaneously thought of something: Silent Tracking Arrow.

That arrow, before it struck, it did not give out any sound, nor did it stir the air at all as it passed, otherwise with Shangguan Bing’er’s 8th Stage of Heavenly Energy, she could not have possibly missed it. Zhou Weiqing had only been able to dodge it

because of a sudden sense of danger in his heart, and he had reacted subconsciously to save her. This was not the instinct of a human, but the instinct of a wild animal – that large black tiger.

“It isn’t the Silent Tracking Arrow, it should be the Silent Arrow, otherwise I would already be hit by it. Let go of me.” Shangguan Bing’er said rather rapidly.

Zhou Weiqing had by now quickly taken off the Wind Hat from his head to use as a shield, but Shangguan Bing’er was still embraced in his arms. Of course, she was wearing her armor now, and it wasn’t exactly comfortable hugging her now.

“We’ve almost reached our main campsite, how could there be an enemy ambush here?” Zhou Weiqing said as he began to circulate his Heavenly Energy. This was his first time actually facing a real enemy, and if he were to say that he wasn’t feeling anxious, that would be a lie.

At this moment, that inexplicable sense of danger arrived once again; he had not let go of Shangguan Bing’er yet, so he just carried her and tumbled away once more. Puff blood spurted out from the position that they were just in, as Shangguan Bing’er’s horse was shot and pierced through with an arrow, as it savagely pierced through where they had been a moment ago.

At this time, a disturbance arose in the troops, as the archers quickly nocked their bows and shot around into the surrounding areas, while the infantry troops quickly surrounded the area, trying to protect their commander.

However, at this time, there were only the sounds of explosions as well as screams. Zhou Weiqing led Shangguan Bing'er weaving in and out of the crowd. She had Activated her Heavenly Jewels and leapt out of his embrace; although she was wearing armor, she still moved as swiftly as wind as she flew off.

Only then did Zhou Weiqing see the enemy clearly. There weren't many of them, only around ten or so, but they were moving at extremely astonishing speeds, especially the person who was charging in the forefront, both hands brandishing an exaggeratedly large warhammer, with each of the warhammers as large as a tabletop, with a seemingly evil aura. As the arrows shot towards him, they were all easily deflected, and none of the melee troops were able to even get close to him. In a short span of time, more than ten soldiers had died a tragic death to the huge warhammer.

This person looked to be over 40 years old is, with a whiskered, scruffy face, his upper body was bare, revealing his tough body, swarthy flesh, and unbelievably inflated muscles. What drew Zhou Weiqing's attention the most was his right wrist, where five Physical Jewels clearly encircled.

His Physical Jewels each had two colors, half was Yellow Jade while the other half Ice Jade. Yellow Jade represented Toughness, and improved defense, while the Ice Jade represented strength. No wonder he was so ferocious, this was clearly a Mid Level Zun Physical Jewel Master. At this point, two out of his five Physical Jewels were glowing with a sparkling light; clearly the pair of warhammers were the Consolidated Equipment of that two Physical Jewels.

Besides him, there were twelve other enemies, all of them were Physical Jewel Masters, each holding different weapons. There were four of them with Four Jewels each, and the rest of them had Three Jewels each. The twelve of them moved together, sweeping away the ordinary troops facing them. The rain of arrows pouring down on them simply did not have much effect on them, as they forged a path directly heading for Shangguan Bing'er.

LOL, this little rascal does it again

#SpideySense makes its return!

Chapter 19 – Demonic Right Leg (4)

Zhou Weiqing instantly realised that they had to be here specially to assassinate Shangguan Bing'er. Although these Physical Jewel Masters were extremely strong, it was still impossible for them to destroy an entire army of ten thousand. Daring to appear like this, their goal could only be Shangguan Bing'er. Without question, these people were most likely from the Kalise Empire. To have sent out so many strong Physical Jewel Masters, they were really intent on ensuring her death!

Shangguan Bing'er wove, duck, and dodged. She managed to dodge another Silent Arrow, but it was so close that she broke out in a cold sweat; it was really too difficult to dodge this type of Silent Arrow. Even a full agility type Jewel Master like her needed to focus all her concentration in order to do so, and any tiny mistake would put her in danger of being hit.

At this moment, a shrill sound resounded out, followed by a loud explosion, and the five-Jewel Mid Level Zun Physical Jewel Master in the vanguard slowed down momentarily as an arrow exploded onto his huge warhammer, affecting his speed. Such strength, the arrow naturally came from a Purple Dawn Bow, but it was not shot by Zhou Weiqing, but by Xiao Ru Se.

“Don't panic, stay organised. Heavy infantry go ahead to slow them down, archers flank the enemy from the tree lines and start concentrated fire, light infantry start flanking and surround them.” Xiao Ru Se's calm voice issued out orders unceasingly. Although their commanding officer Shangguan Bing'er was at a loss, Xiao Ru Se still stayed very calm.

Currently, Shangguan Bing'er had no time to care about any others. She was too obvious a target, and was also the enemies' goal. The hidden enemy who kept shooting Silent Arrows was constraining her ability to do anything, and she was totally unable to counterattack at all. The only thing she could do was to make use of the Wind Wielding Boots to move around swiftly, barely dodging the continuous barrage of Silent Arrows. She could tell that this hidden enemy was at least a Four-Jewel Low Level Zun Physical Jewel Master, and probably had more tricks up his sleeve.

No matter the Heavenly Bow empire or the Kalise empire, they both had less than a hundred Jewel Masters each. The number of Jewel Masters appearing here was already almost a quarter of the entire Kalise Empire's Jewel Masters. One could tell the sheer determination the Kalise Empire had in wanting to kill off Shangguan Bing'er.

"Little Fatty, kill that hidden archer!" Xiao Ru Se's voice resounded in Zhou Weiqing's ear.

Facing such a chaotic battleground, Zhou Weiqing was reminded by Xiao Ru Se that the most important thing was to get rid of that biggest threat – the hidden archer shooting those Silent Arrows. Shangguan Bing'er's most outstanding ability was her speed and agility, and as long as she was not plagued by the Silent Arrows, it would be easy for her to evade those Physical Jewel Masters.

Moving swiftly, Zhou Weiqing dashed into the woods at the roadside. In the chaos, no one paid attention to this mere soldier who unexpectedly leapt to the side at an astonishing speed.

The attribute wheel disk appeared in front of Zhou Weiqing's eyes again, and he was at this time both anxious and excited. He wasn't afraid now; after going through Consolidating Equipment and Skill-Storing, he had gotten many skills to improve his survivability. Not knowing what sort of opponent the hidden enemy was, he could only estimate where he was hiding from the general direction the Silent Arrow came from, as he quickly moved through the woods. That hidden archer kept changing positions as he shot, but there was always some trace to be found.

With the boost from the Wind Attribute, Zhou Weiqing was also extremely fast, his keen senses extending to a radius of 20 meters; as long as there were any clues, he would find them. At this point, the improved senses from the black tiger was proving its use.

Suddenly, he had a cold feeling of impending doom, and he instantly dropped down to the floor without any hesitation, hitting the floor briefly before leaping up and moving off once more, changing his position twice. In that very moment, a Silent Arrow had pierced through a huge tree where he once was.

Zhou Weiqing grabbed his Purple Dawn Bow in his left hand, extracting an arrow from his quiver, and while in the process moving quickly, he quickly shot off an arrow through sheer instinct. He had not aimed, knowing that it was impossible to hit his target now. However, relying on the sheer force of the formidable Purple Dawn Bow, his arrow flew out with a shrill sound as it stirred the air. Anyone hearing this sound might even have a scare. Despite his keen senses, he was still greatly pressured by the Silent Arrows. He could feel that he was only less than 100 yards away from the hidden enemy, as long as he could affect the

enemy's firing rate a little, he would have the opportunity to close the gap.

Indeed, after his arrow burst out, the hidden enemy paused a while. A loud, angry curse rang out right after that: "Dammit, is that the Legendary 'Heaven Soaring Shot'? How dare he frighten me, Xiao Ye Ye, blast him to death."

"Ah! Young Master, my firing distance is insufficient; my range is only 50 yards, he is currently more than 70 yards away."

"You fool! Why don't you simply tell our enemies where to find us huh? Look, he's now 50 yards away, quick!"

Indeed, in the short period of time when the two of them were speaking, Zhou Weiqing had leapt and bounded like a leopard ahead, not in a straight line but taking a zigzag course, making use of the surrounding bough and shrubbery as cover to conceal his body as he charged along.

Whiz Another Silent Arrow flew at him. That hidden archer was truly accurate; Zhou Weiqing had already exerted all his strength and speed to try and dodge it, but that arrow managed to speed down towards his path. As the distance was much nearer, the arrow's speed was also a lot quicker. However, just as it was about to hit him, Zhou Weiqing suddenly disappeared.

Zhou Weiqing had always feared death, for him to dare to run in these woods in search of such a dangerous hidden enemy, the biggest advantage he was depending on was of his first Spatial Skill

– Blink. With that skill, even if he could not beat that enemy, he was confident of escaping with his life.

Just as Zhou Weiqing dodged that Silent Arrow, he suddenly saw a huge orange-red fireball with a one foot long diameter coalesce in the sky, before flying towards him with a trailing bright fiery tail.

Not only did the enemies have Physical Jewel Masters, they even had Elemental Jewel Masters!

On that fateful day, Zhou Weiqing had nearly been killed by Difuya's fireball. This fireball in front of him was obviously many times stronger than that of Difuya's. It was clear just from the size and look of it.

Zhou Weiqing did not dare to underestimate it, quickly holstering the Purple Dawn Bow on his back, circulating his Heavenly Energy instantly to release his Icy looking Overlord Bow into his grasp. At the same time, he also circulated his Wind Attribute's power, maximising his speed, and in a flash he drew the Overlord Bow to its maximum, firing off an arrow like a bolt of lightning.

With a shrill howl that was even several times stronger than when fired from the Purple Dawn Bow, Zhou Weiqing shot forth this arrow. At the same time, his body dropped down to the ground once again, narrowly evading a Silent Arrow.

Bang The giant fireball was struck by the arrow, which had the explosive effect from being shot out by the Overlord Bow,

exploding in mid air and causing fire to rain down everywhere from the skies. The orange flame poured down in a 30 yards radius, cutting off the line of sight of both sides completely.

Zhou Weiqing did not stay idle, proning down on the ground while drawing the Overlord Bow once more, shooting another arrow from where the enemy's speech had originated from.

Earlier on, he had been suppressed by the Silent Arrow barrage of the enemy, and he had been repressed for so long. Finally having this opportunity to catch his breath, furthermore the enemy was also unable to see him now, how could Zhou Weiqing not seize this opportunity? Just releasing the Overlord Bow alone took up nearly 50% of his Heavenly Energy; since he had already brought it out, he wanted to make full use of it.

Bang Another fierce explosion resounded in the distance; the explosive effect of the Overlord Bow was truly overbearing. It was exactly the opposite effect from the Silent Arrow; each arrow shot out was accompanied with an astonishingly loud, shrill sound, and as soon as it touched an object, it would explode instantaneously. Furthermore, the speed of any arrow shot from the Overlord Bow was far beyond what the naked eye could follow. It was almost as if once the sound of the bowstring being released came from Zhou Weiqing, before the shrill sound of the air splitting had ended, an explosion would sound off in the distance.

Chapter 20 – The One Deciding Arrow (1)

“Damn, what sort of skill is this? Young Master, quickly leave now.” A row of fireballs rose up into the air on the opposite side of him. This time, there was a total of five fireballs; although they were individually smaller than the previous one, they were all still orange-red in colour.

This time, Zhou Weiqing did not try to shoot the fireballs, instead drawing the Overlord Bow to its maximum and rapidly firing out three arrows. These few days, whenever he was free, he had been learning the Rapid Fire Archery skill from Xiao Ru Se. Although he wasn't as accurate as she was yet, he had at least improved his firing rate, and coupled with the sheer power of the Overlord Bow and its explosive effect, he did not even need to be that accurate; as long as he managed to shoot an arrow within an acceptable range, it was sufficient.

As expected, once the three arrows were fired out, the enemies were thrown into a mess. All the fireballs started dropping out of place, but not a single one managed to fly and hit their proper target.

At this moment, just 50 yards from Zhou Weiqing, two youths were in a shabby, disorderly state.

One of them was dressed in an all-white outfit, without any armor, holding a shining golden short bow in his hands, and on his right wrist encircled four glowing Physical Jewels. His Physical Jewels were made out of 2 types of jade – the Agility Dragonstone Jade and the Flexibility Waxy Jade. This man was rather

handsome; alas at the moment he was in quite a sorry state. His golden hair though was rather attention drawing, complementing his golden short bow's colour.

At his side was someone who looked like his subordinate, dressed in a rather plain cloth clothing. Just like his young master, he seemed to be around 20 years of age, and on his left wrist encircled three red ruby Elemental Jewels; it seemed like those fireballs were fired out by him.

Under Zhou Weiqing's angry suppressing fire using his Overlord Bow, this pair of Master and Subordinate were in a disorderly state, rolling and tumbling as they fled the scene.

Zhou Weiqing had successfully suppressed the 'Silent Arrow's from this side, but the other side of the battlefield was a totally different story.

Under Xiao Ru Se's direction, the Heavenly Bow Empire's troops were no longer in a mess and were organised in trying to fight back. Alas, the group of more than ten enemies were all Jewel Masters, and against their Heavenly Energy and Skills, it was rather difficult for ordinary soldiers to do anything in this short period of time.

"Battalion Commander, let's retreat" The threat of the Silent Arrows had suddenly vanished, and Shangguan Bing'er was finally able to relax a little. At this moment, Xiao Ru Se's voice sounded out.

Even though they liked to compete with each other, Xiao Ru Se knew how important Shangguan Bing'er was to Heavenly Bow Empire. Furthermore, she was Little Wei's girlfriend.

Despite Xiao Ru Se's warning coming at a relatively timely moment, Shangguan Bing'er had already fallen back into a predicament. It wasn't that she did not want to retreat, but even at that moment when the Silent Arrows stopped firing, 3 Physical Jewel Masters from the opposing team had charged forth to surround her instead. Two of them were mainly Agility-Type Physical Jewel Masters, and were also had four Jewels respectively.

Although Shangguan Bing'er was a rare dual-agility type Heavenly Jewel Master, she was after all still only with 2 sets of Heavenly Jewels, and was only a Mid Level Heavenly Shi Master; compared to that, her enemies had 4 Jewels each, winning her in both Heavenly Energy levels and number of Consolidated Equipment. The only things he could do was to swiftly shoot out Wind Blades, using her own speed coupled with the Wind Wielding Boot's boost in order to keep herself from falling. However, it was nigh impossible for her to escape their encirclement. At the same time, the other Jewel Masters were constantly getting closer. As soon as one or two more managed to join the fray, Shangguan Bing'er would likely be unable to continue defending herself successfully.

Xiao Ru Se was also very anxious. In their troops, there just weren't any other Jewel Masters at this moment. The enemy ambush had came too suddenly, and it had appeared jut as they reached their campsite, and at a point where their guard was at its lowest. If not for Zhou Weiqing's [danger senses and quick](#)

[reactions](#), the first arrow would have probably already injured Shangguan Bing'er, and they would likely have all been wiped out by now.

Peng Peng sounds resounded unceasingly, as the Heavy Infantry units who were attempting to stop the enemy were constantly knocked back by a pair of large warhammers. That 5-Jewel Mid Level Zun Physical Jewel Master was just too strong, and his strength and defense were too shocking. Both his warhammers were covered in a white light as he focused his Heavenly Energy onto them – he had obviously broken through the Heavenly Jing Energy stage and was in the Heavenly Shen Energy stage, and he was just bulldozing his way through the Heavy Infantry Elite troops. Only Xiao Ru Se's Rapid Fire Arrows were able to give him a little trouble, but he was still slowly making his way towards Shangguan Bing'er's little fray. Once he actually reached her, one could definitely imagine the result.

Right at this moment, that Mid Level Zun Physical Jewel Master suddenly gave forth an explosive shout, as he swung both his warhammers rapidly, his whole body seemingly spinning in a whirlwind. The Heavy Infantry troops who were surrounding him were instantly smashed away, flying away from him, and he leapt up in a ferocious pounce, closing the distance in an unbelievable bound, both warhammers smashing down towards Shangguan Bing'er's head. Simultaneously, two other Physical Jewel Masters also charged forth, and together with the original three Physical Jewel Masters surrounding Shangguan Bing'er, they formed a perfect encirclement which blocked every possible retreat of hers. Their cooperation was unbelievably smooth, and their attacks, from the twin warhammers smashing down, or the mass of attacks from the others in all directions, seemed to spell doom for Shangguan Bing'er.

“No... it’s over...” Xiao Ru Se closed her eyes in despair. Even though they were rivals, she certainly could not bear to watch Shangguan Bing’er be smashed into pulp.

Shangguan Bing’er herself was also in despair. She had tried every trick in her book, but there just wasn’t anything she could do in this scenario. The opponent had clearly planned this ambush perfectly to target her, and her own combat experience was also rather lacking. It looked like [this would the fragrance diminished and the jade perished](#)

At this critical moment, a loud cry resounded in the skies suddenly. An explosion blew up, as a black arrow slammed into the warhammers descending upon her, the strong explosive impact forcefully halting its descent. More amazingly, right at the centre of the explosion, 12 black tentacles shot forth like lightning, entwining all the enemies in the radius of 25 yards, including the Mid Level Zun Physical Jewel Master. All of the enemy Jewel Masters in the ambush were instantaneously held in place for a while.

It was still relatively okay for the Mid Level Zun Physical Jewel Master; he was after all in the centre of the pulling force. However, it was not so for the other six who were surrounding Shangguan Bing’er. Due to the sheer surprise of the attack, the four 3-Jewel Masters were instantly drawn in by the skill, and an unlucky one just happened to hit his head on the huge warhammer. Although the constitution of Physical Jewel Masters were strong, metal hitting head was still a tragedy in making and he instantly fainted, bleeding from the head. The other 2 remaining 4-Jewel Masters were strong enough to resist the pull, though their attacks were

interrupted as a result, as they stumbled a few steps closer to the Mid Level Zun Physical Jewel Master.

How could Shangguan Bing'er not seize such a great chance. Like a volcano who had been dormant for too long, [she erupted suddenly](#).

Spidey

direct translation of 香消玉殒, an idiom meaning a beauty passing away

(๖ ๖)

Chapter 20 – The One Deciding Arrow (2)

Three Wind Blades flew out, viciously cutting into one of the Four-Jewelled Physical Jewel Master who was unable to move; Shangguan Bing'er's Wind Blades had already evolved once since she had gotten her second pair of Heavenly Jewels, and as she sent the three Wind Blades slicing in at the same time targeting the enemy's frail neck, the result could be imagined. That Low Level Zun Physical Master's head was instantly cut off. At the same time, her Purple Dawn Bow also moved swiftly as she shot out a Silent Tracking Arrow without hesitation, slamming right into the forehead of the other Four-Jewelled Low Level Zun Physical Jewel Master, piercing right through his brain. It looked like he wouldn't live much longer as well.

This was the true fearful power of a Control Skill, especially when taken by surprise, when the body was instantaneously controlled, they could only take any incoming attacks passively. Although Shangguan Bing'er was only a Mid Level Heavenly Shi Jewel Master, she was after all still a Heavenly Jewel Master, and her strength was still more than comparable to a Three-Jewelled Ordinary Jewel Master. With her sheer speed, she had seized the opportunity to finish off two of the enemies.

The fierce explosion had also startled Xiao Ru Se and attracted her attention. Her response was also just as swift, and her Purple Dawn Bow did not idle at all, as she [‘Roll-Called’](#) the Three-Jewelled Physical Jewel Master who had been knocked unconscious. Under normal circumstances, that Physical Jewel Master might not have feared her arrows, but with him unconscious and unable to circulate his Heavenly Energy, how could he protect his own body?

In a flash, the situation on the battlefield had reversed, as three out of the thirteen enemy Physical Jewel Masters had perished. More importantly, once the explosively strong arrow had appeared along with the Control Skill with the 12 black tentacles, the courage of those Jewel Masters had also been shaken.

The Darkness Attribute was already quite rare, let alone one having such a strong supplementary explosive effect.

“Elemental and Physical Jewel Fusion Technique! It is Zhou Shui Niu! Quick, we have to retreat now!” The Mid Level Zun Physical Jewel Master did not bother about his own dignity, going all out in breaking free from the black tentacles, rolling on the floor and turning to flee.

Seeing that their leader had fled, the other Jewel Masters naturally turned to flee as well.

Although they had charged and fought fiercely just a moment ago, these Jewel Masters had also consumed much of their Heavenly Energy during that period. Their original plan had been to flee immediately after taking out Shangguan Bing'er, otherwise, once they were full surrounded by the entire army, they would not be able to escape.

Shangguan Bing'er's face was a mask of frost, and the Purple Dawn Bow in her hands repeatedly shot forth arrows. At this time, without anyone to suppress her, she was able to fully show the superior strength of a Heavenly Jewel Master. Her Silent Tracking

Arrow was even stronger than the Silent Arrow that had been suppressing her earlier, being a Heavenly Jewel Master coupled with the fact that her arrow had the 'Tracking' ability. When she was shooting at those Three-Jewelled Physical Jewel Masters, her firing rate was just too fast for the opponent to resist, even if they were able to survive the arrows, their speed in escaping was greatly reduced in doing so. By the time these enemies had escaped the tight encirclement, less than half had managed to do so, as only the five strongest enemies had managed to do so. Of the remaining, two had been captured and the rest had been finished off by Shangguan Bing'er's Silent Tracking Arrows.

Shangguan Bing'er did not give pursuit, standing there panting for breath, her beautiful eye full of vigilance. Dozens of Heavy Infantry Troops surrounded her, their shields raised up high in order to protect her.

That fight could be said to be the most difficult fight that Shangguan Bing'er had ever experienced since birth, and she had barely managed to survive. If not for that sudden arrow striking the strongest member of the enemy party, the Mid Level Zun Physical Jewel Master, and also Controlling the other 12 enemies, which allowed the two girls to instantly make a counter attack and kill three enemies instantaneous, perhaps the result of the entire fight would be completely different. Not only would she die, all of the enemy Physical Jewel Masters would probably have escaped unharmed.

Was it Marshal Zhou? That should be impossible! As the battle situation at the border area was temporarily stable, Marshal Zhou had been recalled back to the Capital City to report on the activities, and should not be returning to the front lines in the near

future. Yet, that formidable arrow just now, that was obviously a Dark Attribute based Elemental and Physical Jewel Fusion Technique. Wait. Could it be him?

In this moment, Xiao Ru Se walked over, her delicate eyebrows furrowed tightly as she arrived beside Shangguan Bing'er, saying: "Battalion Commander, are you alright?"

Shangguan Bing'er shook her head, saying: "I'm fine, I just used up too much Heavenly Energy. Thank you, Company Leader Xiao. If not for your instructions, our troops would have suffered much more damage. I might also..."

Xiao Ru Se said: "You shouldn't thank me, but Little Fatty instead. You know..."

Shangguan Bing'er froze in place: "Is it really him? Where is he?"

Xiao Ru Se said: "How would I know? Our losses this time are not low, but, we can also consider this to be quite a great achievement and merit. I will let everyone check out our casualty numbers and treat the wounded."

Shangguan Bing'er sighed lightly: "I'm sorry. I really am not a qualified Commander."

Xiao Ru Se said lightly: "You were the focus of the enemy, how could you have found the opportunity to instruct the troops. Furthermore, you are truly an outstanding Heavenly Jewel Master."

Anyway, let's rush to the military camp first." Ever since she knew about Zhou Weiqing and Shangguan Bing'er's relations, her attitude towards Shangguan Bing'er's had noticeably improved. After all, '[Fertiliser and Water should not be irrigated to an outsider's fields](#)', she considered Shangguan Bing'er's as her future little sister-in-law. Of course, occasionally in Xiao Ru Se heart, there was also a little sour feeling.

At this time, Zhou Weiqing appeared from amongst the surrounding soldiers. When he saw that Shangguan Bing'er was all right, he gave a big sigh of relief.

That amazing arrow earlier was naturally shot forth by him a moment ago, Earlier, when he had managed to suppress that Master and servant pair with his Overlord Bow, he had originally wanted to pursue and finish them off. However, before he did so, he suddenly felt an inexplicable feeling of intense restlessness and fear surge forth in his heart, and he quickly rushed back to the edge of the woods, just reaching in time to witness Shangguan Bing'er being besieged from all sides. At that critical moment, he could not care about anything else, making use of his Overlord Bow with the Touch of Darkness Skill, his Elemental and Physical Jewel Fusion Technique that had essentially changed the entire course of events singlehandedly in a single, deciding arrow.

Shangguan Bing'er looked at Zhou Weiqing with an unusually gentle look, saying in a soft voice: "Thanks."

Zhou Weiqing grinned, thinking in his heart secretly: What is there to thank. Isn't it normal to protect my own woman?

Xiao Ru Se raised up her thumb at Zhou Weiqing, such an amazing arrow that was the deciding factor in a fight. It was truly too beautiful.

Compared with their relaxed situation here, the side of the ambushing enemies was a scene of gloom and sorrow.

The leader was the youth in white clothing who was shooting forth the Silent Arrows. After escaping from the soldier's encirclement, the five Physical Jewel Master had met together with this Master and servant pair.

“Trash, you bunch of trash! So many of you just to take out one little girl with a mere rank of Two Jewels, and yet you still failed.”

The Mid Level Zun Physical Jewel Master with the twin warhammers said with a bitter smile: “Your highness, much apologies. Please calm down. You also saw for yourself in the distance, that sudden arrow appearing with such overbearing power. We did not have the means to deal with it. I’m afraid that Zhou Shui Niu is nearby, if we did not run at that point, perhaps we would all be totally annihilated.”

This white clothed youth was in fact the Kalise Emperor's ninth son, Bai Jiu. He was 25 years old this year, yet he had actually already managed to cultivate up to four Physical Jewels, and was one of the most outstanding princes in the Kalise empire, and was even in charge of governing the Jewel Masters of the Kalise Empire. This time he had personally led a strike team to assassinate Shanguan Bing'er. Alas who knew that all their planning and efforts had come to naught.

If anyone forgot what this means, it's their lingo to snipe a particular target – seen in [Chapter 16.1](#)

Direct translation of 肥水不落外人田, basically meaning good things should be left to their inner circle / not be allowed to fall into outsiders' hands

Chapter 20 – The One Deciding Arrow (3)

Bai Jiu gave a cold hmph. “Bullshit, if it were Zhou Shui Niu, do you really think that you could have escaped with your life? Not just you, even I would have lost my life there. Furthermore, I had also obtained the news the day before yesterday that Zhou Shui Niu was still in Heavenly Bow City. How else would I have carried out this plan.”

The [Mid Level Zun Physical Jewel Master](#) also realised his mistake then. “Right! Although the power of that arrow was strong, its actual destructive power has insufficient. If it had been fired by Zhou Shui Niu, it should have claimed my life there and then. Could it be...”

Bai Jiu nodded, “That’s right, besides Shangguan Bing’er, it seems that the Heavenly Bow Empire have another Heavenly Jewel Master in their army, but his cultivation level should not be high, at most being similar to Shangguan Bing’er with two pairs of Jewels. His pair of Heavenly Jewels should be of the Darkness and Strength attributes, just the same as Zhou Shui Niu. If not for him, my Silent Arrows could have killed Shangguan Bing’er at the beginning. Let’s retreat and return to our base to plan further. It seems like this time, I might need to beg my teacher to go into action. I definitely must not allow Heavenly Bow Empire to gain two more Heavenly Jewel Masters. Xiao Yeye, just a moment ago, you said that the fellow vanished when dodging my Silent Arrow?”

The subordinate following Bai Jiu around was the Fire Attribute Elemental Jewel Master [Luo Xiaoye](#). Xiaoye was his personal servant since childhood, and had grown up together with him, and also doubled as his personal bodyguard.

“Yes! Your Highness, I think I saw him vanish for a second. Otherwise, how could he possibly evade your Silent Arrow so suddenly!”

“Did you see it clearly?” Bai Jiu’s brow furrowed.

Luo Xiaoye muttered: “Probably not very clearly.”

Bai Jiu [sweatdropped](#) and said: “You fool, if you didn’t see clearly, then why did you report it!”

Luo Xiaoye blinked and said: “But... you didn’t see clearly either right?”

“Xiao Yeye——”

“Your highness, we should retreat quickly.” This Luo Xiaoye may not be the sharpest knife in the drawer, but he was not silly at all.

“I’ll deal with you when we get back.”

...

About an hour later, Shangguan Bing’er had finally led the troop in reaching the military base on the front lines.

In the border of Heavenly Bow Empire and Kalise Empire, there was a large patch of mountain ranges, hills, bogs and other complicated terrain, fully cutting off both countries from one another. The military strength of the Heavenly Bow Empire only consisted of Five Regiments, of which one was stationed at the Heavenly Bow City as a guard, one stationed to guard the eastern border of the Empire, and three Regiments stationed here at the Kalise border, guarding the important pass between the two countries. Due to the complexity of the terrain, both sides rarely had any form of large-scale war, but there were always constant small skirmishes. The most commonly used forms of combat was to deploy a small troop to harass the opposing side. Having a war between two countries actually being primarily based on guerrilla warfare, it was truly a rather unique phenomenon.

The camp encompassed more than ten square miles where the three Regiments totally more than 30,000 were stationed. With their tents under the open skies, it felt as if there was a faint killing aura in the atmosphere, which could cause fear in a person unused to the place.

When Zhou Weiqing saw the huge military compound, his heart was set aflame as his blood boiled. This. This was the military compound on the front lines. This was where his father lived and fought most of his time. Father, do you know that your son has also arrived at the front lines?

The number of casualties from the earlier battle had been counted, and more than seventy troops had perished, 40 severely wounded, and more than a hundred with minor wounds after the ambush by the enemy Jewel Masters. That was an extremely terrifying number! After all, the enemy ambushing party only

numbered 13 people, including the two hidden members, there were only a total of 15 people ambushing them. From the start of the fight to the end, it had barely been 15 minutes. Furthermore, their target had really only been Shangguan Bing'er, yet they had still suffered such a huge loss of so many trained soldiers. From this battle, you could truly see the tyrannical killing power of Jewel Masters on the battlefield.

As their troop entered the Fifth Regiment's camp site, they split up and returned to their respective Battalions. Shangguan Bing'er went to report to their Regimental Commander, while the Third Battalion was temporarily commandeered by Xiao Ru Se to return to their camp.

In the Third Battalion, Xiao Ru Se's actual authority actually exceeded Shangguan Bing'er's. Besides Company Leader Mao Li who was was Shangguan Bing'er's closest subordinate, most of the other Company Leaders in the Battalion would follow her lead.

Xiao Ru Se calmly and quickly finished arranging the three Companies of troops, and she had also arranged a personal tent for Zhou Weiqing, situated right beside Shangguan Bing'er's tent.

“Little Wei, you should go and have a rest first. With your status as a Squad Leader and the Personal Aide of the Battalion Commander, you do not need to attend the drills and trainings. As long you practice your archery when you are free, with your other skills, you should be fine. Anyway, having left for so long, I better go back and examine the situation of entire Battalion.”

Zhou Weiqing nodded and said: “Elder sister, you go ahead, I'll

cultivate by myself.”

Xiao Ru Se left, and Zhou Weiqing also entered his own tent. It was an individual tent; after all Xiao Ru Se would naturally take good care of her own little brother. It was normally a tent that was only assigned to an officer of rank Company Leader and above. The entire tent was made out of tanned cowhide, not only did it block the effects of weather, it also had amazing thermal insulation. Being almost 20 square meters large, it was also fully stocked within with many daily necessities, and was much better when compared to the various small tents in the encampment.

In doing so, Xiao Ru Se was actually not being excessive. After all, not only was Zhou Weiqing Marshal Zhou Shuiniu’s only son, just his Heavenly Jewel Master status alone would mean that living in such a tent was already an injustice to him. Of course, that would normally only happen if he announced his status.

Zhou Weiqing put down the gear he had been carrying, and flopped down onto the bed. However, he did not have the mood to rest currently, and images of the previous fight flashed through his mind unceasingly as he tried to process it.

Without a doubt, his own actual combat experience was just too insufficient. Furthermore, his usage of Heavenly Energy had also been extremely inefficient. When he had shot that final arrow, he had totally exhausted all of his Heavenly Energy. He had so many strong Skills Stored in his Elemental Jewel, yet when he wanted to fight at his full strength, he wasn’t even able to use all of them once through.

The thing that left him the deepest impression was the final moment when the opposing six Physical Jewel Masters had surrounded Shangguan Bing'er, limiting her movement, and doing so right at the moment when their leader's two warhammers were smashing down upon her. Such coordination in that single instance was so exquisite. It made Zhou Weiqing understand that even Jewel Masters needed to coordinate. If not for the fact that Shangguan Bing'er was a dual agility type Heavenly Jewel Master, she would likely not be able to last long enough for him to return and help. Even then, if not for the surprise factor of his strong control skill, plus the fact that there were so many soldiers assisting from the side, the final result might still have been her death.

Coordination, coordination. Their Jewel Masters are able to coordinate so well with each other. However, my Elemental Jewel has six attributes... I should be able to coordinate my skills right...

Zhou Weiqing faintly understood that today when Shangguan Bing'er was in danger, the reason why he could sense it so promptly was because Shangguan Bing'er was the Sacrifice that helped him to Awaken his Heavenly Jewels, and they shared a connection. Yet, what would happen if the person in danger was Xiao Ru Se? He wouldn't have had the same sense of danger.

To protect his family, those he loved, to protect his own motherland, he needed much more strength. At this moment, in his heart surged a huge amount of heartfelt respect to his father. All these years, it was his father who had protected the Heavenly Bow Empire!

As he thought about that, Zhou Weiqing vaulted back into a standing position. Focusing his will, the four energy whirlpools at the Four Death Acupuncture Points he had broken through immediately accelerated their churning. Without a doubt, what he needed the most now was Heavenly Energy.

I seriously want to name this guy already. Geez

洛晓夜. He is called Xiao Yeye (小夜夜) by Bai Jiu in that previous paragraph as a kind of endearment, basically like how Xiao Ru Se calls Zhou Weiqing, Xiao Wei.

Strange, I know. Basically he says 一头黑线, which you can imagine of in anime, when black lines appear around someone's head when something stupid is said.

Chapter 20 – The One Deciding Arrow (4)

After these few months of practice, Zhou Weiqing's Heavenly Energy had already reached the normal fourth level of Heavenly Jing Energy. However, to attempt breaking through the Yongquan Death Acupuncture Point, it was still insufficient. He had tried attempting it a couple of days ago, but before his Heavenly Energy had circulated to his knees, it had already run out. In order for him to even attempting breaking through the Yongquan Acupuncture Point, he needed to at least reach the Zhu San Li Acupuncture Point first, and make use of it to accelerate the circulation speed towards the San Ying Jiao, before using it once again to accelerate towards the Yongquan Acupuncture Point. Obviously, this process needed a large amount of Heavenly Energy accumulated.

The Fifth Regiment, headquarters.

“What? You want to resign from the post of Third Battalion Commander? Viscount Shangguan, are you joking?” The Fifth Regiment's Commander stood up in surprise as he looked at Shangguan Bing'er, who had a firm look on her face.

Shangguan Bing'er said solemnly: “Regimental Commander, I am certainly not joking. I have realised that I do not have the ability to commanded troops well, let alone a whole Battalion of soldiers. In terms of directing troops, I am severely deficient. I do not want to have a high rank just because I am a Heavenly Jewel Master. That is extremely unfair to the men and officers of the Third Battalion. Directing an army is a profound skill, and after much self-examination, I feel that my ability is insufficient. If I continued directing the Third Battalion, I'm afraid larger issues might rise up. For the sake of the soldiers and officers of the Third Battalions,

please comply with my request. I would rather remain in the military command as a normal soldier to join in the fighting, than be an incompetent Battalion Commander.”

At this time, there were three people in the Fifth Regiment headquarters. Besides Shangguan Bing'er and the Regimental Commander, Gao Shen, who also had a similar rank of Viscount, the Fifth Regiment's Vice-Regimental Commander Qian Zhantian who concurrently held the post of the First Battalion's Battalion Commander, was also there. They looked at each other in dismay, feeling a big headache from her request.

Gao Shen said: “Viscount Shangguan, you just managed to kill off six enemy Physical Jewel Masters, and captured two alive. I was just about to report this to the military headquarters to get you your military accomplishments, why go through all this trouble? You can slowly learn how to direct the troops.”

Shangguan Bing'er shook her head vigorously once more, saying: “That was mostly Company Leader Xiao's merit. If not for his good directions, perhaps not only I would be killed by the enemy, the loss from our army would also be much higher. I cannot allow my own command training to come at the cost of the blood of our Third Battalion's men. Please comply with my request.”

The nearby Qian Zhantian said: “Battalion Commander Shangguan, you should know that the reassignment of military officers of the rank of Battalion Commander and above is not something that we can decide by ourselves. Why don't we turn in your resignation to the military headquarters when we make our report, and we can let the higher ups decide.”

Shangguan Bing'er said: "Then, Regimental Commander, please order for Company Leader Xiao to be the temporary acting Battalion Commander, I will no longer participate in commanding of the Third Battalion."

Gao Shen saw that she was really firm and said helplessly: "Alright, as Viscount Shangguan wishes."

"Thank you, Regimental Commander." Shangguan Bing'er said with a military salute, before leaving.

The two officers exchanged dismayed looks once again, and Qian Zhantian said in a low voice: "That girl, she's outwardly soft, but inside she is really extremely tough willed. Still, it was quite a rash decision by the headquarters to give her a rank of Battalion Commander so early. After all, she had not undergone genuine military academy training yet."

Gao Shen said: "That was the will of the Commander-in-Chief. Actually, his plan was to just let her feel the atmosphere of war in the front lines, having a personal feel before entering training again slowly. However, she is truly not suitable to continue staying at the military camp in the front lines. Today's ambush was obviously pre-planned by the Kalise Empire. I shudder to think what would happen if anything were to happen to her here, how can I face the Commander-In-Chief? I will write this report to the military headquarters instantly, the messenger hawk can pass on the message quickly and back, and I believe we should have the answer in ten days. Lao Qian, move the First Battalion and stationed yourselves beside the Third Battalion, strengthen the

defense, and ensure the safety of Viscount Shangguan.”

“I understand. I really hope that Viscount Shangguan will grow into her power earlier. Alas, she is a girl, I do not know if it is right to place such a heavy burden onto her shoulders in the future, to have to take over from Marshal Zhou...”

.....

“Little Fatty, are you in?” Zhou Weiqing was cultivating in his tent, when Shangguan Bing’er’s voice resounded out from outside.

“I’m here.” Stopping his cultivation, Zhou Weiqing jumped down from his bed, and raised the tent flap. Shangguan Bing’er walked in from the outside, and Zhou Weiqing immediately noticed that her mood was rather off, and she looked rather lonely, desolate and despondent. It was truly out of sorts from her usual self. Furthermore, this was also the first time she had called out his name directly.

“Bing’er, what’s wrong?” Zhou Weiqing pulled out a chair for her.

Shangguan Bing’er looked up at him suddenly and said: “Am I very stupid? I cannot even direct the troops properly. I...”

Looking at her sudden agitation, Zhou Weiqing was given a scare. “Bing’er, how could you say that? What happened today was totally not your fault. Furthermore, thanks to you, we managed to

deal a heavy blow to the enemies.”

Shangguan Bing'er shook her head and said: “I am not a qualified commander, Little Fatty, do you know? Actually, I have totally no idea how to direct an army, to deploy troops and formations. Before today, I always believed that as a Heavenly Jewel Master, even if my commanding capabilities were not up to speed, I could still make it up through my own personal strength. Today, I finally understood how foolish that thought was. Heavenly Jewel Masters and army commanders are two totally different concepts, no wonder Company Leader Xiao always refused to accept me. He is right; in comparison, he is much more suitable than I am to be the Battalion Commander. I have already turned in my resignation to the Regimental Commander, and I expect that the order should be relayed down before long.”

Zhou Weiqing patted his own shoulder, saying: “I’ll lend this to you?”

Shangguan Bing'er blanked out for a moment, looking at Zhou Weiqing's caring eyes, and after a hesitant moment, she walked forward to him, laying her head gently on his shoulder. However, she actually maintained the rest of her body away from him.

Zhou Weiqing's mind was filled with tender and protective feelings, and he lifted his arms to embrace her. However, he was stopped by her as she said: “Do not move.”

Zhou Weiqing immediately stopped his hands, saying: “Alright, I am not moving.”

She stood there, gently resting her head upon his shoulder, as she closed her eyes slowly, saying in a low voice: “Little Fatty, do you know? Actually, I am so very tired, my heart has always been very tired... very tired.”

“I understand. You are after all only 16 years old, and yet as the only other Heavenly Jewel Master in the empire besides Admiral Zhou, so much has fallen upon you. The responsibility and expectations you are shouldering is so high. Not only must you continually cultivate and improve your strength, you are also trying to adapt to the army, it is really too tough on you.”

“I do not fear tough labour, Little Fatty, you know? No matter how tough it is, no matter how tired I am, I can still persist and carry on. But today, seeing so many of my soldiers die before my eyes... in one fell swoop, more than 70 lives just vanished like that, even amongst those severely wounded, if more than half of them can continue on in the army it would be considered good already... Almost 100 lives were ruined because of me... Before this, they had never let me join the battlefield... Before today, I had never done anything as a true Battalion Commander. Today... was the first time I killed a human...the first time I saw so many people die before me. I felt really uncomfortable in my heart, extremely uneasy. I do not think I can continue being a Battalion Commander any longer. I cannot stand the thought of having another day where more soldiers will perish because of my inadequate directions. I really do not want to see them die in front of me.”

Zhou Weiqing's heart stirred, he had not expected that this was the first time that Shangguan Bing'er killed someone or seen death. No wonder her response was so huge. Watching so many

people die to to protect her, how could her heart withstand it. Feeling her body trembling slightly, Zhou Weiqing said solemnly: “Bing’er, let me withstand all of that for you.”

Shangguan Bing’er’s body stiffened. She understood completely what he meant. With his talent, if he disclosed his identity as a Heavenly Jewel Master, without a doubt, much of the pressure on her would shift to him. If in Shangguan Bing’er’s heart, her feelings towards Zhou Weiqing was extremely conflicting, and in the mass of conflicting emotions, indignation accounted for a majority of it. In that instance as he said those words, it felt as if all the discontent and indignation vanished. At this time when she was at her frailest, when she most needed comforting, Zhou Weiqing’s calm and insistent words touched her heart for the first time, moving her deeply. Before this, even if his arrow had saved her life, she did not have such a feeling, but only at this moment did she really feel that this shoulder belonged to a man she could depend on.

The arms hanging at both sides of her body lifted quietly, as she held Zhou Weiqing gently. The distance between them finally disappeared as she embraced him voluntarily [for the first time](#).

Awww. <3

Chapter 21 – [Stealing the heart, Surprise Attack](#)

In that instance when Shangguan Bing'er lifted both arms and embraced him, Zhou Weiqing felt a warm fuzzy feeling swell up in his heart. Though he was usually a little perverted and rascally, at this moment his brain was unexpectedly in a blank.

To Zhou Weiqing, this hug was like a sign of approval. Yes, approval. Since he was young, up until now, he had always been a trash in others' eyes. Even after he had become a Heavenly Jewel Master, the shadow and darkness of the past had not faded from his heart, and deep inside he felt a sense of inferiority. This was why he had always had a mask in place, using his cynicism and teasing to hide his feelings of inferiority. Previously, whenever he had spent time with Shangguan Bing'er, this was the main reason for why he acted like that.

She hugged me. She actually hugged me of her own accord. The feel of being hugged in a warm embrace was an amazing, beautiful feeling, that warmed his jaded heart. Finally, there is a girl, such a beautiful wonderful girl, who really thinks that I am someone is worth something, someone who is reliable. At least, at this moment. A hitherto unknown feeling of pride and satisfaction welled up his his rapidly beating heart.

After Shangguan Bing'er had embraced him, her beautiful face had also flushed a deep red. In the instance when she hugged him, she had been in a state of agitation and been touched deeply, and now she awoke a little, and felt a sense of nervousness welling up. That rascal was always so bad, will he seize this chance to...

However, very quickly, surprise quickly entered Shangguan Bing'er's feelings. She realised that Zhou Weiqing was just standing there in her embrace, without playing any tricks or trying anything funny, without a sign that he was going to try to do anything further. Slowly, the sense of nervousness vanished, and a sense of peace and security filled her heart.

Although he took away my first time, but today he also saved my life. With that, let's wipe the slate clean. Shangguan Bing'er thought to herself in her heart.

When a woman hates a man, no matter what he does for her, how much effort or how many things he does, that hatred will not diminish a whit. However, the reverse is also true, when a woman has acknowledged a man, even if he does not do anything, she will still think the better of him.

The two of them just stood there silently. They were after all still very young; one was a boy with an inferiority complex after being called trash all these years, and the other was a girl who was shouldering too much responsibility and was unable to take it. At this point in time, their two hearts seem to be close together. Even without speaking, their auras seemed to be comforting each other.

“Thank you, Little Fatty, I feel much better now.” After some time had passed, Shangguan Bing'er spoke first. She let go of Zhou Weiqing and looked up at him, only to see him staring blankly and foolishly at her, and she couldn't help but let out a peal of laughter.

“Bing’er, you look so beautiful when you smile.” Zhou Weiqing said in a rather foolishly sounding tone. At this time, his mind was a little short circuited, but the shadow of darkness in his heart had been eased a lot by Shangguan Bing’er’s embrace.

Shangguan Bing’er could feel the hot breath from him, and she blushed even more, biting her lower lip. Such a look, made her look unbelievably cute.

Zhou Weiqing felt blood rush into his head, and almost subconsciously, he lowered his head towards her. His movement was very slow, at this time he did not want to ever violate this girl who had saved him. If she showed any sign of resisting, he would immediately stop.

As their faces got closer, Shangguan Bing’er’s blush grew even deeper, but she did not try to dodge. Just a moment ago, their hearts had met and melded together, and her anger towards him had faded away.

Just as their faces were barely an inch away from each other, all of a sudden, the tent flap was shoved upwards and an urgent sounding voice sounded out: “Little Wei, Shangguan Bing’er actually resigned from the post of Battalion Commander... [Ehhh...](#)”

Xiao Ru Se charged in from outside, giving Shangguan Bing’er a scare as she jumped away like a startled little bird.

“I... went to the wrong tent. You guys continue...” Xiao Ru Se

had a strange expression on her face as she quickly gave a weird excuse and fled the tent.

Zhou Weiqing was speechless, and sweatdropped. He had just been about to get his first real kiss. Elder sis... you really came at a wrong time.

Her ears burning red with embarrassment, Shangguan Bing'er gave him a quick glare and said: "It's all your fault. I'm going back now." After which, she quickly tried to move off.

"Bing'er, wait a while." Zhou Weiqing took a step forward and held onto her.

"You... what are you trying to do?" That gentle atmosphere earlier had vanished as soon as Xiao Ru Se barged in, and Shangguan Bing'er couldn't help but ask in alarm as she lowered her head.

"Bing'er, don't leave yet. Don't you want to take revenge for our men who died today?" Zhou Weiqing said softly.

"En?" Only then did Shangguan Bing'er realise that she had mistaken his actions, and she raised her head to look at him. "Revenge? How?"

A cold look flashed in Zhou Weiqing's eyes, and he said softly: "This is a war between two countries. Since they killed and injured over a hundred of our men, then we should also do the same to

them. Wouldn't that would be a temporary revenge for those of our men who had lost their lives? How far is the closest Kalise Military Camp from here?"

Shangguan Bing'er said: "It is about 300 li away, though this 300 li is filled with complicated terrain, and is considered a demilitarized zone for both sides. What, are you thinking of doing a sneak attack on the enemy stronghold?"

Zhou Weiqing nodded his head and said: "Yes. Didn't you want to know what Skills I had stored in my Elemental Jewel? Let me tell you tonight. Indeed, you are correct; in terms of commanding and leading troops, we are definitely unable to compare with Company Leader Xiao. However, we are Heavenly Jewel Masters. Our purpose on the battlefield can be easily described with just three words. Sheer destructive power. That is the true value of us Heavenly Jewel Masters. Since the enemy can cross over to our borders to assassinate you, why can't we do the same and teach them a lesson?"

Shangguan Bing'er took a deep breath, and in her beautiful eyes, a resolute look appeared. She said: "Alright. Let's do that. I will go back to restore my Heavenly Energy first. After dinner, I'll look for you, and we can discuss a plan of action."

Zhou Weiqing escorted her out of his tent, then returned to his own bed and continued cultivating. [A young bull does not fear the tiger](#), the young always easily give in to impulse as they do not fear consequences as much. For him, the only thought was that wanted to make Shangguan Bing'er feel better, and be happy. On her part, Shangguan Bing'er wanted revenge for her slain men, and so the

two easily agreed on such a wild plan.

As smoke started rising over the military compound, the red glow of the setting sun reflected across the horizon. The military cooks were busy preparing food as dinner time neared.

In the Heavenly Bow Empire army, there was a rule that clearly stipulated that all military officers, no matter what rank, had to dine together with the soldiers, unless any peculiar circumstances arose. This stipulation was set by Zhou Weiqing's father, Admiral Zhou. As such, this was always the time when the men of the Third Battalion were the most excited, as it was at this time that they could see the beautiful female Battalion Commander, who was also known as the most beautiful woman in the Empire.

The title was a play on words actually, the direct translation being 'Stealing Heart, Stealing Camp'

Nooooooooo

Direct translation of a chinese idiom, 初生牛犊不怕虎

Chapter 21 – Stealing the heart, Surprise Attack (2)

However, the atmosphere at today's dinner was obviously somewhat strange. Company Leader Mao Li's face was full of anxiety and he spoke for a long time with Shangguan Bing'er. However, her face seemed as calm as usual. On the other hand, the one with the most prestige in the Third Battalion, Company Leader Xiao, who normally had the most disagreements with the beautiful female Battalion Commander, unexpectedly sat at the same side as her, seemingly spending the entire dinner discussing something with the other Company Leaders.

Without question, Shangguan Bing'er had already started turning over her power as Battalion Commander to Xiao Ru Se. Zhou Weiqing did not join in the conversations, instead staying in a corner and eating as much as he could. The food in the mess was definitely inferior to what he normally ate at home, but it was a different flavor and experience after all. This was especially so for Zhou Weiqing, who had after all spent time in the wilds surviving by himself, and had even eaten grass and tree bark for survival before. To him, being able to eat his fill was already considered pretty good treatment. When Admiral Zhou had started training him, the first few words he said was: "No matter when or where, you should never ever waste food."

After eating, Zhou Weiqing returned to his tent. Before long, there was a flash of a silhouette, and surprisingly without any movement of the tent flap, Shangguan Bing'er appeared beside him. In her hands, she held a sheepskin map.

The most startling thing to Zhou Weiqing was that Shangguan Bing'er had once again resumed her icy demeanor, with a tranquil look on her beautiful face. It seemed a rather huge divergence from the gentle look she had in the afternoon.

“What are you looking at? Come here?” Looking at Zhou Weiqing's blur appearance, Shangguan Bing'er was finding it funny in her heart, but she maintained the ice cold expression on her face.

Zhou Weiqing walked over to her side, asking tentatively: “Bing'er, did you lose your memory?”

Shangguan Bing'er had thought about what Zhou Weiqing might have possibly said, but she truly never expected those words. She finally couldn't resist and let out a giggle: “[Fool](#).”

“You did that on purpose?” Zhou Weiqing came to his senses, and with his hands spread out lecherously, he leapt towards Shangguan Bing'er.

“Do not move.” Shangguan Bing'er said with a stern expression.

“Er...” Zhou Weiqing stopped himself forcefully in mid-pounce while still in the posture.

Shangguan Bing'er said sternly: “You are still in my testing period, so you're not allowed to touch me without permission.” As she said that, the corners of her mouth twitched upwards in a little

smile.

“Bing’er, when did you became so bad!” How could Zhou Weiqing not see that Shangguan Bing’er had said all of that intentionally once more.

Shangguan Bing’er gave a humph and said, “You’ve already taken the biggest advantage of me. The shadow in my heart is still very deep, of course I must test you a lot more.”

Zhou Weiqing grinned and said: “Test? Of course you must test. Let’s get on with proper business first though.” He was not anxious at all. Now that Shangguan Bing’er was at least willing to give him the opportunity to be tested, it was already a substantial improvement for their relationship. He enjoyed the feeling of pursuing her very much. In truth, this fellow had quite a [high EQ](#), now that the relationship between the two of them had improved, he did not want to destroy it by being overeager.

Shangguan Bing’er rolled her eyes, saying: “Why do I have the feeling that the present you is even more dangerous than before, when you were being a rascal.”

Zhou Weiqing blinked, “Should I return to my original state then?”

“Hmph. No way, you better not.” Came the reply. As she said that, she continued to spread the map in her hands on the table. “Little Fatty, look, here we are.” Shangguan Bing’er pointed to a spot on the map.

As she moved her fingers along, she continued saying: “If we move ahead along this line, there will be a hill region, which is covered with mass vegetation. The terrain is quite complex, and there are also Heavenly Beasts in the region. In fact, there have been rumours that Zong Stage Heavenly Beasts have appeared there. As such, that hill region has formed into a natural blockade.

“In order for us to enter the Kalise Empire, there are three possible routes; a main road and two smaller paths. The military might of our three Regiments are mainly focused on holding the main road, while the smaller paths each have two Battalions guarding them respectively. Since the distance from the camps are not very far, as long as enemy troops appear, reinforcements can arrive at a quickest possible time.”

“The Kalise Empire has stationed the military strength of approximately four Regiments here, which is a larger total force than we have. Furthermore, besides our archery units, their equipment for their other units surpass ours. The four regiments are also stationed together, but similar to us, they have large amounts of patrols surrounding the hills and the paths. If we want to get through to their side, I think that it is best we take one of the smaller paths. In the night, we should be able to conceal ourselves and sneak through.”

To Shangguan Bing'er's surprise, Zhou Weiqing started looking very carefully at the map, gesticulating at it with his hand as if he were calculating something, looking very serious and earnest.

“Little Fatty, what are you doing?” Shangguan Bing'er asked

curiously. Although Zhou Weiqing was not specially handsome, but he was tall and of good stature, with broad shoulders and a broad back, his whole body filled with a sunny cheerful aura. His honest looking face was simple but pleasing to the eye. At the moment, when he was focused and serious, he seemed steady and dependable. As the saying goes, men are the most attractive when they are focused. Furthermore, Shangguan Bing'er's innermost feelings' of anger against him had been relatively soothed earlier today, and at this time she felt that he was not that bad after all.

“Wait a while.” Zhou Weiqing replied simply to Shangguan Bing'er, as he continued fiddling with the map for some time. After a while, he finally relaxed, before closing his eyes as if in deep thought. At last, he said to her: “Let's go. As you mentioned previously, it's better that we go by the smaller path.”

“En.” Shangguan Bing'er acquiesced. Both of them carried their Purple Dawn Bows on their backs, and brought two quivers of arrows holding 100 arrows respectively, before leaving the tent.

Shangguan Bing'er made use of her status as Battalion Commander, and using the excuse of patrolling at night, she circled the camp once before quietly sneaking out together with Zhou Weiqing.

Only as they were leaving the military compound did Zhou Weiqing realise how strict the security of the campsite actually was. All along the way, there were several sentry posts visible, and even greater number of hidden guard posts as well. With her status as Battalion Commander, Shangguan Bing'er just told the guards that she was inspecting the defences, and thus they easily passed

through the defense lines. In doing so, they continued heading towards the smaller path, moving on towards the Kalise Empire's closest military camp.

After a while, they stopped. "There are no longer any more sentry posts in front of us. Let's get ready." As Shangguan Bing'er said that, she unexpectedly started to strip off her armor.

Zhou Weiqing blinked, "Bing'er, that isn't good right..."

"What isn't good?" Shangguan Bing'er asked as she removed her chainmail and helmet, giving him a doubting look, only to see that Zhou Little Fatty had both his hands intertwined together, [unexpectedly standing there drawing circles](#). His head was lowered, and his face also is a little red as he said: "Bing'er, are we advancing a little too quickly? Furthermore, this is in the wilderness, doing '[field operations](#)', we might catch a cold."

Three black lines appeared instantaneously over Shangguan Bing'er head, and she said in mix of embarrassment and anger: "What is your brain thinking off! Keep your dirty thoughts to yourself. How could we possibly sneak through and pull off a surprise attack on the enemy's camp if we are dressed in armor?"

"Ehh..." Zhou Weiqing raised his head and looked, and saw that she had taken off her armor, revealing a [jet black, tight fitting leotard](#).

It's a direct translation here, but doesn't seem to have the right tone in english. It was more in an endearing way.

Emotional Intelligence

More of a Manhua kind of action to depict a bit of the frustrated/wronged feeling.

Lol, literal translation of 野战. Means outdoor s*x

Lol I sense his disappointment!

Chapter 21 – Stealing the heart, Surprise Attack (3)

Although Shangguan Bing'er was only 16 years old, but her body was quite well developed. Wearing that tight fitting leotard accentuated her beautiful curves, causing Zhou Weiqing to gulp down large amounts of saliva, and his gaze couldn't help but wander a little.

“Hey, what are you looking at?” Shangguan Bing'er flushed a little, slapping his shoulder. “You walk in front, you're not allowed to stare.” Zhou Weiqing's scorching gaze had made her a little flurried.

Zhou Weiqing's heart was racing, and he couldn't help but think to himself. Such an amazingly beautiful girl, and she had already been mine? That day... why can't I remember anything? How sad.

Under Zhou Weiqing's control, his attribute wheel once again turned into the green area demarcating the wind attribute. His right wrist was now surrounded with the Icy Jade Physical Jewel, while his left wrist was surrounded by the Alexandrite Cat's Eye Jewel, which had turned into a rosy hue in the night. With the boost to his speed, Zhou Weiqing started moving ahead once again at a high speed.

At the same time, Shangguan Bing'er also released her Heavenly Jewels and followed behind him.

Originally, Shangguan Bing'er had thought that for such a long

distance travel, Zhou Weiqing's speed might not be sufficient. Her plan was that if he was too slow, she would just have to help him along. However, when both of them had released their Heavenly Jewels and started moving at top speeds, she was surprised to find that Zhou Weiqing's direct linear movement speed was actually comparable to her own, a dual agility type Heavenly Jewel Master.

Since she could observe him from behind, Shangguan Bing'er quickly found the reason why. Although Zhou Weiqing's movement was not slow, but there was still quite some difference between his maximum speed and hers.

However, the true secret behind why he could travel so fast now was actually his right leg! Every time his left leg tapped onto the ground, it was merely as a fulcrum, and his body moved at a rather normal pace. However, once his right foot touched the ground, his whole body seemed to shoot forward like an arrow. As such, although his running speed was extremely fast, it was actually with a lot of sudden bursts, and was not a constant pace.

“Little Fatty, your right leg?” Shangguan Bing'er Consolidated her second Physical Jewel into her Wind Wielding Boots, and instantly a pair of green boots coalesced around her feet, allowing her to move a lot faster than Zhou Weiqing.

Zhou Weiqing turned his head to look at Shangguan Bing'er who was running beside him.

He grinned and said: “Heh, isn't it so awesome? My leg is really powerful now. It seems to be a bonus ability that came from that black pearl. Remember that time in the forest when I was suddenly

struck down with my whole body in pain when I was with Company Leader Xiao, and I had to hug you for a while before I got better? After that time, my right leg seems to have evolved, and became a lot stronger.” Towards Shangguan Bing’er whom he thought of as his own lady, he naturally would not hide anything about his abilities, and he quickly described the abilities of his new leg and the training he did.

Only then did realisation strike Shangguan Bing’er. No wonder along the way he had refused to ride on his warhorse, and had instead gone on foot beside the main body of troops. It was actually to get used to his right leg.

Originally, she had some qualms about this surprise attack, and was feeling nervous. After all, she thought that Zhou Weiqing’s speed was insufficient to escape if things went south. However, it now seemed like her worries were for naught, and they had a higher chance of success.

A distance of three hundred li was not far for Heavenly Jewel Masters like them, and under their maximum effort, it took them about two hours to reach their target destination.

...

“Little Fatty, if we go any further, we will start reaching the enemy’s sentry posts already.” Shangguan Bing’er stopped and looked towards Zhou Weiqing.

Zhou Weiqing nodded and said: “Let’s rest for a while first, you

should recover some of your Heavenly Energy as well.”

The pair looked for a hidden corner to get a rest, and to recover their Heavenly Energy. Although Zhou Weiqing’s cultivation level was much lower than Shangguan Bing’er, he had the advantage of the Immortal Deity Technique’s amazing power, which allowed him to continue absorbing Heavenly Energy from the surroundings even while running with his Jewels Activated. As such, his actual usage of Heavenly Energy was not very high, and he managed to fully recover in a short amount of time.

During the last few days of training, Zhou Weiqing had basically tested and found out the limits of the recovery speed of his Immortal Deity Technique. When he manipulated the energy whirlpools to spin at maximum speeds, it took about an hour for him to fully recover his entire depleted Heavenly Energy pool. This was a truly astonishing speed of recovery. After all, other Heavenly Jewel Masters would normally take two hours or more. This was not even counting the bonus of him being able to lower the Heavenly Energy consumption by drawing from the atmosphere while using.

...

After both of them had fully recovered their Heavenly Energy, they stood up.

“According to the news that we have received, the Kalise Empire’s sentry posts usually change shifts every four hours. [It’s almost 11pm](#). They should be changing shifts in about an hour.” Shangguan Bing’er said.

Zhou Weiqing thought about it for a bit and said: “Then let’s wait for an hour, and we can move out when they are changing shifts. If we sneak past the obvious sentry post, and launch a sneak attack on the hidden posts, with your Silent Tracking Arrow coupled with my assistance on the side, we should be able to get through without anyone discovering us. We’ll sneak through into their camp, launch a quick salvo of attacks, then retreat straight away.”

“Alright, that sounds good.” This would be the first time that the two of them would be truly coordinating together, furthermore it was only the two of them launching the sneak attack. As such, Shangguan Bing’er was rather nervous. Taking a furtive glance at Zhou Weiqing beside her, she found that although this was also his first time, he was clearly a lot calmer than she was, looking extremely steady. Faintly, you could see an evil light occasionally flash in his eyes.

Undoubtedly, Zhou Weiqing had gotten many benefits from the black pearl. At the same time, his natural disposition had also been somewhat influenced by the powerful black pearl as well. When he thought of the killing he was about to do, this newbie on the battlefield did not feel any fear or nervousness, instead feeling a sense of excitement.

...

One hour later, two shadowy figures started moving in the dark.

It was relatively easy to avoid the obvious sentry posts; they just

needed to move swiftly and silently alongside the boundary between hills and the path, making a detour and circling around the posts, while ensuring they made no noise.

After they had detoured around two of the obvious sentry posts, Zhou Weiqing suddenly halted, grabbing hold of Shangguan Bing'er and pulling her down in a crouch. "Wait a while."

"En?" Shangguan Bing'er quickly took down the Purple Dawn Bow from her back.

Zhou Weiqing said in a low tone: "On the left, above 50 yards ahead, there is a hidden sentry post. There are three soldiers there, I'll sneak there. Once I'm there, you deal with the leftmost one, and I will deal with the remaining two."

Such excellent senses! Shangguan Bing'er was secretly rather surprised. She had not been able to detect them despite her higher cultivation level, yet Zhou Weiqing had managed to do so. After all, the hillside was filled with thick brush and vegetation, making it rather difficult to spot or discover anything beyond a distance of 30 yards.

After Zhou Weiqing had told Shangguan Bing'er his plan, he started to circle around the hidden sentry post and approached it silently from the side. At the same time, Shangguan Bing'er moved slowly, vaulting up a tree and moving silently from above the treetops like a green ghost. After leaping across three large trees, she finally managed to get a good vantage position to see the three dark-clothed soldiers in the hidden sentry post.

In order to not make any sound, she took a long time to draw her Purple Dawn Bow, taking aim at the leftmost soldier. Readying herself, she waited for Zhou Weiqing to take action before she did so as well.

Right at that moment, she suddenly saw a crouching figure moving at lightning speed, bounding forth like a cheetah and pouncing towards the back of the soldiers in the hidden sentry post.

In that very instance, Shangguan Bing'er felt as if there was somehow a nebulous voice of fate was directing her actions then; the call of destiny. At that moment, she released her bowstring and with a Swoosh, the arrow shot out.

With Shangguan Bing'er's archery skills, adding on the fact that it was a sneak attack in the night, how could an ordinary soldier possibly dodge the arrow. With a light puff sound, the arrow slammed into his head, piercing right through the brain. Before the leftmost soldier could give out any cry of alarm, his body moved in a crooked fashion before falling down onto the ground.

By the time the other two soldiers in the hidden sentry post realised that something was wrong, a large hand appeared around their necks respectively. An immense strength was instantly applied, smashing their faces viciously into the soil on the ground, and the sound of their neck vertebra smashing sounded out.

子时 – the period from 11pm-1am, in ancient China they counted the time via 时辰 (2 hourly periods) which all had names

Chapter 21 – Stealing the heart, Surprise Attack (4)

The arrow striking and the other two sentries' neck being caught happened nearly at the same time. In that short period of time, the three sentries of the Kalise Empire had been killed off just like that. Although it could not be said to have been totally silent, but the light sounds which had arisen were hidden by the various insect noises in the forest. Their coordination had been perfect for their first time working together, and was indeed astonishing.

Without doubt, the one who had pounced from behind to finish off the two sentries was naturally Zhou Weiqing. What he had done was actually rather simple, circling behind the sentry post, and with the power of his right leg, he had leapt forth in an amazing burst of speed to grab hold of both sentries' necks. Before they could react and make any sound, he had smashed their heads into the ground and broken their necks. His Physical Jewel was after all that of strength – let alone the weaker neck vertebra, he could probably even break the thicker thigh bone if he wanted to.

However, even he had not imagined that Shangguan Bing'er would have [such a perfect understanding and coordination with him](#).

He had originally prepared his right leg in advance. If Shangguan Bing'er's arrow had been late, he would sweep his leg forth to kill the leftmost soldier; even if that would create a disturbance, he had to risk it.

The feeling in his hands as the bones shattered, coupled with the

sound, and the feeling of the life in his hands ebbing away caused a hint of bloodlust to fill Zhou Weiqing's eyes. This was his first time killing someone, and it was at such a personal, close range, and yet his inner heart was trembling with an inexplicable excitement.

He lifted his hand and gave a big thumbs up towards Shangguan Bing'er hidden in the distance. He then casually plucked out the arrow from the leftmost sentry's head, wiping it clean of all bloodstains on their clothes, before heading back to rejoin her.

"Bing'er, that was timely! That's three in total." As he said that, Zhou Weiqing stuck the arrow back into Shangguan Bing'er's quiver.

Shangguan Bing'er closed her eyes, a look of compassion flashing through her face, as she seemed a little unable to bear it. Luckily, she had killed from a distance, otherwise the pain from killing someone might have been even more obvious.

Zhou Weiqing patted her back comfortingly, saying: "Being kind to an enemy is being cruel to yourself. Think of all our soldiers who died, who were injured. Every Kalise Empire soldier who dies, is almost equal to saving one of our Heavenly Bow Empire's soldiers. Anyway, we have to go now."

"En." Shangguan Bing'er braced herself, thinking to herself. How can I be inferior to Zhou Little Fatty who is younger than me? He hasn't even reached fourteen years of age yet Right?

Very quickly, Zhou Weiqing managed to find a second hidden

sentry post. The sentries who were in charge of the sentry posts were usually elite light infantry soldiers who had also been trained as scouts. Amongst the ordinary infantry soldiers, they were outstanding. However, in front of two Heavenly Jewel Masters, they were frail and delicate.

Perhaps it was because Shangguan Bing'er had helped Zhou Weiqing to Awaken his Heavenly Jewels by being Sacrifice, and in the process forging a connection between them. The two of them had a stunning level of cooperation and tacit understanding between them; with Shangguan Bing'er focusing on long ranged attacks and Zhou Weiqing focusing on close combat. Hidden sentry posts fell one after the other as they continued forth.

When they finally tore through and got past all the sentry posts of the Kalise Empire, they had already killed 34 sentries from the various hidden sentry posts. Of that, the majority had been slain by Zhou Weiqing.

As they lay down hidden in the darkness, watching the enemy camp from a distance, Zhou Weiqing and Shangguan Bing'er both took the opportunity to recover their expended Heavenly Energy.

“Little Fatty, what do you have planned?” After a full night of cooperating in battle, the two of them were getting more coordinated and in tune with each other. Strangely enough, the one having the dominating and leadership role was not the Two-Jewelled Shangguan Bing'er, instead with Zhou Weiqing shouldering the responsibility.

Shangguan Bing'er realised that as soon as Zhou Weiqing entered

the forest, it was like a fish entering water. He took care of many minute details in such a way that she found impossible, and his unbelievably strong senses were able to easily detect enemies from incomparable distances. This was the main reason why they had managed to always get the upper hand against their enemies thus far, and the reason why they had managed to sneak through the whole enemy lines and reach the military camp without any issues.

Zhou Weiqing asked Shangguan Bing'er to take out her map once again, and with the pale moonlight as a light source, he examined the map and pointed at where they were: "Look here, this is our target's position. Although the enemy camp has quite a few patrolling soldiers, but at the moment is already past the 1am mark, and is the time when humans are easily tired. In a moment, I will be in charge of launching a sneak attack upon them, and you can cover me in case anything goes wrong."

"However, once we start the attack, we cannot return via the route we came. Instead, I think we should go via this route instead. I have examined all possible routes carefully earlier, and chosen it. Returning back to base via this route will allow us to reduce the distance by almost 50 li. Furthermore, you mentioned that the patch of forested hills that this route takes is populated by Heavenly Beasts, this will help in greatly deterring pursuit when we are making our escape too."

To Shangguan Bing'er's surprise, as Zhou Weiqing pointed out his chosen route on the map, his finger swiftly moved across the map and pointed to the various positions extremely accurately, showing also an especially firm grasp upon the distance to cover. The new route of retreat that he was pointing out was not a direct straight line, but instead curved and swerved a lot, but ensuring

that the distance travelled would be the minimum, with also fewer obstructions while still trying to keep as far from the Kalise Empire's campsites as possible. Clearly, this was what he had been calculating when he was holding the map before they had left earlier.

“Bing'er, are you listening to me?” Zhou Weiqing waved his hand in front of her dazed eyes.

Shangguan Bing'er gave him a rather complicated look, thinking to herself: So, it turns out that [you are actually really a genius](#). Even if you did not Awaken your Heavenly Jewels, you should be able to become an outstanding commander.

“I'm listening. However, what happens if we meet a Heavenly Beast blocking our way instead? With our current cultivation levels, even the weakest Shi Stage Heavenly Beast will give us a lot of problems, and will definitely be extremely dangerous for us to face. Heavenly Beasts have their own unique skills and talents, which are extremely strong. Most of these Heavenly Beasts have a very strong sense of territory, and as soon as we enter their territory, they will not hesitate to attack us.”

Zhou Weiqing smiled and said confidently: “You do not have to worry about that part, I have it all planned out. Haven't you always wanted to know why it is so easily for me to Store Skills in my Elemental Jewels? Let me tell you the reason now. The black pearl that I swallowed should be the Neidan of a huge winged black tiger, and this black tiger's aura seems to cause most creatures to feel fear, and Heavenly Beasts are no different. My Skills were all Stored from Zong Stage Heavenly Beasts, and are all mostly

Control-type Skills. However, during the Skill Storing process, none of them actually resisted at all. Although it can be said that it is also due to the fact that they have all been sealed, but it is clear that the aura from my body has definitely affected them in a large way. If we meet any Heavenly Beasts, as long as we do not attack them first, they should leave us alone once they sense the aura emitting from me.”

“Furthermore, the reason why I chose the route is basically because it is on the relative edges of the forested hills. In general, the stronger the Heavenly Beast, the more it will prefer to have its territory in a central position. As such, we shouldn’t meet any overly strong Heavenly Beasts. As for meeting with Shi Stage Heavenly Beasts, even if my plan doesn’t work, with our speed, it should not be too difficult for us to just escape. With this as a double insurance, I have deemed that this should be our safest route of retreat.”

Shangguan Bing’er nodded, looking convinced, and said: “Alright, let’s follow your plan.” In the darkness of the night, she did not realise that the red bloodlust in Zhou Weiqing’s eyes was getting stronger. Even Zhou Weiqing himself did not realise that his emotions were starting to get increasingly affected by this sense of bloodlust.

Great strength was often accompanied by great risk. Just like the great risk that accompanied the Immortal Deity Technique when breaking through Death Acupuncture Points, the black pearl’s side effects were slowly showing themselves upon Zhou Weiqing.

A short while later, the duo had recovered their Heavenly Energy

to their maximum capacity, and Zhou Weiqing gave Shangguan Bing'er a predesignated hand signal as he stealthily moved ahead.

The Kalise Empire Army Camp's main entrance was rather wide, almost 40 metres wide, ensuring that if there was any large scale military movement, the troops would be able to leave the camp easily. To both sides of gates, there each stood a 20 metre tall watchtower, while the borders of the camp were surrounded by many bright lamps, flickering in the wind, illuminating the entire camp. On each of the watchtowers, there stood an archer sentry posted to keep guard at night. As long as they spotted anything untoward, they could ring the gongs at the top of the watchtowers to sound off the alarm and alert the patrolling soldiers for quick response.

At this point, Shangguan Bing'er was hidden about 500 yards from the Kalise Empire's main camp. Her right hand's little finger and ring finger were grasping an arrow, while in between her index finger and ring finger was another. Her Purple Dawn Bow was drawn slowly with the arrow between her index and ring fingers nocked, ready and aiming towards the one of the Watchtowers in the distance.

Zhou Weiqing was steadily closing in on the Kalise Empire campsite, and he was gradually running out of cover to hide behind. In that instance, Shangguan Bing'er's Purple Dawn Bow moved.

"Swoosh* Swoosh Two sounds softly rang out, and two arrows shot out almost right after the other. When shooting forth these two arrows, she had used a rather ingenious little trick, using a

slightly varying strength when shooting both arrows, with the second arrow having a little more strength than the first. By doing so, both arrows actually struck their targets at the same time. To ensure a one hit kill at such a distance, Shangguan Bing'er had used her Wind Attribute Heavenly Energy to boost the power of the shots.

Puff Puff Another two light sounds rang out. Even at such a range, both arrows slammed into the heads of the sentries, one directly hitting the Taiyang Acupuncture Point and piercing through, while the other struck right smack in the mouth and piercing through into the brain. Although the explosive power of the Wind Attribute was not very strong, but to a soft target like the brains, it was still extremely terrifying. Without much sound, their bodies crumpled to the ground of the watchtowers.

As this was happening, Zhou Weiqing also burst forth instantaneously, circulating his Heavenly Energy to the max. The distance of 300 yards was cleared in five bounds, and seizing the opportunity that there weren't any patrols about, his right leg slammed onto the ground. With the formidable strength of his right foot, he was able to leap up five metres, jumping over the fence of the entrance, and he leapt his way up one of the watchtowers like a leopard.

In the distance, Shangguan Bing'er's heart was in her throat as she nocked another arrow to her drawn bow, ready to support Zhou Weiqing at any time.

The plan was a success. When Zhou Weiqing ascended the watchtower, he still had not been discovered by any enemies. He

felt like his heart was racing, the palpitations quickly increasing as his excitement grew.

Including the two archers on the watchtower, they had already killed 36 people this night, and were just 60 away from their goal of revenge. Zhou Weiqing took a deep breath as he looked down from the watchtower deeper into the camp. Due to the lights from the lanterns, he was able to get a good look of it with such a panoramic view.

The Kalise Empire Camp and the Heavenly Bow Empire camps were actually rather similar; with Heavy Infantry being 10 men to a tent, while the light infantry were 30 people to a tent. Zhou Weiqing did not have any particular fixed target, and after some careful observation, he found a target to lock on.

He had after all just joined the army not long ago, and he was not very familiar with the situation in military camps. Furthermore, due to the limitation on the amount of Heavenly Energy he had, he only had one chance to strike before he had to withdraw. After all, he had to retain enough Heavenly Energy to beat a retreat. As such, his choice of target was one of the largest tents. That tent was actually almost a whole kilometer away from the watchtower he was in, but it was brilliantly illuminated and was actually being patrolled by an entire company of soldiers, and was obviously a very important place.

That's it. Zhou Weiqing lifted his right hand, and the sole Icy Jade Physical Jewel around his right wrist shone forth brightly, as he released his Overlord Bow quickly. At the same time, the attribute wheel in his eye revolved to the blue region, and

immediately above his left hand sparked out a rich electrical light.

Amongst all of Zhou Weiqing's Stored Skills, among the six attributes, he only had a single attack skill, and it was of the lightning attribute...

It's a sign?

It's in the genes!

BOOK 4 – DEMONIC CHANGE

Chapter 22 – Sharing Life and Death (1)

As the Overlord Bow formed amidst a cloud of icy mist, Zhou Weiqing shifted it to his left hand, his arm holding steady as he lifted it up. At that time, the rose coloured Alexandrite Cat's Eye around his left wrist could clearly be seen to be surrounded by bright crackling blue electricity.

As Zhou Weiqing focused his will, the Alexandrite Cat's Eye Jewel quietly moved and slid into the socket on the Overlord Bow. Instantly, the misty white bow turned into a brilliant blue, even down to the bowstring. Zhou Weiqing felt a sense of numbness in his body as if he were being given a minor electric shock, as bolts of electricity crackled around his wrist, and flowing towards the body of the bow in a brilliant light.

“Who's there?!” A sudden loud shout came from below, followed by hurried footsteps from the distance heading towards the watchtower.

Now that Zhou Weiqing was standing high up on the watchtower to have a good view, it also meant that others would be able to spot him easily. Normally, the dark of the night would be sufficient cover for him. However, now that he was preparing to use his Elemental and Physical Jewel Fusion Technique, causing the Overlord Bow to glow so brightly, how could he not be seen?

Taking in a deep breath, with the four energy whirlpools at his Death Acupuncture Points spinning at full speed, he slowly drew back the extremely tough bowstring of the Overlord Bow. The Stars Wood body of the arrow he was nocking at this point was

actually affected, and turned into a piercing blue colour.

As Zhou Weiqing drew the Overlord Bow, he felt as though his entire body had a strong suction force on his surroundings. The force seemed to draw in the Lightning energy from the surroundings, and the sheer destructive force of it seemed to be a primed explosive ready to blow up at any second.

The patrolling soldiers were now charging over. Alas for them, there weren't any archers amongst the patrolling soldiers, and they could only climb up the watchtower as fast as they could.

The Overlord Bow stretched to its limit, its bright light reflecting and contrasting with the moonlight and starlight in the skies. Shangguan Bing'er could see everything clearly from the distance, and with Zhou Weiqing perched vulnerably atop the watchtower, she did not stay idle. Shooting forth arrow after arrow from a long distance, she was picking off the soldiers individually as they attempted to climb up the watchtower to get to him.

Clang Clang Clang The piercing sound of an alarm gong rang out, and the entire Kalise Empire camp was instantly roused up, this campsite of several tens of thousands of soldiers riled up in a mess due to just Zhou Weiqing alone.

Right at that moment, an immense roar that shook everyone's soul rang out suddenly. The entire sky was filled with a immense bolt of blue lightning, so very clear in the pitch black night. Like a descending meteor, the blue lightning bolt flew right straight into the midst of the Kalise Empire Camp.

Zhou Weiqing did not even look at the results of his strike, as he swiftly shot three more ordinary arrows to pick off the climbing soldiers, then with his right foot stamping hard onto the watchtower floor, he launched himself into the air.

BANG—— The explosion that rang out first was from the bolt of blue lightning. Although the target was a kilometer away, the power and speed of the arrow shot from the Overlord Bow was just too terrifying.

In the ensuing violent blast, the large tent a kilometer away which Zhou Weiqing had targeted instantly exploded with a deafening sound. If one were to observe from above, the tent's explosion causing a ring of blue light to spread out from the ground zero of the explosion. Flames sprang forth and screams and cries were heard.

It was quickly followed by four smaller explosions, three of which were caused by the latter three arrows Zhou Weiqing fired. He did not even bother aiming, and just shot them into where there were more soldiers massed. With the explosive effect of the Overlord Bow, even though Zhou Weiqing did not make use of any Elemental Jewel skills, the arrows were still extremely deadly, exploding right in the midst of all the incoming Kalise soldiers and causing at least ten or so casualties per strike.

As for the last rumbling sound, it was actually due to Zhou Weiqing destroying the watchtower. The floor of the top part of the watchtower actually disintegrated as he stomped hard onto it, while he made use of the opposing force to launch himself away.

By this time, Shangguan Bing'er had already stood up in the distance, the Purple Dawn Bow in her hands launching out arrows unceasingly, wielding the Rapid Fire skill to its maximum possibility. In that short amount of time, she had shot forth more than 30 arrows, single-handedly suppressing the soldiers from chasing Zhou Weiqing.

“Let's go!” Zhou Weiqing charged forth and signaled to Shangguan Bing'er. Both of them immediately turned and fled at top speed, not even looking back.

At this moment, ten figures flew ahead from the Kalise Army, and one of them could be heard shouting: “The granary is burning! Xiao Ye Ye, go and organize a team to put out the fires and save as much as you can! The rest of you, follow me. We must not allow them to escape!”

The person who spoke was naturally the 9th Prince of the Kalise Empire, Bai Jiu, and the ten other figures were the other Jewel Masters in the camp. No one could possibly be in a good mood after being awakened from deep sleep suddenly, not to mention being startled awake in fear. Bai Jiu's tent was rather close to the large tent that was Zhou Weiqing's target, and the immense explosion had not only given him such a huge shock that he was awakened, but he had even wet his pants. As a result, he was angered so much that his face turned pale, and he had quickly changed his pants and rushed out, leading the Jewel Masters to give chase crazily.

“Little Fatty, what was that skill you used just now? Why was there such a massive effect?” Shangguan Bing'er asked curiously as

they ran along in retreat. Even though she was so far away, the immense explosion had given her a shock.

Zhou Weiqing grinned and said: “Heh, I have successfully completed Storing all the Skills for my first Elemental Jewel. Remember that arrow which saved your life? That was using the Darkness Skill, named ‘Touch of Darkness’, and you have already seen how it is compatible with the Overlord Bow’s fusion technique.”

“The one that I used today is the only attacking skill I have, and I managed to get it from a Zong Stage Heavenly Beast that I do not know the name of, and was found in the last door which have various unknown or mutated Heavenly Beast. The skill name is called ‘Lightning Explosive Palm’, and is originally a strong melee skill. However, when used together with the Overlord Bow, it actually has an impressive change. Just think, the ‘Lightning Explosive Palm’ has a strong explosive effect of its own coupled with the lightning attribute. The explosive effect of my Overlord Bow compounds it, and with this double explosive effect, how can it not have a huge explosion?

“Alas, with the limited Heavenly Energy that I have, I can only use a single fusion technique no matter which skill I use. If not, I would repeatedly fire skills and wreak havoc on them.”

Listening to his words, a cold thrill ran through Shangguan Bing’er’s heart. She knew that if she fought with Zhou Weiqing in a one versus one battle now, he would likely lose to her. After all, she had a huge advantage in terms of amount of Heavenly Energy, and also had the boost of an additional set of Heavenly Jewels.

However, she could just imagine once Zhou Weiqing cultivated more and got sufficient energy to sustain all his skills, that would be extremely terrifying. With the advantage he had from having multiple elemental attributes, he did not even need to cooperate with anyone, and could just do so himself by combining skills with synergy.

Chapter 22 – Sharing Life and Death (2)

Zhou Weiqing grinned and said: “Heh, isn’t that awesome! I named the two fusion skills too. ‘[Overlord Binding Arrow](#)’ and ‘Overlord Lightning Explosive Arrow’.”

Shangguan Bing’er said curiously: “What are your other skills then?”

Zhou Weiqing said: “I was unable to find an Evil Alignment Heavenly Beast to Store Skills, but it seems like my Elemental Jewel somehow came originally with the Evil Alignment Skill Stored within already. As for Wind Attribute, I have Stored the ‘Fetters of Wind’ Skill, and for the Spatial Attribute, it is the ‘Blink’ Skill.”

“Fetters of Wind?! Blink?!” Shangguan Bing’er cried out in surprise. The two skill names were like extremely famous and she had definitely heard of them before. After all, they were high quality skills that could only be obtained from Zong Stage Heavenly Beasts! One was a Control Type Skill, while the other was an extremely formidable life saving skill. These high quality skills were extremely hard to store, and in general only Zong Level Jewel Masters would be able to even try.

Adding on to that those Skills she hadn’t even heard of, like the ‘Touch of Darkness’, ‘Lightning Explosive Palm’, down to the unknown Evil Attribute Skill. Perhaps because Zhou Weiqing was only at the first set of Jewels, his strength was not obvious yet. However, the more he cultivated, the more those skills would grow and evolve together with him. In the future, when he reached the

Zong Level and got his 6th set of Heavenly Jewels...

As she thought up to this point, there was only one phrase left in Shangguan Bing'er's mind to describe him: Absolutely Terrifying.

“Little Fatty, you shouldn't have told me. To us Heavenly Jewel Masters, our Elemental Jewel Skills are our greatest secrets. Furthermore, your skills are all so strong. I'm sorry, I shouldn't have asked.” Shangguan Bing'er said apologetically.

Zhou Weiqing laughed and said: “Keeping a secret is against outsiders. Why would I need to keep secrets from you?” Just as he finished his sentence, he suddenly grabbed Shangguan Bing'er, and pounced onto her, dropping them both to the ground. Because of the sheer sudden motion, both of them rolled for a distance. In that instance when he pounced onto her, a Silent Arrow flew past right where they had been and disappeared into the darkness.

“It's that fellow again. Zhou Weiqing immediately identified the attacker. No matter archery skills or cultivation level, this person was higher than them. That Silent Arrow was really just so hateful.

By the time he had jumped off from the watchtowers earlier, he only had about 20% of his Heavenly Energy remaining. Even with the energy whirlpools at his four Death Acupuncture Points spinning at top speed, he had only recovered a little, and was still far from being able to use his Overlord Bow.

As Shangguan Bing'er rolled on the ground, she had already released her Consolidated Equipment the Silent Tracking Arrow.

As soon as she stabilized, she drew the Purple Dawn Bow and let loose, sending the Silent Tracking Arrow forth into the distance.

To the two of them, what posed the greatest threat was the Silent Arrow of Bai Jiu. Although some of the other Kalise Jewel Masters might actually be stronger than Bai Jiu, in terms of speed they could not compare to him. Not only was his firing rate extremely quick, the Silent Arrow was even deadlier in the dark of the night. With his harassment, Zhou Weiqing and Shangguan Bing'er were unable to flee at their maximum speed.

Shangguan Bing'er's Silent Tracking Arrow flew in a straight beeline towards Bai Jiu. However, Bai Jiu just reacted calmly, the fourth Jewel on his wrist shining forth with a sudden brilliance, a pale green round shield which seemed rather light appeared in front of him. With a loud clanging sound, it blocked the Silent Tracking Arrow.

The ten or so Jewel Masters who had followed Bai Jiu in pursuing them were mostly 3 to 4 Jewelled, but there were two 5-Jewelled Jewel Masters. Alas, the two 5-Jewelled Jewel Masters were not agility or speed based, although they were strong, but they were still not in range yet. Only 5 Speed/Agility based Jewel Masters were still able to keep up with Bai Jiu at this point.

Shangguan Bing'er did not hesitate at all; after firing her arrow, she started running once again together with Zhou Weiqing, constantly making use of the trees and the brush around as cover.

Bai Jiu kept close pursuit. Ignoring everything else, just the fact that he had been scared into pissing his pants was stoking the

flames of his rage. That was just too humiliating. Even though he had wet his bed til 10 years old, but hadn't he not done so for 10 years? If he didn't take revenge, how could he call himself a man? Furthermore, he had instantly recognized Shanggang Bing'er, and knew this was a great opportunity for them to kill her. Unfortunately, his teacher had not arrived yet, otherwise...

Just comparing speeds alone, Shangguan Bing'er was a dual agility Heavenly Jewel Master, while Zhou Weiqing had his mysterious Demonic Right Leg. Both of their speeds could be considered extremely impressive. However, the problem was that their cultivation level was just too low, with a single set and two sets of Heavenly Jewels respectively, with Shangguan Bing'er's Heavenly Energy only at the 8th level Heavenly Jing Stage.

On the other hand, for those who were chasing them, even if their speed boosts were lower, but they had the advantage of having a higher cultivation level, as they had at least broken through the Heavenly Shen Energy stage. With such additional boosts, their speed was no lower than Zhou Weiqing or Shangguan Bing'er.

As the chase continued, arrows were exchanged constantly. Although Shangguan Bing'er and Zhou Weiqing managed to occasionally retaliate with some arrows, the 3-4 Jewelled Jewel Masters basically all had life-saving skills. Despite succeeding in injuring some, but it was mostly minor injuries, and Bai Jiu continued leading the chase on, and were in fact slowly gaining ground.

The only relatively good news for the pair was that Zhou

Weiqing's Heavenly Energy had mostly recovered. When he ran, most of his speed burst came from the Demonic Right Leg, thus allowing him to save a lot of Heavenly Energy. Coupled with the insane regeneration rate of the Immortal Deity Technique, he had already regained another 70% of his Heavenly Energy in just the hour they had been fleeing.

Right at this moment, right ahead of them at a relatively close distance, a low roar suddenly sounded out. A pair of ghostly green eyes appeared in their vision.

Shangguan Bing'er cried out in startlement: "It's a Forest Direwolf! They are one of the most dangerous and troublesome amongst all the Shi Stage Heavenly Beasts. Although their individual strength are not very strong, but they run in packs. Meeting them now, this is going to be a problem."

"Climb a tree!" Zhou Weiqing made a snap decision. Wolves generally did not have the ability to climb trees, and when facing them, climbing up a tree was generally the best choice. Of course, these Forest Direwolves were Heavenly Beasts, and you couldn't always judge them by the abilities of normal wolves.

"Wuuuuuu ——" A loud wolf's howl sounded out, and whizzing sounds appeared all around. In that moment of chaos, no one could tell how many Forest Direwolves appeared all of a sudden, charging forth and gathering to this point.

These Forest Direwolves did not all charge forth brainlessly. It seemed as if they had prepared for this and knew how to coordinate; some were charging in from the front, while others

flanking from the side. They did not just surround Zhou Weiqing and Shangguan Bing'er, but also the 6 enemies who were chasing them from behind.

“F***!” Bai Jiu couldn't help but curse in repressed anger and despair. “Hurry up! We have to finish them off before the direwolves completely surround us! Remember, do not attack those damn direwolves! If any of them are injured, they will never give up hunting us to the death.” Although chasing and kill Shangguan Bing'er was important, but how could it compare to his own life! Bai Jiu immediately turned and ran.

Decided to chose a 'tamer' name in the end

Chapter 22 – Sharing Life and Death (3)

Naturally, Zhou Weiqing and Shangguan Bing'er did not have the time to care about the fate of the Kalise Jewel Masters. The Forest Direwolves had successfully cut off their escape route, and the two of them were now trapped in the large tree they had climbed.

Zhou Weiqing drew his Purple Dawn Bow and was about to test the defence of one of the Forest Direwolves, but was quickly stopped by Shangguan Bing'er. "No! Don't shoot them. These Forest Direwolves are very good at holding grudges. As long as you injure or kill one of their own kind, then we will be in deep trouble. Wait a while, perhaps they might give up and leave."

Right at this point, below their tree, there were many Forest Direwolves gathered and milling around. Zhou Weiqing was also finally able to see their features in the moonlight.

These Forest Direwolves' bodies were around 1.5 metres long, and were entirely greenish grey in colour. Their pair of ghostly green eyes were particularly prominent, but the most obvious trait was the collar of green fur standing up on its back. Their movements were extremely fast, and they were currently jumping around at the bottom of the tree. However, they were also very organised; besides few which had broken off to chase Bai Jiu and the rest of the Kalise Jewel Masters, there were still at least a hundred of the Forest Direwolves gathered around the tree.

Zhou Weiqing came up with a quick idea, and started circulating his Heavenly Energy slowly into his right leg, and instantly he felt the explosive power gather in his leg. Without looking, he knew

that the black tattoos would definitely be back on his leg.

He was very clear that the aura of the black pearl would have a restraining effect on Heavenly Beasts. Unfortunately, he had no idea how to control the aura, and the only way he could currently think of was to make use of the black tattoos that appeared once he circulated his Heavenly Energy into his Demonic Right Leg.

Zhou Weiqing's test was rather successful; when his Heavenly Energy circulated to his right leg, an invisible aura extended out. All of a sudden, the direwolves below which had been restlessly moving around suddenly froze and started moving backwards, whimpering, their glowing green eyes showing they were on their guard.

Zhou Weiqing beamed and said: "Yes, it worked! When these bastard wolves retreat, we can head back through the small path."

Right at this moment, a sudden resonant wolf howl rang out, and in a flash of green light, it seemed as if the whole forest was lit up.

It was an extremely huge Forest Direwolf with a body of almost 3 metres in length. The strangest thing was its fur, which wasn't greenish grey like the ordinary direwolves, but a very bright green, as if its huge body was entirely carved out of jade. Its pair of cold eyes glowed with a dim red light, and it was covered in a shimmering green aura.

Zhou Weiqing and Shanguan Bing'er exchanged helpless looks: "This wouldn't be a Direwolf King right?"

Shangguan Bing'er's gorgeous face turned pale: "It really is a Direwolf King! Gods! It is a Zun Stage Heavenly Beast. Not to mention us, even 4 or 5-Jewelled Jewel Masters would have problems dealing with it!"

"Wuuuu——" Another loud howl issued out as the Direwolf King looked atop the tree, a anxious and doubtful expression on its face. It could sense the menacing aura from Zhou Weiqing. However, it did not have any sign of retreating, instead taking several careful steps forward.

Zhou Weiqing was after all still young and inexperienced, and he had made an error in judgement. The main reason why he dared to bring Shangguan Bing'er to brave the forests where the Heavenly Beasts lived was the courage brought to him by the Zong Stage Heavenly Beasts' submission when he was Storing Skills. In his mind, if even Zong Stage Heavenly Beasts were afraid of the aura he emitted, how could there be any issues with entering the forest?

Alas, things would not be as simple as he had imagined. Indeed, those Zong Stage Heavenly Beasts had submitted to him when he was Storing Skills, and did not resist at all. He had guessed correctly that it was mainly due to the aura he emitted, but what he did not factor in was that they were all not only sealed, but also extremely weakened. In such a weakened state coupled with being sealed, the aura from the black pearl that Zhou Weiqing emitted indeed held a rather unique power that frightened them. All of that combined to cause them to fear him, bringing the unique scene of their submission to Zhou Weiqing and allowing him to succeed in Skill Storing.

However, the Direwolf King in front of them was very different. Although it was only at the Zun Stage, it was definitely the Lord of this section of the jungle. Though the aura from Zhou Weiqing was terrifying, but it still didn't feel overbearingly strong. An ordinary Forest Direwolf would have retreated from fear, but as a Direwolf King, its pride would not allow it to just retreat like that. At least, not without Zhou Weiqing proving he had the strength that was worthy of its fear.

As the Direwolf King howled out loud, the hundred or so Forest Direwolves which had been backing away stopped doing so, resuming their encircling positions around the tree where Zhou Weiqing and Shangguan Bing'er were.

Women are usually timid by nature, and Shangguan Bing'er subconsciously clutched Zhou Weiqing's hands. "Little Fatty, what do we do now?"

The expression on Zhou Weiqing's face was very ugly now; he was the one who had come up with the idea, and brought Shangguan Bing'er here as a changed escape route. In fact, even the whole idea of the night's sneak attack was his plan. There was no such thing as a medicine for curing regret, and he could tell that the Forest Direwolves were about to launch their attack.

At this moment, the memory of his father rose up in his mind, telling him sternly: "Men cannot be afraid of committing mistakes. But once you do so, you must face up to your mistake bravely, and take responsibility."

Turning his head to look at Shangguan Bing'er, he saw her frightened look and the despair in her eyes. Reaching out with his left hand, he softly wrapped her in his arms, embracing her and kissing her rather cold forehead softly.

“I’m sorry, Bing’er. This is all my fault. No matter what, I will ensure your safety. I will cause a distraction and draw their attention, you run from the side and head down the path, and you should reach back to the main path in around 10 li.”

“Little Fatty, you...” Shangguan Bing'er's vision blurred. Was this really the Zhou Little Fatty who feared death so much?

Zhou Weiqing smiled faintly, taking off the quiver, taking out the arrows within and placing them in Shangguan Bing'er's quiver. He then took off his Purple Dawn Bow and hung it on a branch.

Looking at his gentle but firm actions, the look in Shangguan Bing'er's eyes began to change gradually. She did not try to stop him, and just watched him silently. However, in that instance, her heart had already affirmed him; this was her man. No matter how or why the danger had come about, but when it came, this man who was usually so afraid of death was willing to sacrifice his own life for hers. That was enough, truly enough.

In that very instance, the Direwolf King howled once again, and green light emitted from all the various Forest Direwolves, joining together and coalescing together. As Wind Aligned Heavenly Beasts, though these common Forest Direwolves were just at an ordinary Shi Stage, they all had the basic Wind Blades skill. With at least a hundred of these Forest Direwolves using Wind Blades at

the same time, without question, the huge tree which Zhou Weiqing and Shangguan Bing'er was perched on would soon be shredded into pieces.

Chapter 22 – Sharing Life and Death (4)

“I might be afraid of death, but I will still protect my woman. When men die, their ‘bird’ has to be facing the sky, otherwise, they will live in shame for a long time. I’ll fight to the end!” Zhou Weiqing’s foot tapped upon the tree branch and his whole body pounced downwards. He definitely would not allow the Forest Direwolves to destroy the large tree where Shangguan Bing’er was hiding.

As his body leapt forth from the large tree, the Alexandrite Cat’s Eye on his left write shone forth with a deep black as his attribute wheel spun to the black area.

The ‘Touch of Darkness’ instantly spread out, the tentacles reaching out towards the Forest Direwolves below, as he circulated his Heavenly Energy to the maximum, putting forth his aura to its full range...

The Forest Direwolves which had been gathering their power together were instantly scattered around in a mess. With the exception of the Direwolf King, all of them were frightened by the sudden increase in aura, the aura of the King of Beasts.

12 black lights flashed out, almost instantly finding 12 Forest Direwolves close by. With an almost plaintive howl, they were quickly bound by the strong control effect of the Touch of Darkness, and brought together.

At almost the same time, Zhou Weiqing came descending from

above, his right leg lifted up high and slamming down with all his considerable might.

With a Puff sound, three of the twelve bound Forest Direwolves were struck by his sweeping leg. Instantly, their supposedly tough bodies split apart just like a watermelon, and blood spurted out everywhere, covering Zhou Weiqing all over.

Feeling the stench of fresh blood, the red in Zhou Weiqing's eyes thickened as bloodlust overtook him. His confidence rose, and with a flash of his body, he had spun to the side. He needed to charge forth as far as he could with all his effort and lure all the Forest Direwolves away, to allow Shangguan Bing'er some breathing room. As she had mentioned earlier, as long as he injured or killed these Forest Direwolves, they would seek revenge upon him til either side was dead. Since that is so, come on!

With Zhou Weiqing's current level of power, unless he used his Overlord Bow, it should be hard for him to actually kill these Forest Direwolves in a one versus one fight. However, the strength of his Demonic Right Leg was just too overpowering, and he actually managed to kill three in one single blow.

Just as Zhou Weiqing landed his blow, a cold light shot down from the tree. With a loud swoosh, it drilled right through the eye of one of the bound Forest Direwolves. A pained cry ensued, as it struggled in its death throes.

“You fool! What are you doing?!” Although Zhou Weiqing was in the midst of running, with his powerful senses, how could he possibly miss that arrow? How could she shoot an arrow at this

time?! She should have waited for him to draw away these damn direwolves before making her escape!

Shangguan Bing'er did not reply him. At this time, she could only feel the warmth on her forehead that Zhou Weiqing had left behind.

You foolish Little Fatty, even you who are so afraid of death, have the courage to charge into the direwolves to save my life. How could I possibly abandon you and run off on my own? If we must die today, then let's die together. Since you were willing to sacrifice yourself for me, I will not feel wronged to die together with you.

With such a feeling fortifying her heart, Shangguan Bing'er was no longer afraid. Every arrow she shot out was infused with Wind Attribute Heavenly Energy, and her Purple Dawn Bow fired repeatedly like lightning, and in a blink of an eye, she had slain five of the bound Forest Direwolves.

It was normally very difficult for an archer to hit these Forest Direwolves, as they were Wind Attribute Heavenly Beasts known for their speed. However, with the bindings from the Touch of Darkness, it was much easier, and within that short period of time, the duo had actually finished off eight.

At this moment, the Direwolf King suddenly moved, and over thirty of the Forest Direwolves also spat out the Wind Blades they had been charging, aimed towards the large tree where Shangguan Bing'er was.

In the direction where Zhou Weiqing had leapt towards, the ordinary Forest Direwolves subconsciously retreated due to the aura from him. However, right in that instant, Zhou Weiqing felt a blur in front of him, and the huge Direwolf King appeared all of a sudden just 10 yards ahead of him; that speed was even faster than Shanguan Bing'er when she was using her Wind Wielding Boots!

This Direwolf King's intelligence was rather high, and it was very wary about Zhou Weiqing's aura as well as his Demonic Right Leg. As such, it chose not to move into close combat with Zhou Weiqing, and instead shot forth twelve green Wind Blade from its body, spreading out like a beautiful and deadly green flower, slicing forth at Zhou Weiqing from many different angles.

Dammit, twelve Wind Blades! Is this the power of a Zun Stage Heavenly Beast? An immense pressure fell upon Zhou Weiqing as the unbelievably quick Wind Blades swiftly reached him at the different angles, and it seemed like it was a hopeless situation for him!

The Direwolf King's Wind Blades were each about one metre long, and as they spread out in a fan shape, the sharp shrill sound of them slicing through the air was bone chilling. Zhou Weiqing had no doubts that these Wind Blades would be able to dismember him, and more.

The strength of having multiple-skills in his Alexandrite Cat's Eye showed itself at this point, and in a quick, silver flash, Zhou Weiqing vanished from his original position just as the twelve Wind Blades swept across the air where he had been standing. In

the next moment, he had not retreated but instead Blinked and appeared 3 yards closer to the Direwolf King. At the same time, he raised his left hand once again, and another green flash lit up as he activated his Fetters of Wind.

This could be said to be Zhou Weiqing going all out! Facing the threat of death, saving his Heavenly Energy was the last thing on his mind.

As expected, the Direwolf King's body froze, bound instantly by the Fetters of Wind. With a huge lunge, Zhou Weiqing closed the gap, his right leg striking out towards the Direwolf King's head.

Alas, just as his right leg was about to hit the Direwolf King, with a green flash it had dodged to the side, narrowly avoiding his leg.

The Fetters of Wind did not work? Zhou Weiqing was in shock. After all, amongst all his Skills, the Fetters of Wind was the strongest in terms of control ability.

In actual fact, the Fetters of Wind did not fail him, instead its duration had been shortened considerably. After all, the Direwolf King was a Wind Attribute Heavenly Beast itself, and had a very strong resistance against Wind Attribute Skills. Furthermore, Zhou Weiqing's true strength was not even on the same level as the Direwolf King. Even if it was considered one of the weakest of all the Zun Stage Heavenly Beasts, but it was still Zun Stage! Zhou Weiqing was merely a low level Shi Jewel Master, and their basic levels were just too far apart.

As such, his Fetters of Wind was only able to bind the Direwolf King for just a short period of time. No matter how powerful the Alexandrite Cat's Eye Elemental Jewel was, it was after all still Zhou Weiqing's first and only Jewel.

At the same time, on the other side of the battlefield, alongside the shrill cutting sound, the huge tree which Shangguan Bing'er had been on totally disintegrated.

In a green blur, Shangguan Bing'er had leapt forth at the last second, the Wind Wielding Boots already Consolidated on her feet, pushing her speed to its very maximum. While in midair, she managed to shoot forth another two more arrows. Alas, against the moving Forest Direwolves, they were able to better protect their weak points. Although she still managed to hit two of them, but it struck harmlessly off their bodies, their thick and resilient fur full of stopping power. Even with the strength of the Purple Dawn Bow, she only managed to deal minor injuries.

These Forest Direwolves were afraid of the aura from Zhou Weiqing, but they were definitely not afraid of Shangguan Bing'er. Instantly, a large number of Forest Direwolves sprang up and pounced towards her. As a result, she no longer had any more time and leeway to fire off anymore arrows, and could only depend on her Wind Wielding Boots mounted with one of her Elemental Jewels in order to constantly dodge, as she attempted to make her way towards Zhou Weiqing.

This was really quite a tough one to translate – basically a literal translation of 人死鸟朝天, 不死万万年. Basically it has the meaning of if you die facing the ground (running away), it's very shameful for a man/warrior. Also has a connotation of YOLO/ 'If it's yours, it's yours; if it isn't yours then it isn't yours, so just try anyway'

Chapter 23 – Demonic Change (1)

“Run quickly!” Zhou Weiqing shouted at Shangguan Bing’er in anger and anxiety. Alas, at this time, the Direwolf King once again released 12 Wind Blades to attack him.

Against this sort of multi-directional attack, with Zhou Weiqing’s current speed, there was no possibility that he could just dodge it. As such, he had no choice but to use another Blink to save himself.

Shangguan Bing’er ignored Zhou Weiqing’s shout once again. By now, she was about five yards from him, and with a wave of her left hand, three Wind Blades flew out and knocked back three of the Forest Direwolves. As her body blurred and flashed once again, she had arrived at Zhou Weiqing’s side. Speaking clearly and unhurriedly: “We... shall... share... life ...and... death... together.”

Zhou Weiqing was now nearing the end of his limits, he was after all only at the 4th level of Heavenly Energy, and although he had not been using his Overlord Bow, but repeated use of his skills had drained a huge amount of Heavenly Energy. However, upon hearing Shangguan Bing’er’s words, it was as if his blood started boiling.

It’s worth it, truly worth it. Even if I just have this one woman in my life, for that one time, but being able to die for her, it is worth it.

The Direwolf King’s eyes were cold and cruel. After the few times it had exchanged blows with Zhou Weiqing, it had already seized

up his true strength. Besides his right leg, that human was not of any other threat to it, and he would also not be able to sustain his Heavenly Energy much longer. As such, it had a plan to deal with Zhou Weiqing easily. and was not feeling any sense of urgency. It did not need to use any other skills, nor did it give Zhou Weiqing any chance to get near, and just sent forth another twelve Wind Blades. This time, it was even more cunning; instead of targeting Zhou Weiqing, it targeted Shangguan Bing'er.

No matter how good the Blink Skill was, it wouldn't allow him to bring someone along with him. At least, not at Zhou Weiqing's current power levels.

Looking at the twelve Wind Blades assailing her from all directions, blocking off all possible escape routes, Shangguan Bing'er closed her eyes in despair. She was resigned to a fate; at least she had managed to reach his side before she died.

"Damn it! You silly girl!" Zhou Weiqing swiftly lifted his right and swept across, blocking six of the Wind Blades, while leaping onto Shangguan Bing'er and pushing her to the ground.

The Wind Blades struck Zhou Weiqing's right leg, causing a string of Puff sounds, and his trousers leg was also shredded into pieces, revealing the leg inside with the black tiger tattoos.

The Demonic Right Leg was indeed tyrannical. Under such a flurry of attacks, it was still totally undamaged. Alas, that was only true for his right leg...

With the sweep of his leg and the leap, his right leg had been hit by six Wind Blades, and he had successfully dodged three, but the last three still hit solidly onto his body.

A grating scraping sound sounded out as they struck him, and Zhou Weiqing felt his back heat up, and the Titanium Alloy inner armour was torn into bits. Although Titanium Alloy was strong, the inner armour was rather thin, and the Magic Tenacious Snake was merely a Shi Stage Heavenly Beast, and its sinew was not able to withstand the power of the Wind Blades of the Direwolf King. Although it had blocked off most of the impact and offensive power of the Wind Blades from Zhou Weiqing, it had shattered in doing so.

With a muffled grunt, Zhou Weiqing almost spat out blood with the huge impact along with the strong cutting sensation on his back, as three deep lines of blood were marked on his back.

With a buzzing sound, Zhou Weiqing felt as if something had invaded his brain, the entire attribute wheel seemed to turn totally blood red, and the Heavenly Energy in his Dantian seemed to rush out explosively. An incomparably cruel, evil mood seemed to strike him, causing him to experience all sorts of negative feelings.

Shangguan Bing'er was pressed down to the ground by Zhou Weiqing, and also gave out a muffled grunt as the air was knocked out of her. Subconsciously, she opened her eyes again, only to see that Zhou Weiqing's eyes, which had turned totally bloodshot again, with an even deeper red than the night he had taken her. An incomparably cold aura exploded forth from him suddenly, that freezing cold, evil feeling making her tremble.

As a breath of hot air blasted onto Shangguan Bing'er's face, and there was a tremor in her heart. All of a sudden, Zhou Weiqing's right hand slammed into the ground savagely, just right in front of her face.

With a dull Peng sound, the ground caved in about three feet down, causing Shangguan Bing'er to tumble down along with it, though she was not actually injured at all. Zhou Weiqing, on the other hand, used the impact from him striking the ground to vault up and leap away.

Zhou Weiqing's body tumbled crosswise, and in the process, his clothes were totally shredded, his entire body's bones crackling with a strange explosion sound, while his muscles grew and expanded very obviously, his entire skin surface covered completely by the fierce black tiger tattoo. The most terrifying thing was that at this moment, those tattoos were acting like they were alive, unceasingly moving and wriggling around on his skin.

Zhou Weiqing's Heavenly Jewels around both his wrists also seemed to go through a change, the Ice Jade becoming a lot clearer and transparent as it whirled around his wrist. The Alexandrite Cat's Eye on the other wrist also went through a similar change; its original bright rose red color became brighter and fresher, as if it were dripping blood, while the originally bright sparkle surrounding it had turned into a grey light.

His body tumbling for three revolutions in midair, Zhou Weiqing finally fell to the ground in a loud crash, landing hard on his hands and left foot to support his entire body, while his right leg was

lifted up high in the sky. It could clearly be seen that his whole right leg was now completely black, a thick grey air swirling around it. His whole head of short black hair had also turned grey, and his bloodshot eyes just looked so terrifying.

“Demonic – Change – !” The words suddenly presented themselves in Shangguan Bing'er's heart. At this very moment, her entire heart clenched tightly in sudden fear. Without a doubt, Zhou Weiqing's current appearance was very similar to that of the Demonic Change of legend. To her knowledge, there were two possible situations for the Demonic Change to occur.

The first was when a Heavenly Jewel Master with the Evil Attribute received an intense external stimulation, causing them to go through a temporary Demonic Change. During the Demonic Change, the Heavenly Jewel Master would go berserk, gaining a huge boost in strength but at the cost of sanity and presence of mind, going around in mindless slaughter until nothing around was left alive. This situation, while it sounded bad, was actually relatively better. This was because after this bout of slaughter, the Heavenly Jewel Master would actually regain control of his mind, although he would be weakened for a period of time.

Alas, the second situation was much more terrifying and detrimental to the Heavenly Jewel Master. It was an irreversible Demonic change. This type of Demonic Change had a very low probability of happening, but once it appeared, only the word 'disaster' could describe it.

When the Heavenly Jewel Master went through the irreversible Demonic Change, his entire body would be completely turned into

a demon, until he was no longer human. The process of going berserk and kill hungry would last forever, indulging in slaughter until he died, and such a change would also bring an even greater increase in strength and destructive power, almost up to several times that of the other Demonic Change. This was also why in the past, all of the Skill-Storing Palaces of the various large countries in the entire Boundless Mainland had joined forces to hunt down all of the Evil Attribute Heavenly Jewel Masters.

Chapter 23 – Demonic Change (2)

Without a doubt, having faced a life threatening situation, adding on the bloodlust he had been influenced with throughout the night, Zhou Weiqing had somehow entered the Demonic Change. At this point, Shangguan Bing'er's mind was entirely blank. She knew that no matter what happened, the final outcome for her would not change. Whether Zhou Little Fatty in his Demonic Change state could kill off all the Forest Direwolves or the Forest Direwolves overcoming him, the final result would also lead to her death. Having lost control of his own state of mind, Zhou Little Fatty would end up killing her. However, she still hoped that he could win, at least dying at his hands would be better as compared to becoming the food of the Forest Direwolves.

Crouching down on the ground, Zhou Weiqing's body repeatedly released layer upon layer of the grey air currents. If his previous aura caused the Forest Direwolves to just feel some fear, then at this point in time, besides the Direwolf King, all of the ordinary Forest Direwolves were all lying down on the ground, having lost even the courage to stand up after feeling the aura.

The Direwolf King gave out hurried and rapid howls repeatedly, but its fellow direwolves did not react at all, not paying any attention to its as they cowered.

The Direwolf King was also trembling, was that really a human in front of it? The aura it was giving forth was something that not even the king of beasts was able to compare!

Under the stress of both anger and fear, the Direwolf King gave

an enraged roar, as it lifted its two front claws, the green light surrounding it doubled in power, painting the surrounding forests in an emerald hue. As its front claws struck towards the front, a shade which looked exactly like a duplicate of itself soared towards Zhou Weiqing.

This was the Direwolf King's strongest skill, and it was called 'Shattering Heavens Wolf Clone', and was known as one of the strongest Wind Attribute Skills amongst the first six Jewels. It had the sheer cutting force tantamount to that of a tornado, and was not just unbelievably quick, but also able to lock onto a target within 50 yards, and would continue attacking the target until death.

At this moment, a low roar resounded from Zhou Weiqing, sounding deep and rumbling, just like a tiger's roar. The grey air around his body seemed to spread outwards, and the Forest Direwolves cowering on the ground actually foamed at the mouth and flopped down unconscious, some even letting lose excrement and urine in their fear.

Zhou Weiqing moved once again, his right leg which was lifted up high behind him swept the ground suddenly, his entire body shooting forth horizontally like a bolt of black lightning, dodging past the 'Shattering Heavens Wolf Clone's direct charge, and with a midair flip, he appeared above two Forest Direwolves. As he stretched out both his hands and pressed upon their heads, and with two cracking sounds, the Forest Direwolves' skulls were smashed apart.

Wolves were known for their tough heads and soft waists, in

general the hardest part of their whole bodies was actually their heads, but under Zhou Weiqing's hands, which were now fully covered by the evil looking tiger tattoos, the two Forest Direwolves' skulls actually caved in so easily.

Zhou Weiqing did not pause a second, as his body dipped down, once again barely dodging the pursuit from the 'Shattering Heavens Wolf Clone'. Moving at an incomparable speed, with seemingly perfect coordination and balance, the most frightening thing was his pair of ice-cold bloodshot eyes, like a demon lord of eternity.

Something strange occurred then, when Zhou Weiqing sprang up from the corpses of the two Forest Direwolves, two green lights simultaneously floated out from the heads of the two Forest Direwolves, and Zhou Weiqing gaped his mouth open and the two green lights were swallowed by him. Immediately after, he brandished his right leg and struck the 'Shattering Heavens Wolf Clone'.

As the jet black right leg drew back in a hook, an explosion rang out, as the 'Shattering Heavens Wolf Clone' broke apart in mid air, scattering Wind Attribute Heavenly Energy in all directions in a succession of soft sounds. Some of it landed on Zhou Weiqing's body, causing dozens of small bloody wounds.

But, once again, another terrifying sight appeared, as the lacerations and wounds on Zhou Weiqing's body just started healing themselves at an astonishing rate unexpectedly. However, he did not launch an attack on the Direwolf King, instead dodging to the side and once again smashing two Forest Direwolves. As the

Forest Direwolves did not put up any resistances, killing them was as easy as breaking open a watermelon. Furthermore, every time he killed a Forest Direwolf, another green light would appear and be absorbed by him. Whenever that happened, the black-grey light surrounding Zhou Weiqing's body would grow stronger.

If Zhou Weiqing were in his right senses currently, he would have discovered that his attribute wheel was now set in that mysterious evil grey area. The Skill he was using now was the Skill that had somehow come originally with his Heavenly Jewel, that he had never been able to use previously. The Skill was Devour.

This was a Skill from the black pearl, and could be said to be a technique inherited. This was the reason why his Evil Attribute did not need to go through Skill-Storing previously.

The Zhou Weiqing who was now in his Demonic Change, was actually still the original Zhou Weiqing, though his power and senses were several times that of his normal state. More frighteningly, his Demonic Change seemed to be different from any other ordinary Evil Attribute Heavenly Jewel Master's Demonic Change, not only did he indulge in slaughter, but it also allowed him to improve and strengthen himself at the same time.

When he had gone into the Demonic Change state, he had almost finished up all the Heavenly Energy in his body, even if he had been strengthened by the Demonic Change, it was definitely insufficient to support all his slaughtering. As a result, he did not attack the Direwolf King, instead constantly killing the ordinary Forest Direwolves, Devouring their Wind Attribute Heavenly Energy to strengthen himself.

That was exactly how he broke the ‘Shattering Heavens Wolf Clone’ with a single strike – he had swallowed the two Forest Direwolves’ Wind Attribute Heavenly Energy, coupled with the Demonic Right Leg’s power in order to do so.

In the Demonic Change state, Zhou Weiqing was not only able to use the Evil Devour Skill to Devour energy, but was even able to Devour his enemy’s life force. This was the reason why his injuries suddenly started healing so rapidly.

Almost in an instant, several more Forest Direwolves died in Zhou Weiqing’s hands, his aura also gradually becoming more terrifying.

The Direwolf King did not continue attacking Zhou Weiqing any further, its bright green eyes stubbornly staring steadily at him. However, its body was actually slowly retreating step by step, as Zhou Weiqing’s terrifying aura was making it hard for the Direwolf King to even think of fighting back. If not for its unwillingness to give up its subordinate direwolves, it would probably already have fled.

The Direwolf King gave out long and loud howls unceasingly, trying to communicate with Zhou Weiqing. Unfortunately, in such a state of Demonic Change, how could Zhou Weiqing possibly communicate?

When the 20th Forest Direwolf was killed by Zhou Weiqing, and he had swallowed the enemy’s energy, Zhou Weiqing’s body

suddenly fell to the ground with a loud thump, and he suddenly raised his head fiercely, a deafening tiger's roar resounding from his mouth.

Chapter 23 – Demonic Change (3)

In the distance, Bai Jiu, who had managed to break out of the tight encirclement with much difficulty, heard the loud, dignified tiger's roar. Trembling in fear, he almost let loose and urinated in his pants again. "Luckily we ran away quickly, that tiger's roar was clearly of a Zong Stage Heavenly Beast! That Shangguan Bing'er must have died. What a pity, such an attractive little girl."

As the tiger's roar resounded throughout the forested hills, in an instant, all the Forest Direwolves cowering on the ground started shivering fiercely, and as beam after beam of green light emitted from the living Forest Direwolves' mouths, similar to multiple rivers flowing into the sea as they gathered to Zhou Weiqing's side, before being swallowed by him. The thick black-grey aura surrounding Zhou Weiqing grew stronger, causing his bones to give off a popping noise once again. Alas for those Forest Direwolves that gave up their Wind Attribute Heavenly Energy completely in tribute, fell down onto the ground dead.

In the world of Heavenly Beasts, this ability was known as Tribute. The Forest Direwolves had been unable to withstand the intense pressure and stress from Zhou Weiqing's tiger roar, and their minds collapsed completely, offered their precious energy as tribute and perishing as a result.

When Zhou Weiqing issued that huge roar, the Direwolf King's four limbs weakened, and without any further hesitation, it turned around to flee. Alas, it was too late for escape. Having just Devoured about a hundred Forest Direwolves' energies, how could Zhou Weiqing just let it go so easily?

In the deep darkness of the night, there was no sign of any brilliance. Without any warning, the Direwolf King suddenly felt something tighten around its body, as all twelve tentacles of a Touch of Darkness Skill enveloped it.

Even under the Demonic Change state, it was impossible for a single-Jewelled ranking Zhou Weiqing to restrain and control such a high level Zun Stage Heavenly Beast, but it was just sufficient to prevent it from running away.

The Direwolf King went all out in struggling, trying to break free from the tentacles holding it. In a short while, it actually succeeded in breaking free, but by the time it had done so, in that very moment when it got loose, a pair of bloodshot eyes appeared in front of it.

Another Fetters of Wind skill fell upon the Direwolf King. After having just Devoured so much Wind Attribute Heavenly Energy, the total amount of Heavenly Energy in Zhou Weiqing's body was almost more than that of the Direwolf King! Although he was still only able to use skills of the first Jewel rank and power, it was evidently enough currently.

The Direwolf King had just broken free of the Touch of Darkness when its body tightened up again, and its motion once again stiffened. This time, before it could break free of the Fetters of Wind again, Zhou Weiqing's right palm smashed viciously onto its head.

The crackle and sparkle of electricity shone in the air, as Zhou Weiqing evoked the Lightning Explosive Palm.

With a huge explosion, the Direwolf King cried out pitifully as its entire body flip-flopped and crackled with noise, a layer of blue bolts of electricity snaking around it.

This Direwolf King was indeed worthy of being a Zun Stage Heavenly beast, although it feared the aura emitted from Zhou Weiqing, but to kill it was definitely not an easy feat to accomplish.

After taking on the full blow of Zhou Weiqing's highest damage skill, the Lightning Explosive Palm, the Direwolf King was only paralyzed temporarily, as well as being a little dazed. If it were in normal conditions, even in the Demonic Change state, Zhou Weiqing would not be able to kill this Zun Stage Heavenly Beast.

However, Zhou Weiqing actually had that bizarre right leg, and right after he had struck out with the Lightning Explosive Palm, his Demonic Right Leg had lifted up high, just like a great black executioner's axe ready to fall down.

In the process of slamming down, Zhou Weiqing did not make use of the heel or the sole to cut downward, instead using the tip of the foot, which on his foot was similar to the black scorpion hook from the tiger's tail.

With a light Puff sound, the tip of Zhou Weiqing's right foot slammed right into the Direwolf King's skull forcefully, slicing right through it viciously, causing a burst of red light as blood

exploded out. At the same time, Zhou Weiqing's body vaulted backwards, both his hands braced on the floor as he lunged away to the side. His right foot was thus pulled out from the Direwolf King's skull bones, along with it followed a similar bright green light to the ordinary Forest Direwolves, though much more solidified and coherent. As the green light was also Devoured by Zhou Weiqing, the Direwolf King's body slumped down onto the ground.

At last, Zhou Weiqing's body crumpled to the ground as well, and this time, he did not make any more noise. It was not known whether it was because he had Devoured too much wind Alignment Heavenly Energy, causing the black-grey aura surrounding his body to have a tinge of light green colour.

Just several minutes ago, this is a place with a sea of direwolves, yet just in a matter of minutes, it was just a mess of blood. Including the Direwolf King, all of the Forest Direwolves had been totally wiped out.

Shangguan Bing'er stood up shakily, staring blankly at the scene in front of her, her soul still trembling. Zhou Weiqing in his Demonic Change state was indeed so terrifying. In truth, the power that he had used the whole time was not very strong, but the overbearing aura surrounding him caused the ordinary Forest Direwolves to lose the ability to fight back. In the end, he had also relied on continuous use of Control Skills and the power of the Demonic Right Leg to kill off the Direwolf King. He had indeed achieved the impossible.

Although she did not know about Zhou Weiqing's Evil Attribute

Skill Devour, she could actually see that Zhou Weiqing had been relying on the ordinary Forest Direwolves' power to restore and reenergise oneself, if not it would have been simply impossible to kill that Zun Stage Direwolf King. How did he achieve such a feat? Why was he able to make use of the Heavenly Beasts' strength after killing them?

As Shangguan Bing'er stood there transfixed to the ground, staring dully at the scene before her, all of a sudden, a flash of bloody light appeared, and a pair of dazzling yet monstrously bloodshot eyes appeared in front of her, a jet black hand grasping hold of her.

This is the end... The thought floated in Shangguan Bing'er's mind as she closed both her eyes. At least dying in his hand is better than becoming wolf food.

However, the expected pain did not arrive in the next instant, instead Shangguan Bing'er felt her body tighten, as her whole body was enveloped in a broad, solid, warm, yet evil, cruel and blood-filled embrace. The somewhat overuse of strength made her whole body ache, and the heavy breathing was loud and constant in her ears, but she did not make any move to resist.

After a short moment of being dazed, Shangguan Bing'er recovered her senses. Wait... He hasn't killed me? He actually didn't kill me? How is this possible? He was clearly in the Demonic Change State a moment ago! How else could he have possibly killed off all those Forest Direwolves?

Her face was plastered to his chest, and she could feel that his

chest was icy cold, with an eerie chill constantly flooding into her, that cruel and evil aura still thick and flowing around him unceasingly.

Opening her eyes, Shangguan Bing'er saw that the evil looking black tiger tattoos on Zhou Weiqing's body were still fluctuating and moving, but at the same time, they were actually slowly fading away.

His Demonic Change is weakening and wearing off? Could it be... because of my presence?

This discovery made Shangguan Bing'er overjoyed, and she subconsciously lifted both her arms, ignoring the pain that was being caused to her by his tight grip, and embraced him back with his waist in her arms. In a firm and crisp voice, she spoke unhurriedly and clearly:

“Little Fatty... Wake... up... Come back...”

“Little Fatty... Wake... up... Come back...”

She kept repeating those words unceasingly, hugging him with all her might, using her body to keep him warm.

Chapter 23 – Demonic Change (4)

As the heavy breathing gradually returned to normal, Zhou Weiqing's body also started to get warmer, and the arms embracing Shangguan Bing'er also began to relax a little, as his grip lessened.

All of a sudden, Shangguan Bing'er froze. She felt something hard... large... and erect... pressing into her lower abdomen, even twitching a little.

After a short bout of surprise, Shangguan Bing'er realised what it was, but she dared not move, as she did not know if Zhou Little Fatty was still in the clutches of the Demonic Change, or if he had broken free yet.

Her body started to heat up gradually, both her arms which were embracing Zhou Weiqing were starting to shiver.

She was a little afraid, afraid that a sudden bestial nature would overtake him once again, that evening she had lost herself for the first time was forever etched in her mind and she couldn't help but ask herself. What would I do if that happened again? What can I do? At present, Shangguan Bing'er found that regarding this question, she herself simply did not have any ready answer.

What Shangguan Bing'er could not see was that Zhou Weiqing was at this time blinking his eyes rapidly, a very strange look on his face.

In truth, when Zhou Weiqing fell into the Demonic Change State, he had lost control of his mind for only a very short period of time. During that period, whatever that was happening outside had actually been imprinted into his mind as well, but when he started the slaughter of the Forest Direwolves, he had actually awakened somewhat. However, at that point, he was still unable to control his own body, and could only watch himself unceasingly indulge in slaughter and Devouring.

He could only observe the attribute wheel sparkling in its grey area continuously; on one hand he was trying to comprehend the mysteries of the Evil Attribute, while on the other hand he was diligently trying to regain control of his own body.

It was only at the point when he dealt the finishing blow and killed off the Direwolf King, and his body flew back horizontally, when he had finally recaptured some measure of control over his own body from that instinct of endless slaughter. Without hesitation, he had thrown towards Shangguan Bing'er, grabbing hold of her, and using her tourmaline aura and the link she had with him to aid him in resuming complete control of his body quickly.

As such, Zhou Weiqing had actually woken up into a clear state of mind for quite a while, and since Shangguan Bing'er had started to hug him unceasingly in order to help, their bodies were tightly pressed together and with much friction between them, how could he not have a reaction! At this time he could only feel the lower part of his body rubbing against Shangguan Bing'er's smooth and soft lower abdomen unceasingly, such a pleasant sensation it was causing him to feel, a feeling like he couldn't 'control himself'. Alas, at this time, this little rascal couldn't bear to give up the

beautiful maiden in his arms, such an opportunity to embrace each other was definitely a rare one!

As Zhou Weiqing struggled with his inner conflict, all of a sudden, his body shivered violently, and he could feel the previously tranquil Heavenly Energy in his body suddenly explode forth like a volcano. The black-grey aura surrounding his body vanished, but the green lights were becoming stronger and more powerful, and the restlessly moving Heavenly Energy ignited in his body, causing him to feel as if his internal organs were being twisted all over the place.

With a “Waah” sound, Zhou Weiqing vomited out a whole mouthful blood, as his ‘little brother’ subsided rapidly, he quickly loosen his hold around Shangguan Bing’er, falling back and down, sitting on the ground.

“Little Fatty, how are you?” Shangguan Bing’er was naturally extremely surprised, he seemed better just a moment ago, yet now this was happening... Was it a side effect from the Demonic Change?

Zhou Weiqing quickly waved to Shangguan Bing’er, saying: “I need to breakthrough the next Death Acupuncture Point.” After he said those words with great difficulty, he immediately closed his eyes and sank into deep concentration.

It was very obvious that the sudden change in his body was the result of him having Devoured so much Wind Attribute Heavenly Energy from the Forest Direwolves. Although his own Heavenly Energy also contained the Wind Attribute, but he was a human,

and unlike Heavenly Beasts, even if he had the black pearl's power to back him up, having Devoured so much of the Wind Attribute Heavenly Energy, it was not something that his present Dantian could withstand. Previously, due to the Demonic Change, the huge amount of Heavenly Energy was suppressed, and was even able to forcibly make use of it as his own. Alas, now that the Demonic Change had ended, he immediately started having problems suppressing this sheer power.

The Wind Attribute Heavenly Energy Devoured externally, and Zhou Weiqing own Heavenly Energy were rather incompatible, and although the four energy whirlpools for his open Death Acupuncture Points were spinning at top speed to integrate the external Heavenly Energies unceasingly, but it was much too slow and definitely not sufficient to tide him through this dangerous period now. The only solution he had now was to make use of this external power to break through a Death Acupuncture Point; if he succeeded, the situation would naturally can be solved.

The Devour Skill that the black pearl had given Zhou Weiqing seemed to be only targeted towards Heavenly Beasts in this world, and did not work on humans. This was the reason why previously when Zhou Weiqing had issued forth the immense tiger's roar, Shangguan Bing'er was not affected. However, Devour had its other limits as well, the stronger he was, the ability and capacity to support more Devoured energy would grow as well. Alas, Zhou Weiqing's present strength was just too weak, but when he was under the Demonic Change State, he was being controlled by the instinct and need for slaughter, and naturally went about recklessly Devouring external Energy. At this point, his body contained too much excessive Wind Attribute Heavenly Energy, and if he did not deal with it promptly, many problems would occur, and in a worst case scenario, he could even implode

internally and die from the excess energies.

“I’ll keep watch for you.” When Shangguan Bing’er heard that Zhou Weiqing needed to break through his next Death Acupuncture Point, she unhesitatingly vaulted up and stood behind him. At this moment, what Zhou Weiqing needed most was her support, as he would no longer be able to defend himself if any other Heavenly Beasts came.

Focusing his will, Zhou Weiqing controlled the restless Wind Attribute Heavenly Energy and merging it with his own Heavenly Energy to circulate and move at crazy speeds towards his lower limbs. Presently, his own Heavenly Energy had risen by a substantial amount after exiting from the Demonic Change, and was obviously transformed from all the Wind Attribute Heavenly Energy he had Devoured. Alas, the current problem was he had Devoured too much Wind Attribute Heavenly Energy, and if he did not deal with it, they would revolt.

Zhou Weiqing’s personal Heavenly Energy was actually very pure, but the various Forest Direwolves’ Wind Attribute Heavenly Energy was rather mixed and different. After all, each different Forest Direwolf had a different cultivation level, and having all the dozens of different energies mixing together, especially that final bout Devoured from the Direwolf King, these energies had been running amok in his body, making him feel miserable beyond words.

As he circulated the Heavenly Energy downwards, Zhou Weiqing could feel as though the meridian passages in his thigh area were being split apart, and in a split second, the mixed Heavenly Energy

had rushed towards his Zhu San Li Death Acupuncture Point. As the Zhu San Li Death Acupuncture Point whirled with the circulated Energies, Zhou Weiqing swiftly followed the Immortal Deity Technique to manipulate both bouts of Heavenly Energy continuously downwards.

The human body was indeed something of mystery and beauty. The same Cultivation Technique being practiced by a different person could produce a possibly vastly different results. Furthermore, it could be said that this Immortal Deity Technique was somewhat a one-of-a-kind Technique, thus he was only able to attempt it by himself.

It seemed that Lady Luck was on his side, and as the mixed Wind Attribute Heavenly Energy charge through the Zhu San Li Death Acupuncture Point, the energy whirlpool revolving cyclone revolving sped up to three times its previous peak speed. As the mixed Energies overran the Point, it was as if they had gone through a filter, coming out obviously in a purer state.

Chapter 23 – Demonic Change (5)

The surface of Zhou Weiqing's skin seemed to 'bubble', as it let loose a thin layer of green gas from the pores, obviously the impurities being discharged after the filtration of the mixed Energies.

After crossing the Zhu San Li Death Acupuncture Point, the relatively purer energies rushed towards the San Yin Jiao Death Acupuncture Point. A similar situation appeared once again, and the immense pressure on Zhou Weiqing's body was relieved somewhat, making him feel a lot more comfortable after the mixed Wind Attribute Heavenly Energies had been filtered twice. Alas, the total amount and power was just too huge, and the amount absorbed by the two large Death Acupuncture Point energy whirlpools was only a very small portion.

Gritting his teeth, Zhou Weiqing focused his will with all his might, using his original Heavenly Energy to stimulate and lead the mixed Heavenly Energy directly towards the Yongquan Death Acupuncture Point. At this point, he just wanted to break through the Yongquan Death Acupuncture Point, making use of that to once again filter the remaining mixed Heavenly Energy. If he failed, he would have to try to reverse the flow and attempt to absorb all the mixed Wind Attribute Heavenly Energy slowly.

Bang! The vast amounts of Heavenly Energy smashed savagely into the Yongquan Acupuncture Point. Alas, with a marked difference from the ease of the first time Zhou Weiqing tried to break through his Clavicle Acupuncture Point, the breaking through of the Yongquan Death Acupuncture Point encountered an unexpected immense resistance and was extremely difficult.

An indescribable pain lanced through both his feet, Zhou Weiqing felt a large amount of blood rush backward along his legs, and once again he spat out a large mouthful of blood. This time, blood seeped out from the pores of his skin, covering his entire body.

The backlash this time was just too fierce, the Yongquan Acupuncture Point had barely forced open a little, and Zhou Weiqing did not know what problems would arise if he actually forced it open with brute force. Alas, like an arrow knocked on a bow which had to be released, he was already at the point of no return now.

Once more! Zhou Weiqing steeled his nerve and ruthlessly focused himself again. With a deep breath, he once took control of the mixed Heavenly Energy, which had become wilder after that first burst, and viciously slammed down in a second attempt of breaking through the Yongquan Death Acupuncture Point.

Bang! This time, Zhou Weiqing almost leapt up from the ground, as a cloud of blood spurted out from his pores once again, from the feet all the way up to the thighs, every inch of his flesh seemed to be covered with blood; it was as if his legs' meridians had been completely ruptured.

Zhou Weiqing felt as though the soles on both his feet had been opened up with a huge hole respectively, and a large amount of Heavenly Energy was gushing out, the acute pain filling his entire body, reminding him of period of time when he was breaking through his first Death Acupuncture Point, the Clavicle

Acupuncture Point, but this time it was actually a lot more serious and severe.

“Not good!” Shangguan Bing'er cried out in alarm, and without any other considerations, she swiftly moved and arrived beside Zhou Weiqing in a quick flash. When Zhou Weiqing started his attempted breakthrough, she had already known that his target was the sole's Yongquan Death Acupuncture Point. Both her hands gathered Heavenly Energy, and she placed them onto Zhou Weiqing's Yongquan Acupuncture Points respectively, trying to help him seal up the shattered Death Acupuncture Point.

When her palm came into contact with his sole, that very instant, Shangguan Bing'er's entire body convulsed, and she immediately felt two bouts of rich and pure Wind Attribute Heavenly Energy flow from Zhou Weiqing's Yongquan Acupuncture Point, flooding into her body. She attempted to prevent it, but the two bouts of Heavenly Energy had seemed to lock onto her body, and she was unable to do anything. The Heavenly Energy crashed into her body, right into her meridians.

Shangguan Bing'er gave a muffled groan as her whole body shuddered, but she refused to give up, both hands holding onto Zhou Weiqing's foot with all her strength, unwilling to be shaken away by so easily.

It could be said both Zhou Weiqing and Shangguan Bing'er were suffering extreme pain, and at this moment, the black tiger tattoos which had subsided earlier reappeared once again on Zhou Weiqing's body.

The black word 'King' reappeared on his forehead once again, giving forth a dignified aura, and Zhou Weiqing's Yongquan Death Acupuncture Point on his right foot was once again sealed up instantaneously, forming an energy whirlpool almost immediately after. Although the process on the left leg was much slower, but it was clearly in the midst of healing up.

Feeling the change of Zhou Weiqing body, the Shangguan Bing'er gave a sigh of relief and relaxed. However, her body had just born the huge stress from the immense amount of Wind Attribute Heavenly Energy, and in addition to the previous exhaustion, darkness overcame her vision and she fainted.

As the left foot's Yongquan Death Acupuncture Point was gradually sealed up, Zhou Weiqing's pain also subsided like melting snow, but the mixed Heavenly Energy in his body was still moving around fiercely and restlessly. At this point, without any external stimulation, the revolution of the energy whirlpools at the four Death Acupuncture Point that had originally been broken through was going at top speed, quickly absorbing the wild mixed Heavenly Energy.

Finally, the left foot's Yongquan Death Acupuncture Point was also fully sealed, and as the energy whirlpool formed, an indescribably comfortable feeling spread all over Zhou Weiqing's body, into every corner possible.

With his fifth Death Acupuncture Point broken through, without a doubt, Zhou Weiqing's cultivation level had also entered the fifth level of Heavenly Jing Energy. Not only that, when the five energy whirlpools revolved simultaneously, Zhou Weiqing discovered that

the absorption of Heavenly Energy from the environment had actually doubled!

Having finally broken through the Yongquan Death Acupuncture Point also meant that Zhou Weiqing had finally completed the first section of the Immortal Deity Technique, all the five Death Acupuncture Points on his limbs. Currently, when the five energy whirlpools on the Five Death Acupuncture Points were revolving, he could feel the whirlpools expanding their reach and growing larger. If we were to liken the four Death Acupuncture Points energy whirlpools to the size of a pigeon's egg, then with five Death Acupuncture Points now, these energy whirlpools had expanded nearly unceasingly, and in just a short period of time, it had reached every corner of the body. In other words, just the ten energy whirlpools from the five Death Acupuncture Points would be able to reach every single point in his body.

Although the black tiger tattoos had not subsided yet, but from Zhou Weiqing's skin, rings of creamy white light was slowly combining and linking together with the tattoos, forming an invisible energy shield around his skin; this was actually a symbol that the first portion of the Immortal Deity Technique had been completed.

The Immortal Deity Technique was definitely a mysterious yet extremely abnormal cultivation method. From the speed of cultivation, it was definitely faster than any other Cultivation Technique in the world, but it should definitely not be as fast as what Zhou Weiqing had accomplished.

In just two months, Zhou Weiqing had actually successfully

broken through to this crucial fifth Death Acupuncture Point, which should have been totally impossible no matter what happened. However, under all the various unbelievable chances that had occurred, he had also Devoured a massive amount of Wind Attribute Heavenly Energy from outside, and needed the support of this fifth Death Acupuncture Point. As such, he had been stuck between a rock and a hard place, and had gone through the attempt in breaking through, and had even succeeded unexpectedly.

Although the present Zhou Weiqing was still only a single jeweled cultivation level, but having completed the first portion of the Immortal Deity Technique meant that he had truly taken the first step down this cultivation path, a road of no return. Of course, that also meant that he would also truly be able to obtain all the various extra advantages from the insanely strong Immortal Deity Technique. At the same time, the drawback would be that the following cultivation would be even more difficult.

As the five Death Acupuncture Points' energy whirlpools absorbed Heavenly Energy from the environment unceasingly, Zhou Weiqing did not even need to focus much on cultivation, and he found that his fifth level Heavenly Jing Energy was already completely filled.

Shangguan Bing'er, who was fainted at his feet, did not realise that at that point, a large portion of the Wind Attribute Heavenly Energy that had been filtered and purified by Zhou Weiqing's Immortal Deity Technique had actually been suffused into her body, and most of what Zhou Weiqing absorbed, was only the bit that came from the Direwolf King.

Although his Devour ability was extremely strong, but the Devoured energy had to be used up quickly, unless he was a lot stronger than the amount that had been absorbed, otherwise he would not be able to absorb much of the energy. Perhaps, this was the world's way of balancing the scales.

Chapter 24 – White Little Tiger (1)

After being unconscious for an unknown amount of time, Shangguan Bing'er finally woke up slowly. As she awoke, she felt something throbbing on her face.

In a dazed state from just awakening, she subconsciously batted the large rod aside, but who knew, it just rebounded back onto her face.

“En?”

“En——”

Two voices sounded out lightly at the same time, the first being Shangguan Bing'er's.

The next moment, as her consciousness began to awaken, she slowly opened her eyes. By now, dawn was breaking and the sky was being lit by the first glimmer of the sun. The first thing that entered her eyes was an ugly disgusting thing pressed against her little face. It was burning hot and throbbing, and was reddish pink on the tip.

“What is that thing? Shangguan Bing'er was still not very clear-headed at the moment, and as she muttered to herself, she slowly raised her head higher. What she saw was Zhou Little Fatty's wide open eyes and indescribable expression.

A chill ran down her spine, and Shangguan Bing'er quickly looked down again. This time, she was fully awake.

“Ahhhhh!”

“Ahhhhh!”

Once again two shrill shrieks rang out simultaneously, and the two who had been pressed tightly together suddenly flew apart like they had been shocked by lightning. Shangguan Bing'er flew upwards and away, while Zhou Weiqing rolled and scrambled behind a large tree.

It might sound like a coincidence, but in truth, Zhou Weiqing had been this way for quite a while. Last night, when he had entered the Demonic Change state, all of his normal clothes had been shredded away by the intense energy and his enlarged muscles. His remaining cover, the titanium alloy internal armor had then been destroyed by the Direwolf King. However, at that time, things had been so hectic, in addition to being in the night, and Zhou Weiqing's body being covered in the black tiger tattoos, thus making it not obvious. Furthermore, at that time, Shangguan Bing'er had been so worried about his survival as well as the Demonic Change's side effects, that she had not noticed anything amiss.

Last night, while Zhou Weiqing had been attempting to breakthrough his Yongquan Death Acupuncture Point, he had been sitting cross legged. In order to help him seal his Yongquan Death Acupuncture Point which had burst open, Shangguan Bing'er naturally had to be right in front of him, and when she fainted, she

fell right on top of him. Naturally, this had caused her to fall into that compromising position, resulting in the embarrassing scene just a moment ago.

Shangguan Bing'er's lovely face turned red and white, and she said angrily: "Zhou Little Fatty, come out here now!"

"No way." Zhou Weiqing stuck his head out, saying in an aggrieved tone: "Bing'er, I didn't do anything! You were the one who woke me up!"

It was just exactly because Zhou Weiqing did not do it on purpose, and everything had happened once again by coincidence, that caused Shangguan Bing'er to have all that bottled up anger with nowhere to go, and she glared at him.

Zhou Weiqing grinned and said: "Heh, Bing'er, shouldn't we head back quickly before discussing that? If you want to hit me, we should find a safer place first, then I'll let you hit me to your satisfaction."

Shangguan Bing'er started, looking around at the surroundings, and she instantly drew a sharp breath. All around, the ground was littered with direwolf corpses; the direwolves which had went chasing after Bai Jiu and the other Kalise Empire Jewel Masters were nowhere to be found. Perhaps they just had not returned, or were scared off by Zhou Weiqing's aura and dared not approach. As she thought of the breathtaking dangers of the night before, her anger and embarrassment began to subside; they had managed to survive after all.

“Alright, just come out, let’s get out of here first.” Shangguan Bing’er’s tone grew calmer.

Zhou Weiqing quickly looked around for several relatively larger pieces of cloth to surround his waist and cover his privates before coming out; though his buttocks were still half revealed, but at least the most embarrassing portions were covered.

Shangguan Bing’er stood there a little awkwardly, a blush on her face as she watched that rascal trying to cover himself, a strange light in her eyes. All along, she had known Zhou Little Fatty to be a person very afraid of them, you could even say that ‘Safety First’ was the motto he lived by. Yet, last night, when they were in danger, he did not hesitate to charge down the tree and attempt to draw away all the Forest Direwolves in order to save her. In the end, he had even used his own body as a shield to block the Direwolf King’s attack from finishing her off. Such an action from a person so afraid of death was extremely commendable, and had definitely touched her. No matter what, he was a real man, who dared to stand forward when his woman was in danger.

Cheh Cheh! When did I become his woman! Shangguan Bing’er shook her head and blushed, but her look at Zhou Weiqing softened, and she subconsciously touched her face where she had been touched just now, flushing an even deeper red.

With much difficulty, Zhou Weiqing finally found a few pieces of cloth to tie around his waist, and managed to cover himself relatively decently. Just as he was about to call out to Shangguan Bing’er to leave, he suddenly felt something furry brush against his

feet.

Looking down, Zhou Weiqing's gaze was transfixed. He saw a furry little thing, a full body of white with faint blue markings all over, with its body length less than one foot long, and it was rubbing against his left foot.

“What is this thing?” Zhou Weiqing bent down, grabbing the furry little creature and picking it up. “Bing'er, look, what is this?”

Picking up the furry little thing, Zhou Weiqing finally got a good look at it, realising that it was actually a little tiger cub!

It's round little head had the word 'King' grown in with deep blue fur, right smack in the centre. Although its white body lined with blue was rather small, but it definitely had the proportion and look of a tiger, except for its fur colour being extremely rare. Its large eyes were also a deep blue, and being grabbed by the scruff of its neck by Zhou Weiqing, it gave out several discontented meows.

“Wahhh! Such a cute little thing!” When Shangguan Bing'er saw the little tiger, her eyes lit up and she quickly walked over.

Zhou Weiqing blinked and said: “This little thing, could it be a Heavenly Beast? But, why is it so tiny? Is it a newborn?”

Shangguan Bing'er said: “I've never seen or heard of such a white little tiger, but I'm sure it should be a type of Heavenly Beast. Little

Fatty, you've really lucked out this time! A Heavenly Beast youngling can be raised, and when it grows older, it can help you fight, and even protect you. Furthermore, tigers are considered the king of beasts, even the weakest tiger-type Heavenly Beast have the possibility of reaching the Zun Stage. You really should take good care of it! Hmmm, but it's so small, how did it get here, where are its parents?"

On hearing that, Zhou Weiqing's expression changed. "Let's run, this little thing's parents might come looking for us once they discover that their child is missing, then we'd be in deep trouble!"

Shangguan Bing'er's heart was also struck by a sudden chill; although she did not know what type of Heavenly Beast this white little tiger was, but she could imagine how strong its parents were. Without hesitation, both of them picked up their Purple Dawn Bows and ran off at top speed back to the Heavenly Bow Empire's camp.

Chapter 24 – White Little Tiger (2)

They ran at full speed until they were out of the forested hills, before they heaved a simultaneous sigh of relief. At that time, Zhou Weiqing did not hesitate and held out the white little tiger to Shangguan Bing'er, saying: "Here, a gift for you."

"For me?" Shangguan Bing'er looked at Zhou Weiqing in surprise. "Little Fatty, don't you know the value of a youngling Heavenly Beast? Even a youngling of one of those Forest Direwolves that we just killed, each of them can be sold for more than a thousand gold pieces. This little white tiger of yours, I can't even imagine the price."

Zhou Weiqing said suavely: "That doesn't matter, I wouldn't be able to bear to give it to anyone else, but it's totally different for you."

Listening to him say that, Shangguan Bing'er blushed once again, but she did not reject him this time. She really did like this cute little white tiger, it was just too adorable, and she reached out for it.

However, a strange scene appeared; when the little white tiger saw that Zhou Weiqing was giving it away, it grew angry, its four little claws unsheathing as it bared its fangs at Shangguan Bing'er fiercely. Alas, it was just too small and cute for that, and the ferocity was just not convincing.

"Ehh, seems like it does not like me." Shangguan Bing'er said

curiously.

Zhou Weiqing also discovered the same thing; earlier when he had picked up the little white tiger, the little fellow had not put up any resistance at all. They both exchanged looks and Zhou Weiqing muttered: “Perhaps this little thing was attracted by the tiger’s roar I let out during my Demonic Change last night?”

Shangguan Bing’er said: “That’s very possible, why don’t you hug it and see.”

Zhou Weiqing followed suit and hugged the little tiger, and as expected, it stopped struggling, instead snuggling close to his chest and rubbing against it, stretching itself in a comfortable position and closing its eyes.

Zhou Weiqing stroked the little tiger’s back, playing with its fur as he felt amused in his heart. Of course, he really liked this little thing as well. In his eyes, there were two animals that he considered the most beautiful, one was horses, and the other was tigers. Horses’ beauty lay in their vigorous and healthy body and shape, while tigers’ beauty lay in their imperious aura, their beautiful lines and their grace and poise.

Although he had never touched a tiger’s fur before, he could still sense that the little thing was very special. Normally, no matter how gorgeous or colourful a tiger’s stripes were, its fur shouldn’t be this soft, yet caressing this little thing felt as if he was stroking a piece of silk, and was extremely comfortable. Furthermore, it felt so soft and pliable as if it were boneless; although it was still rather tiny, but no matter where he touched it, it felt soft and meaty.

Zhou Weiqing flipped the little tiger around in his embrace, and gave a strange laugh, saying: “Haha, it’s a little female tiger! Bing’er, look, these little protrusions, do you think they’ll be for feeding milk next time?”

Shangguan Bing’er flushed once again, knocking him hard on the head and said: “What’s your head filled with! You’re not allowed to bully it!”

The little white tiger was also very angry, as it cried out, struggling to turn around, and giving Zhou Weiqing’s hand a bite. However, it did not bite very hard, now even breaking his skin.

Zhou Weiqing laughed heartily, saying: “Look! It even knows how to be shy, such an interesting little fellow.”

Shangguan Bing’er said exasperatedly: “You better spend more time thinking of how you’re going to head back to the camp. Are you going to go back in this state?”

“Uhhh...” Zhou Weiqing scratched his head embarrassedly, then his eyes lit up as he thought of a plan.

When the two of them stealthily entered the camp, the Personal Aide Zhou Little Fatty was dressed in a common soldier’s attire, and a poor sentry of the Heavenly Bow Empire was stripped naked...

When they finally reached their tents, the two heaved a huge sigh of relief. Shangguan Bing'er looked at Zhou Weiqing with a complicated look in her eyes and said: "Little Fatty, thank you."

Zhou Weiqing paused for a while, finally sighed and said: "Bing'er, honestly speaking, you are very kindhearted by nature, and I do not think your nature is suitable for joining the army. A soldier needs to be cold and ruthless, and that's something your nature will not allow. I do think it's the right decision for you to resign as Battalion Commander, and perhaps to leave the army too."

Shangguan Bing'er looked a little dazed, and asked: "What about you?"

Zhou Weiqing immediately stuck out his chest and said proudly: "Of course I'll follow you!"

"Who wants you to follow me." Shangguan Bing'er muttered softly, but her gentle voice held a tinge of happiness. Her radiant beauty at that moment caused Zhou Weiqing to stare, transfixed.

"I feel like my Heavenly Energy is a little off, I'm heading back to my tent to cultivate. As for the future..." Shangguan Bing'er hesitated a little before continuing: "I'll wait for the orders from headquarters before deciding." After she said that, she disappeared in a flash, going back into her tent.

Zhou Weiqing grinned and headed back to his own tent feeling rather satisfied, hugging the little white tiger. In his heart, he was

thinking to himself: Looks like, this wife will not escape!

As he entered his tent, he prepared a basin of water and cleansed the dirt off his body. He couldn't help but look at his reflection in his water and said smugly: "Zhou Weiqing, you're really getting more and more handsome everything! Wahaha!"

He did not notice that the little white tiger which he had thrown at the side, had now very cutely lifted its two front paws, covering its eyes in a very human-like manner, even rolling its eyes at him.

.....

The place where the Forest Direwolves and the Direwolf King had died.

Two shadowy white figures appeared out of nowhere; they were two middle aged men, both dressed in white with a head of silver, blue eyes shining and a majestic aura surrounding them.

The white robed man on the left furrowed his eyebrow, asking in puzzlement: "Her Highness' aura stopped here, how is that possible?"

The man on the right looked at the surrounding corpses, his eyes filled with a thread of fear. "Could it be... these Heavenly Beasts killed Her Highness? If not for that, how could this be possible, with our Snow God Perception, we would definitely be able to sense her aura.

The white robed man on the left said solemnly: “Don’t make wild guesses. Even if Her Highness is weak during this period of her transformation, such weak Heavenly Beasts could never be able to injure her, let alone kill her. If Her Highness releases her aura, these Heavenly Beasts would have been literally scared to death. [Lao Er](#), check how these direwolves died.

“Alright.” After a short while, the man on the right returned after his checks, with surprise and doubt in his eyes as he said: “Such a strange, evil aura. These direwolves died around 8 hours ago, but the evil aura from the has not dissipated. The most terrifying thing is that there isn’t any of their Wind Attribute Heavenly Energy remaining in their bodies, as if they had been drained completely. A powerful Heavenly Beast must have came here, perhaps even a Heavenly Evil Beast. I understand now, Her Highness must be together with that Heavenly Evil Beast, and its aura is covering her aura, that’s why we aren’t able to detect it. Big bro, what do we do now?”

Literally means Old 2nd, usually an affectionate tone to call, like 2nd brother

Chapter 24 – White Little Tiger (3)

The man on the left heaved a deep sigh and said: “Her Highness is just too mischievous, even if she does not like the fact that His Majesty arranged her marriage, she didn’t need to run! Leaving the Heavenly Snow Mountain during this time of transformation, it’s just too dangerous! His Majesty just has one daughter, how can we go back like this?”

The man on the right said with a bitter smile: “What can we do then, Big Bro? Will His Majesty get angry with us?”

The man on the left gave a cold humph: “Stop talking nonsense! His Majesty is a great Heavenly Snow King, and he is wise and foresighted, how could he vent his anger on us. Let’s go, we should head back and report to His Majesty and get instructions. As he said that, he waved his hands and a white flash of light enveloped them.

When the bright light disappeared, the two shadowy figures disappeared, and the direwolf corpses turned into blocks of ice, and in the next instant, they all shattered into dust, leaving no trace.

.....

Zhou Weiqing washed his body clean, giving a lazy stretch butt naked in his tent, and he looked at a side and said exasperatedly: “Hmph, you’ve taken all the advantage, I haven’t even kissed Bing’er’s face! Hmph! Time to sleep.” After the long night of

excitement, although he had broken through and completed the first portion of the Immortal Deity Technique and replenished his Heavenly Energy, but he was still extremely exhausted, especially in spirit. As such, he jumped straight into bed right then in his birthday suit.

“You little thing, why are you covering your eyes huh? This young master has such a perfect body and figure, and you dare to ignore it?” As Zhou Weiqing jumped under the covers, he noticed the little white tiger lying beside the pillow with its little paws covering its eyes and was a little exasperated and incensed. Although he had somewhat reined in his rascally nature with Shangguan Bing’er, but in his own tent, he was unfettered alone in his own tent.

Pulling back the little white tiger’s paws, he threw the little fellow onto the bed and lay down upon it, pressing it down below him.

“Wuu wuu, wuu, wuu.” The little white tiger cried angrily, struggling as it tried to squeeze out from under him.

Zhou Weiqing moved around, rubbing against the little tiger as he said: “So soft and comfortable, stop squirming around. Being under this big brother of yours is your honour! When you are bigger, you can be my steed, riding a white tiger, that should be very awe inspiring heh heh.”

As he said that, he closed his eyes, and soon fell asleep.

After a while, the little white tiger finally managed to struggle its way out, shaking its cute little head angrily, its deep blue eyes filled with fury. It bared its teeth at Zhou Weiqing, but did not do anything, instead going back to that rascal's arms and snuggling up, before closing its eyes as well.

As Shangguan Bing'er, this half resigned Battalion Commander's Personal Aide, Zhou Weiqing was left undisturbed.

As for Xiao Ru Se, she had taken over the duties of Battalion Commander, added to the fact that all the new recruits had arrived, so she was extremely busy for the whole day.

It was only until the evening when Zhou Weiqing was awoken by hunger. As soon as he woke up, the little white tiger awoke as well, and as Zhou Weiqing dressed himself, it ran over to him and pawed at his pants with its little claws.

"You little thing, you're hungry as well right? Come, this big bro will bring you for some good food." As he said that, he grabbed the little white tiger and shoved it into his Squad Leader uniform before heading out.

Unless there were any urgent circumstances, there was usually plenty of food in the army camp, and Zhou Weiqing went to the mess and ate his fill with a huge meal. However, to his surprise, no matter what he tried to give the little white tiger hiding in his bosom, it refused to eat. Looking at its expression, it seemed to disdain the food he offered, even when Zhou Weiqing took a lot of trouble to get some meat soup for it, it still ignored it.

“Hmm, I didn’t expect that such a little thing like you would be so proud. Hmph! If you don’t want to eat it, then you can starve to death!”

When he returned back to his tent, Zhou Weiqing was about to throw the little white tiger onto the bed, but the little fellow absolutely refused to go, biting hard on his sleeve and insisting to stay in his arms.

“You little thing, you have the potential to become a warmer! Oh right, since you’re following me now, let me give you a name. Hmmm... let’s see, you’re so small, you don’t look like a tiger, more like a little cat, plus you’re so nice and round and meaty... I got it! Your name will be ‘Fat Cat’ from now on!

“Wuu wuu, wuu, wuu.” The little white tiger cried out in anger and unwillingness, its little claws scratching a white line onto Zhou Weiqing’s chest.

“Resistance is futile. If you scratch me again, I’ll spank your little bottom.” As he said that, Zhou Weiqing vulgarly pinched its little butt, saying smugly: “Fat Cat!”

The little white tiger turned its head around, ignoring him.

“Bro is calling you, how can you not answer! If you don’t answer... heh heh, then I’ll help examine your body! Heh!” As he said that, he flipped it around and pulled its little legs apart.”

“Wuu wuu, wuu, wuu.”

Zhou Weiqing said with an evil grin on his face: “Bro will give you another chance, Fat Cat!”

“Wuu...” The little white tiger was extremely aggrieved, and gave a sad cry in agreement.

“That’s more like it, this will be your name from now on! I’m going to cultivate now, don’t disturb me! You go ahead and sleep.”

As he said that, Zhou Weiqing flipped open his Immortal Deity Technique Manual.

He had already completed the first portion of the Immortal Deity Technique which consisted of breaking through the first five Death Acupuncture Points, and naturally needed to continue on cultivating this technique. As such, he flipped to the last page of the first portion.

“Ehh, what is this?” Zhou Weiqing exclaimed as he examined the last page once again, discovering a small line of words right at the bottom. Previously, he had mostly skimmed through the later pages and had not noticed it.

The words on the small line said: “If you are able to complete this first portion and break through your first five Death Acupuncture Points, place your palm on the page, and slowly bring forth your

Heavenly Energy from your Taiyuan Acupuncture Point.

What was that all about? Although Zhou Weiqing had doubts in his heart, but he still followed the instructions written.

The Taiyuan Acupuncture Point was between the wrist and palm, and Zhou Weiqing slowly sent forth the Heavenly Energy into the page made of goat leather. At first, he didn't feel anything happening, but soon he felt as if the goat leather page was moving under his hands, and he quickly moved his hands away. With a glance, he saw that the single page had actually separated into two pages! That was to say, in between the first and second portions of the Immortal Deity Technique,

As Zhou Weiqing quickly focused on reading the page, he found several paragraphs were written on it:

When the Death Acupuncture Points on the limbs are broken through, your five Acupuncture Points will be linked to the world, and you can communicate with the essence of heaven and earth, evolving your body. Once your body is remade, the five energy whirlpools will spread throughout your body and form a natural shield, protecting you from external forces, hidden under your skin. The name of the shield is the 'Immortal Deity Shield'.

Chapter 24 – White Little Tiger (4)

When I created this Technique, it was only after I broke through the fifth Death Acupuncture Point when I found out this amazing benefit. With this in mind, I conjectured that every portion of the Immortal Deity Technique will bring an additional evolving. If I am successful in breaking through to the second portion, I will also record it down. If not, may you, my successor, try it yourself.

The profound meaning of the Immortal Deity Technique is in its unceasing improvement. Even if you are not focusing on cultivation, the energy whirlpools will continue drawing in the energy from the atmosphere, as such, once you have started learning the Immortal Deity Technique, the only option is to continue breaking through the Death Acupuncture Points.

There is no necessity in controlling the Immortal Deity Shield, as it will automatically protect its user.

...

After reading the words on the goat leather page, Zhou Weiqing was in a daze as he stared into the air for a long time. Finally, he scolded out to himself. “[Damnit, I’ve boarded the pirate ship!](#) No wonder this bastard died while trying to break through the eleventh Death Acupuncture Point, he really deserved it. He’s really trying to get others in trouble, why didn’t he specify in the summary that once you’ve started on this technique, you can never stop? What damned Immortal Deity Shield... rubbish! He hadn’t even completed training his own technique, and yet left it behind to entrap someone else... what an as*hole!”

In truth, he had wronged the creator of the Immortal Deity Technique; after all, even though he did not explicitly state that you couldn't stop after starting this Technique, but he did mention that only someone who had the willpower and readiness to die could learn the technique.

In truth, Zhou Weiqing was very afraid. He knew in his heart that the real reason why he could successfully breakthrough the first five Death Acupuncture Points was not because of how talented he was or that he was a hidden genius; it was totally because of the black pearl that he had swallowed and its protection. However, only the gods would know how long more the black pearl could protect him; furthermore, he was also very afraid of the extreme pain caused every time he broke through a Death Acupuncture Point.

After venting his anger and fear in a bout of complaint, Zhou Weiqing decided to test out the Immortal Deity Shield's strength. He took up an arrow and carefully stabbed it down towards his arm. He didn't use a lot of strength at once, instead slowly increasing the amount of power. A miraculous sight appeared before him. At first, there wasn't an obvious feeling, but as he exerted more strength, he soon realised that the five energy whirlpools at his Death Acupuncture Points suddenly increased their speed, causing a layer of airflow to seemingly form just above his skin, and the arrow in his hands seemed to slide to the side due to this layer of air, and he didn't even feel a thing.

"Ehh, it does seem rather effective, although I wonder what's the extent of its protective capabilities." That night, he did not bother cultivating, and instead spent the whole night experimenting on

the Immortal Deity Shield's limits. After a night of testing, Zhou Weiqing found that its protective capabilities were indeed pretty strong, but it was inextricably linked to his Heavenly Energy. Basically, the stronger the attack it was blocking, the greater the drain on his Heavenly Energy, and there was also a certain limit on the attacks it was able to block, once it surpassed that threshold, the Immortal Deity Shield was only able to neutralize a portion of the damage, and this threshold was about a full third of his entire Heavenly Energy pool. Furthermore, he also found out that the Immortal Deity Shield would stop activating once his Heavenly Energy was drained to less than half its total amount.

After a whole night of experimentation, Zhou Weiqing finally sat down and muttered to himself in summary: "Dammit, why does everything need Heavenly Energy..." Still, despite his complaints, he was actually very satisfied with the results of his testing, and more importantly, he also discovered that with the completion of the first portion of the Immortal Deity Technique, the automatic replenishing of his Heavenly Energy via the five energy whirlpools was doubled that of his previous speed, and this would allow him to increase his continuous fighting capabilities.

"Little Fatty, Little Fatty!" It was barely dawn when Shangguan Bing'er's urgent voice rang out, and as the tent flap was flipped up, she entered the tent, but in the next instance, she was out again with a red face.

"Zhou Little Fatty! You exhibitionist! Wear some clothes!!" Shangguan Bing'er's voice was flustered and angry, but with a tinge of glee as well.

Zhou Weiqing felt so wronged, thinking to himself: Sleeping naked is my normal habit, how did I end up becoming an exhibitionist?

Quickly donning his clothes, he gave a lazy stretch and said: "I'm dressed, come in!" As he said that, he looked down and spotted the little white tiger sleeping soundly. The little fellow was hugging its little head with its front claws, and looked unbelievably adorable.

Zhou Weiqing grinned and smacked its butt.

"Aoo!" The little white tiger rolled around, startled awake, and as soon as he saw Zhou Weiqing's wicked grin, it understood what happened and cried out angrily at him again. Wuuu... Wuuu!

"Fat Cat, your little butt feels quite good! But no lazing around. Come on." He grabbed it and hugged it into his arms. Strangely, as soon as the little white tiger entered his arms, it immediately quieted down. When Shangguan Bing'er entered the tent again, her face was still blushing, and she looked extremely enchanting.

"Stupid Little Fatty, are you bullying the poor thing again?" Shangguan Bing'er said exasperatedly. Before Zhou Weiqing could reply, the little white tiger in his arms nodded to Shangguan Bing'er, its large eyes seemed to have tears in it, causing her heart to melt.

"Come, let big sister hug." Shangguan Bing'er got closer and tried to hug it, but no matter what, the little white tiger refused, biting onto Zhou Weiqing's shirt and refusing to leave his embrace.

Shangguan Bing'er was rather nettled: "You little thing, he's bullying you yet you insist on letting him hug you."

"Wuu Wuu." The little white tiger glanced at Shangguan Bing'er again, then buried its head into Zhou Weiqing's arms again.

Zhou Weiqing said smugly: "Heh heh, Bing'er, see that! This young master's charm works on both humans and animals."

Shangguan Bing'er gave him an exasperated humph; she really did like this adorable little white tiger, alas it didn't give her the time of the day, and there was nothing she could do about it.

Suddenly recalling the reason she came in, Shangguan Bing'er jumped with joy and said: "Oh Little Fatty, my cultivation level increased!"

Zhou Weiqing immediately said: "Wow, that's great! You're indeed our Heavenly Bow Empire's top young genius lady, only the top genius suave fellow like me can be a perfect match to you!"

Shangguan Bing'er lifted up her hands and pinched his cheeks, saying: "Your skin is so thick!" After pinching him, she suddenly realised how intimate her actions were, and she blushed and quickly let go. Who knew that the rascal moved closer with his other cheek, saying: "Bing'er, how about this side, it needs some balance!"

“Cheh, stop playing around, I’m being serious here. My Heavenly Energy went from the eighth level to the tenth level after last night.” Shangguan Bing’er’s next line gave Zhou Weiqing a huge shock, and he stared at her in surprise and said: “Two levels at once? Bing’er, you’re not a genius, you’re a monster talent!”

Shangguan Bing’er shook her head and said: “It’s all due to you actually. That night, when I was trying to help you seal your Yongquan Acupuncture Point, a large amount of Wind Attribute Heavenly Energy invaded my body, causing me to fall unconscious. When I came back and started cultivating, it was only then that I discovered my Heavenly Energy raised by so much. Although it is still rather unstable, but I am certain that my cultivation level has already broken through to the tenth level. Little Fatty, that’s the power of your Devour Skill right.

Zhou Weiqing gave a bitter smile and said: “Don’t mention that skill... it’s not easy to use at all. That night, I Devoured too much Heavenly Energy from the Forest Direwolves, and it almost caused me to explode from the inside, I was just unable to hold so much Energy. Furthermore, I tested and tried using the skill last night under ordinary circumstances, and I was totally unable to do so at all. This might mean that the skill can only be used during the Demonic Change State, and yet during that state, I’m unable to control myself. That Devour Skill... just doesn’t seem very valuable to me, and might even cause my death! If I Devour too much like last night, once I exit the Demonic Change State, I’d explode from within again. Furthermore, I don’t even know how to enter the Demonic Change State again, it doesn’t seem like I can control that.”

Shangguan Bing’er thought about it for a while, then said: “Little

Fatty, I think that is actually a good thing.”

“Good thing? Why?” Zhou Weiqing asked curiously, at the same time, stepping much closer to her.

At this time, Shangguan Bing'er's mind was filled totally with cultivating, and did not notice his little actions, and she said: “The heavens are relatively fair. The black pearl that you swallowed is extremely powerful, but it should have its restrictions as well, if not for a huge measure of luck and coincidences, you should have died already. Same for the Immortal Deity Technique; such strong power usually comes at a huge risk. According to the texts I read previously, the Demonic Change they described seems to be very different from your Demonic Change.”

“This is mostly because for all the examples of Demonic Change described in the texts, none of them could maintain clear thought like you. According to them, at that time, you should have killed me, and couldn't possible have awoken so quickly like you did. The normal scenario would be that you probably had to sleep for several days before awakening. Furthermore, the Demonic Change is usually followed by a bout of weakness. However, this did not happen in your case as well, and instead you broke through to the fifth level of Heavenly Energy instead!”

“As such, I feel that your Demonic Change is really different from what was written in history, and isn't as simple as that. Perhaps you can find the key in controlling it.”

Listening to her words, Zhou Weiqing couldn't help but be highly tempted. He had experienced for himself how strong he was during

the Demonic Change state, not just in terms of the sheer power of his body, but also his senses, both of which were increased by at least three times his norm.

Besides that, the speed of using his various elemental skills had also doubled, and he was also able to use the Devour Skill in that state, even being able to use the enemy's Heavenly Energy as his own temporarily. Without a doubt, in the Demonic Change state, if he faced a Heavenly Beast, coupled with the aura from the black pearl, he was able to fight with a Low Stage Zun Heavenly Beast already! As for Jewel Masters, even if the opponent was a Heavenly Jewel Master, he felt confident that in the Demonic Change State he would be able to fight with a two-jewelled Master like Shangguan Bing'er.

Shangguan Bing'er continued saying: "Well, you shouldn't think too much about it for now, take things as they come. The most important thing to do now is to keep cultivating your Heavenly Energy. It seems that at least for now, the black pearl will allow you to continue breaking through the Death Acupuncture Points, and I think that the best thing for you now is to keep raising your cultivation levels. This time, we really got lucky, we were really in above our heads. I am prepared to spend the next few days to focus on cultivation and stabilize my Heavenly Energy to the tenth level first. You should also stabilize your Heavenly Energy since you also just broke through to the fifth level. Work hard okay, I'll be going now."

Zhou Weiqing said: "You're leaving so soon? Bing'er, look, we went to take revenge together yesterday, shouldn't you give me a little reward?"

Shangguan Bing'er gave him a look and asked: "What sort of reward do you want?"

Zhou Weiqing grinned and said: "A hug! Or a kiss! Either is fine! If I could get a touch... that would be even better!"

literal translation of 上了贼船, basically means he's been forced onto a course of action

BOOK 5 – HEAVENLY BOW UNIT

Chapter 25 – Admiral Zhou Arrives (1)

“Touch your own head!” Shangguan Bing’er said angrily. “What about what happened yesterday? Hmph. If you let me cut off that thing, I’ll give you a reward.”

Zhou Weiqing involuntarily tightened his legs and took a few steps back, with a look of fright on his face: “Bing’er, don’t be impulsive! For the sake of your future happiness... I’ll skip the reward okay.”

“Hmph, just keep acting.” Shangguan Bing’er was both annoyed and amused at the same time as she looked at Zhou Weiqing, and as the images of the past day flashed in her mind once again, her glare softened. Suddenly, a green flash of light surrounded her, and Zhou Weiqing felt a blur before his eyes, before a soft figure hugged him lightly. Before he could even react, the figure flashed in another wink of green light and vanished, with only the tent flap’s movement as the only clue there was someone else in the tent a moment ago.

“Haha... haha... “ Zhou Weiqing stood there laughing foolishly to himself, and he lowered his head to the little white tiger in his arms and said happily: “Did you see that! Did you see that?! She hugged me, she hugged me of her own accord! Haha! It’s good to be so suave!”

The little white tiger rolled its eyes, as if saying: Look at yourself. It then ignored him and snuggled deeper in his arms and went back to sleep.

...

As if in a blink of an eye, half a month had passed. There didn't seem to be any retaliation from the Kalise Empire for the sneak attack they had launched, and the only fighting between both sides were small skirmishes as usual.

In this half a month, Shangguan Bing'er spent it doing secluded cultivation. Besides having her 3 meals a day, she never left her tent. Zhou Weiqing also spent most of his time in his tent training during this period; besides cultivating his Heavenly Energy, he spent a lot of time trying to remember the feeling during the Demonic Change State, and how he had killed off the Forest Direwolves, trying to explore a better way to use his skills and how to match the various alignments in proper cohesion. With his faster recovery rate of Heavenly Energy, he was able to do some basic skill complementing.

The strangest thing for Zhou Weiqing was that in this fifteen days, the little white tiger refused to eat anything. At first, he was rather worried, and even tried to force feed it, but as time passed, the little thing seemed to stay lively and full of vigor, and did not seem the slightest bit hungry or dispirited. Zhou Weiqing was usually pretty easy going, and he chalked it down to the power of a Heavenly Beast, and thus didn't think much about it.

Evening.

"Little Wei, are you there?" Xiao Ru Se's familiar voice rang out from outside the tent. Zhou Weiqing was able to stop his cultivation at any time, as he had found out that the five energy

whirlpools would always be drawing in energy at all times, and when he was cultivating, it just meant he was focusing his will on them to make their draw speed up. As such, he could do the same no matter sitting or lying down, without a change in efficiency. Naturally, most of the time he chose to do so lying down, although he did occasionally fall asleep due to that.

Hearing it was Xiao Ru Se outside, he quickly stopped cultivation and called out: “Ru Se Elder Sis, I’m here, come in.”

Xiao Ru Se came in, decked out in full military gear, looking extremely valiant and capable. These few days, while Shangguan Bing’er and Zhou Weiqing were cultivating carefreely, she had been working her head off organizing the troops; training the troops, and dividing the new recruits into various squads and companies. Now that she entered, Zhou Weiqing could clearly feel a capable soldier’s dignity and aura from her.

“Aiii” Zhou Weiqing sneaked a look at Xiao Ru Se’s breastplate, and gave a soft sigh.

How could Xiao Ru Se know what that little rascal was thinking, and immediately said angrily, “Stupid Little Wei, what are you looking at?”

Zhou Weiqing looked at her with an innocent expression, saying: “Nothing! What was I looking at?” Shamelessly acting innocent was after all his best skill.

Xiao Ru Se gave a loud humph and said: “You smelly little brat,

follow me. I still need to call Shangguan Bing'er."

Zhou Weiqing said lazily: "What are we doing?"

Xiao Ru Se's expression grew rather weird and she grinned widely and said: "Just come with me and you'll find out. The military headquarters have sent Shangguan Bing'er's orders down, don't you want to hear it? Elder Sis will bring you along, after all you are her Personal Aide."

Hearing Xiao Ru Se's words, Zhou Weiqing's interest was piqued. After all, he had told Shangguan Bing'er previously that no matter what she did, he would follow her. However, this was the army, and orders had to be followed. Naturally, the earlier they knew what her orders were, the easier they could plan for things. As such, he shoved the little white tiger into his leather armor, and followed Xiao Ru Se out of the tent.

Xiao Ru Se immediately went to the tent at the side to call Shangguan Bing'er, before leading the two of them towards the large tent which housed the Fifth Regiment Headquarters.

As they walked forward, Zhou Weiqing noticed that Shangguan Bing'er had her head held down, and her expression was rather pale. He nudged her with his shoulder and asked quietly: "Bing'er, what's wrong? What are you thinking about?"

Shangguan Bing'er gave a light sigh and said: "Little Fatty, His Majesty and the Admiral trusted me so much, and they gave me the position of Battalion Commander... but I've let them down,

and even resigned the commission on my own accord...”

Zhou Weiqing said imposingly: “Don’t be depressed, it is not your fault. It’s clearly they who had the error in judgement; with your kind and gentle nature, you were never suitable to lead an army. Hmph, such a talented young Heavenly Jewel Master and they did not let you cultivate properly, and insisted on sending you to the army instead. How could they possibly blame you?”

Shangguan Bing’er almost jumped in shock and quickly covered his mouth, shooting a quick glance at Xiao Ru Se in front. “Little Fatty, do not speak nonsense. How can you speak ill of His Majesty and Admiral Zhou? Furthermore, it’s my own fault.”

Zhou Weiqing seized the chance to hold her hand, squeezing it as he said: “Heh, it doesn’t matter. Anyway, no matter what your orders are, I will follow you.”

Xiao Ru Se who was in front turned and glanced at them, an interesting little smile on her face. Shangguan Bing’er was frightened by Zhou Weiqing’s intimate actions; this was after all the army camp! She quickly snatched her hand back and gave him an angry glare: “You’re my Personal Aide now, behave yourself!”

In the short span of time that they spoke, they had already reached the large headquarters tent. This was Zhou Weiqing’s first time entering such a high ranked tentage; it was large and entirely made from well cured cow leather, with a steel alloy structure holding it in place, and was large enough to hold more than a hundred people in meetings.

As the tent entrance flapped open, Xiao Ru Se stopped and said in a loud voice: “3rd Battalion, Xiao Se, Reporting.”

“3rd Battalion, Shangguan Bing’er, Reporting.”

Listening to them shouting out, Zhou Weiqing took a quick peek into the tent, and that peek almost shocked and scared the soul out of him.

Right in the centre of the tent, sat a man who was extremely well built and looked about 50 years of age. His bronzed muscles seemed to glow with health, and he had a squarish face, a pair of piercing eyes and a straight nose. Although he was seated, it was clear that he had a large frame, his rock-like muscles causing his black suit to bulge out, while his eyes were full of spirit.

This face, Zhou Weiqing had seen countless times. Wasn’t that his extremely strong father, the strongest man in the Heavenly Bow Empire, Zhou Shui Niu, Admiral Zhou?

At each side of Admiral Zhou, the Fifth Regiment Commander Gao Shen, and the Vice Commander Qian Zhan Tian stood respectfully. Currently, the two did not seem like the high ranking officials who commandeered an entire Regiment that they were, as they stood at his side with awe and respect.

“Come in.” Admiral Zhou’s deep voice sounded out.

Zhou Weiqing's heart was filled with regret for following them here, shooting a quick glare at Xiao Ru Se, thinking to himself: "Ru Se Elder Sis, this time you have gotten me in deep trouble! Once my dad gets hold of me, I'll be getting a big beating!"

This little rascal was pretty quick thinking, immediately moving quickly to the side, lowering his head and adjusting his Wind Hat. His plan was to blend in with the guards in hopes that his father would not recognize him.

Xiao Ru Se naturally could see what Zhou Weiqing was thinking, and sighed inwardly as she thought to herself: Sorry Little Wei, it's not that Big Sis doesn't want to help you, but Uncle Zhou only has you, his only son. If he didn't come personally, I could have still hidden it from him and not reported it up, but now that he is here, how could I hide this from him? Furthermore, you and Shangguan Bing'er were just too bold, even daring to sneak over and attack the Kalise Empire's camp. Did you two really think that no one would know? One of their ten main granaries being burned down, how could such a big issue be hidden?

It turns out, that night when Zhou Weiqing shot the Overlord Lightning Explosive Arrow, it was right into one of the ten main granaries of the Kalise Empire, and a lot of army rations were stored within, a lot of which burned down in the resulting fire from the lightning explosion. The scouts and spies of Heavenly Bow Empire had long since reported this news back to the headquarters. After a quick check on which Jewel Masters had exited the tent, it was easy to guess the 'culprits'. Of course, it was even easier for Xiao Ru Se to know that Shangguan Bing'er hadn't done it alone.

Xiao Ru Se and Shangguan Bing'er heard Admiral Zhou's command and immediately went forth into the tent. At the same time, Zhou Weiqing tried to sidle his way to the side. He managed to do so, and thought he had succeeded, breathing out a sigh of relief and was just about to turn around to run. Right at that moment, Admiral Zhou's angry voice sounded out once more: "You damned brat, you better get in here now! Don't make your Father, I, go out there and catch you myself."

Zhou Weiqing froze in place, and knew for sure then that he had been sold out by his Ru Se Elder Sis. There was no hiding now, with his father so close, how could he possibly escape? Shriveling a little inside, he lowered his head and went into the tent.

Xiao Ru Se naturally knew what was going on, and wasn't surprised at all, but Shangguan Bing'er had a big shock. If not for Admiral Zhou being present, she would have rushed over and asked Zhou Weiqing what was going on?

Admiral Zhou did not even look at Zhou Weiqing, saying coldly: "Go kneel at the corner. When I'm done with proper business, I'll handle you."

No matter how unwilling and dismayed Zhou Weiqing was, he had no choice but to go to the side and kneel down towards his father, his head bowed down low and the Wind Hat hiding his expression.

Admiral Zhou turned towards Shangguan Bing'er, his tone instantly becoming warmer: "Bing'er, tell me why you no longer wish to be a Battalion Commander?"

Shangguan Bing'er lowered her head and said: "Admiral, Bing'er is wanting in ability and shallow in knowledge, I have never learned how to lead troops, and I do not think I am able to live up to such an important rank. I'm not afraid of dying, as a soldier, I will willing to fight and die on the battlefield. But I cannot bear to see my companions die because I did not lead or direct them properly. So, please Admiral, release me from my commission. Company Leader Xiao is more than able to take over from me."

Chapter 25 – Admiral Zhou Arrives (2)

Admiral Zhou smiled faintly and said: “Very good, you have not disappointed me.”

Shangguan Bing'er started, and couldn't help but look up at him.

Admiral Zhou slowly stood up and walked in front of her, smiling as he said: “Originally, when His Majesty and I discussed about this matter, I did it despite His Majesty's objections, pulling you to the army camp. Do you know why I did so?”

Shangguan Bing'er shook her head in confusion.

Admiral Zhou continued saying: “ That's because, the army camp is the best place to temper a person, since you chose to be a soldier, then everything needs to start from within the army camp. Only when you've experienced everything for yourself, when you've seen true bloodshed, seen soldiers' lives pass before your eyes, then can the future you know your path, know what you are working towards. Your resignation, I accept it. In the future, if and when you return to the army camp, you will resume your commission as Battalion Commander. At that time, I believe that you will not tell me the two words ‘I resign’ again.

After he said that, Admiral Zhou returned to the commander's chair and sat down, saying with a solemn voice: “Shangguan Bing'er, your orders are here.”

Shangguan Bing'er knelt down on a single knee: “This

subordinate is here.”

Admiral Zhou said: “Permission granted for Shangguan Bing’er to be relieved of her duties as the 5th Regiment, 3rd Battalion Commander. The Battalion Commander position will be taken over by Xiao Se. Tomorrow morning, Shangguan Bing’er will return to the Heavenly Bow City, and you will report to the Heavenly Bow Unit.”

Upon hearing the 3 words ‘Heavenly Bow Unit’, Shangguan Bing’er noticeably trembled a little. When she once again lifted her head towards Admiral Zhou, her beautiful eyes showed an unrestrained joy. Admiral Zhou said with profound meaning hidden in his eyes: “The Heavenly Bow Unit is an even better place to temper a person. This time, there is no more backing down. Do you understand?”

Her eyes full of excitement, even fervour, Shangguan Bing’er said: “I understand. Thank you Admiral, for giving me this opportunity. No matter what price I have to pay, I will do my best to become a true member of the Heavenly Bow Unit.”

Admiral Zhou nodded and said: “Very good. Return to pack your things then, you will leave tomorrow morning.”

“Yes sir.” With a respectful agreement, Shangguan Bing’er stood up, glancing to docile and submissive Zhou Weiqing kneeling down at the side, before walking out of the tent.

As soon as Shangguan Bing’er left the tent, Admiral Zhou’s face

turned black, even blacker than the bottom of a pan. Looking at Gao Shen and Qian Zhan Tian at the side, he said: “Both of you can head off now. Without my permission, no one is allowed to interrupt me.”

The two officers were considered some of the highest ranking military officers in the whole Heavenly Bow army, but they did not hesitate at all in obeying Admiral Zhou’s orders, bowing respectfully and heading out instantly. At this moment, there were only three people left in the tent, Admiral Zhou, Zhou Weiqing and Xiao Ru Se.

“Damn little brat, come over here!” Admiral Zhou shouted angrily.

“Orh.” Zhou Weiqing stood up and walked forth with a gloomy face, and as he passed by Xiao Ru Se, he shot her a quick glare.

Xiao Ru Se gave a helpless shrug. Little Wei, in the army, knowing information and not reporting upwards is a huge and serious crime. If Uncle Zhou didn’t come, I’d still be able to hide it, but since he came personally, if I didn’t tell him the truth and something happened to you in the future, how could I possibly face him?

Just as Zhou Weiqing was about to say something, Admiral Zhou’s foot came flying over without warning. BANG, Zhou Weiqing was knocked back 5 metres, rolling on the ground before lying down there.

Xiao Ru Se's jaw dropped in shock; although she knew that Admiral Zhou had a fiery temper, but she did not expect that he would be able to be so ruthless towards his son.

“En?” Admiral Zhou's eyes showed a tinge of surprise. When he had kicked Zhou Weiqing, at the point of impact, his foot had felt a soft, supple and flexible strength shifting most of the impact away.

Zhou Weiqing lay down on the ground, weeping as he said: “Dad, I'm wrong! After all, I'm your only son, for mom's sake, can you hit lighter?”

Admiral Zhou said coldly: “You still know your mom? She's almost angered to death by you. Stop acting and get up.”

Zhou Weiqing didn't dare keep acting in front of his father, and immediately vaulted up, causing the Wind Hat on his head to drop down. With a wronged look upon his face, he stole a quick glance at his father. That appearance, it was as if he was a mere punching bag; coupled with his honest, sad face, even Xiao Ru Se's heart ached upon looking at the scene.

This was the first time Xiao Ru Se had seen Admiral Zhou lecturing Zhou Weiqing, and she thought to herself: This father and son pair are sure a match for each other, the father kicking the son 5 metres away, yet Little Wei is still totally fine.

“Dad, give me a chance to explain! This time it's really not my fault!” As Zhou Weiqing said that, he sidled closer to Xiao Ru Se. If his father tried to hit him again, he would run over to her side!

Admiral Zhou gestured to the floor in front of him: “Come over here, kneel down and give your explanation.”

Zhou Weiqing said with a woebegone expression: “Dad, in front of Ru Se Elder Sis, can’t you save me some face?”

Admiral Zhou rolled his eyes and glared at him again: “Face? You still want face? Do you believe that your Father, I, will hit your face instead? Hmph. Let me tell you, you little brat, your father, I, have a stomach full of pent up anger now, if you’re going to talk some rubbish, I’ll beat you up until your mom doesn’t even recognize you!”

Zhou Weiqing was also used to being beaten, and had no choice but to kneel down, thinking to himself: If you beat me up until my mom doesn’t recognize you, she’ll beat you down!

“Dad, what happened was as follows. That day, I went to the Stars Forest to take a nice bath. That’s the usual spot I bathe in. Who knows that I would bump into the princess who also happened to take a bath there! It was really a coincidence! That Difuya was just too arrogant and obstinate, and she totally did not listen to my explanation, and used her Elemental Jewel to attack me, you almost lost your son then!”

“So you just ran like that?” Admiral Zhou said coldly. In truth, Difuya had already told the truth about what happened that day, as she knew how serious things were and didn’t dare hide anything. As such, he had already known what happened. If not for the fact

that Zhou Weiqing wasn't in the wrong, it wouldn't have been a single foot greeting him just now. With Admiral Zhou's temper, he would have already beaten Zhou Weiqing into a true Zhou Little Fatty. No. Perhaps he would be swollen into a Zhou Big Fatty.

Zhou Weiqing said aggrievedly: "How could I not run? Who knows what Difuya would say when she went back, if she blamed me instead, with your temper, wouldn't you have broken my leg? For the sake of your future grandson, I decided to save my life first, so I decided to go out and forge a name for myself first. When I returned, wouldn't that be a proud thing for you to see? I just happened to see the recruitment, and so I signed up to join the army."

Looking at his father, he thought to himself: Looks like Ru Se Elder Sis did not fully tell on me. Dad doesn't know about my Heavenly Jewel Awakening yet. Heh heh.

Listening to his son's explanation, Admiral Zhou's expression eased up a little. He knew his own temper, and in truth, if Difuya had turned the tables and lied about what happened, he probably wouldn't have easily forgiven Zhou Weiqing.

"So, tell me, since you entered the 3rd Battalion, what name have you forged for yourself?" Admiral Zhou said passively. Before Zhou Weiqing could even open his mouth, Xiao Ru Se who was standing at the side quickly replied: "Uncle Zhou, Little Wei's performance has been exemplary. Not only did he win the most outstanding recruit award in the Fresh Recruit Tournament and got himself the rank of Squad Leader, but he also was appointed personally by Commander Shangguan to be her Personal Aide. Furthermore, in

the earlier ambush when Commander Shangguan was being attacked, it was his arrows that reversed the situation on the battlefield and saved her life. If we just talked about his credit on the battlefield, he can be promoted to a Company Leader!”

Xiao Ru Se’s words made Admiral Zhou’s expression ease up and look much better, and he said warmly: “Ru Se, are you praising this little brat too much? How can I not know his standards, how could Bing’er need saving from him?”

Xiao Ru Se smiled faintly and said: “Uncle Zhou, I’d better let Little Wei tell you himself. I’m sure you’ll be pleasantly surprised. [A scholar who has been away three days must be looked at with new eyes.](#) The Little Wei now is no longer the same Little Wei as before.”

“Hmm?” Admiral Zhou looked suspiciously at his son. He totally did not consider the fact that Zhou Weiqing might become a Heavenly Jewel Master, after all he knew his son’s condition very well. With his meridians being blocked, there was no possibility of him cultivating Heavenly Energy. Admiral Zhou had spent many years trying out various methods, putting much time and energy into attempting to change that fact, but even with his mid level Zong Stage cultivation level, he had not been able to do anything about his son’s meridians. By now, he had already lost hope about that.”

“Speak, what’s that about?” Admiral Zhou said coldly as he looked at his son.

This time, Zhou Weiqing straightened his back and stood up tall,

thinking to himself: Heh heh, I can finally stand up proudly in front of dad. Grinning, he said: “Dad, your son is now a Heavenly Jewel Master!” As he said that, the little rascal pulled back his sleeves and revealed both his wrists. Manipulating his Heavenly Energy, the Icy Jade Physical Jewel and the Alexandrite Cat’s Eye Elemental Jewel simultaneously appeared around his wrists and started revolving.

Looking at the Heavenly Jewels surrounding Zhou Weiqing’s wrist, Admiral Zhou started. The next instant, his face turned black and he shouted out: “You scoundrel!”

“Ah?” Zhou Weiqing was rather startled by the scolding as he thought to himself: What’s going on? I’m already a Heavenly Jewel Master and he’s still scolding me?

You little... how dare you pretend to be a Heavenly Jewel Master to try and deceive me and escape punishment? Furthermore, you still pretended to be a Blue Cat’s Eye Jewel, don’t you know how to act properly? Hmph, making your Father, I, happy for a minute, wait till I beat you to death!” As he said that, Admiral Zhou took a step forward and his hand whistled towards Zhou Weiqing’s head.

In truth, it was not surprising that he did not believe Zhou Weiqing. After all, preconceived ideas have a strong hold on people, and for him, someone who had suffered and tried everything for more than ten years in order to try and fix his son’s meridians and failing to do so, it was a rather sore spot for him. As such, he had instantly thought Zhou Weiqing was lying. Furthermore, it was now in the day, and the blue Cat’s Eye Jewel that showed was extremely unique; naturally he would not think

of such a rare gem like the Alexandrite Cat's Eye.

As his furious palm came hurtling down, it was indeed an a scary amount of strength thrown in a moment of anger. However, it was after all his son, and halfway through, before it reached him, he had managed to change the course of it, targeting Zhou Weiqing's shoulder instead. If not, once that palm hit his face, Zhou Weiqing would become Zhou 'Toothless'.

“Wuu Wuu”, an angry cry sounded out, and a cute little white head perked out of Zhou Weiqing's leather armor, baring its little fangs at Admiral Zhou. Of course, Zhou Weiqing didn't stand there to take the blow this time, and with a swoosh sound, his right leg tapped the ground and his body leapt back a few metres, dodging the blow.

That's the literal translation of 士别三日，当刮目相看, basically as the words suggest, it means a momentous change in someone you've parted with for a while

Chapter 25 – Admiral Zhou Arrives (3)

Normally, when his father hit him, he naturally would not resist. After all, father hitting son was a universally accepted principle. However, this time, he knew it was a misunderstanding and accepting the beating would be unjust; naturally he wasn't that silly.

“You still dare to run? Ehh?” Although Admiral Zhou's strike just now was from a fit of anger, but his son's speed still gave him a surprise. In his heart, he thought: Could it be, that little brat was telling the truth?

“Dad, you're a Mid level Zong Master, don't tell me you can't even recognize an Alexandrite Cat's Eye Jewel!” Zhou Weiqing yelled out indignantly. As he did so, he raised his right hand and circulated his Heavenly Energy, and in an icy mist, the Overlord Bow appeared in his grasp. Actions speak louder than words, and he did not want to waste time; the Physical Jewel Consolidated Equipment would tell his tale for him.

As soon as the Overlord Bow appeared, an imposing aura filled the tent, and the thick fluctuations of a Strength Physical Jewel instantly drew Admiral Zhou's attention.

Admiral Zhou stared blankly at the Overlord Bow in his son's hand, and his next action was so sudden and strange that it caused both Zhou Weiqing and Xiao Ru Se to not know whether to laugh or cry. The distinguished Admiral actually lifted both his hands, and rubbed at his eyes.

“Physical Jewel Consolidated Equipment?”

Zhou Weiqing was afraid his dad would hit him again, and quickly said: “Yes! That’s my first Physical Jewel’s Consolidated Equipment, it’s called the Overlord Bow, has an attack range of over 1.5km, and has an additional explosive effect added on. Furthermore, it also has a socket for an Elemental Jewel in order to make use of fusion skills.

Admiral Zhou’s body trembled and swayed a bit, as he took a step back; his breathing obviously a lot heavier than before. “Weiqing, use your strongest skill and shoot an arrow at me.”

As an archer, naturally Zhou Weiqing had arrows with him, but for him to shoot his own father, he did not dare do so. “Dad... that...”

“Don’t waste time, use your full strength or I’ll beat you up!” Admiral Zhou recovered from his short bout of dazed shock and disbelief, and his eyes shone with an unrestrained excitement and glee.

Zhou Weiqing was very familiar with his father’s temper, and knew he would do as he said. As such, he didn’t argue further and quietened down to focus. As he whipped out an arrow and nocked it onto the Overlord Bow’s bowstring, his shoulders tensed as he drew the bow to its full crescent shape. With a quick thought, the Elemental Jewel on his left wrist quietly fell into the socket on the Overlord Bow. After all, Admiral Zhou was his father, although he had been told to use his strongest skill, but his attribute wheel moved to the black, Darkness Attribute area, instead of the highest

damage blue, Lightning area.

Currently, Zhou Weiqing was around 10 metres away from his father, and at the instant that he drew the Overlord Bow, Admiral Zhou showed some surprised on his face. With his cultivation level, he could clearly feel how much Heavenly Energy that Overlord Bow was holding currently.

“Dad, be careful!” After he said that, Zhou Weiqing released the bowstring.

The severe whistling sound of the arrow and the final explosion rang out almost simultaneously, and before anyone could see the arrow, in the next instant, a black arrow appeared right in front of Admiral Zhou.

Zhou Weiqing’s jaw dropped as he stared at the sight before him. The arrow that he had shot out with his Overlord Bow was just hovering there right in front of his father, and he had not even seen or felt what skill had been used.

Bang Another soft explosion sounded out, and the arrow disintegrated into dust. The Touch of Darkness skill activated and 12 black tentacles of about half a metre flickered for a second, before vanishing as well. From the look, it was as if a small octopus flailed around at Admiral Zhou for a while before disappearing.

Zhou Weiqing was very clear how strong the Overlord Bow’s destructive power was, and for that arrow, he had indeed used his full strength. Unexpectedly, his father had stopped it so easily

without even releasing his Heavenly Jewels. He had never really seen his father's real strength, and only now did he realise how terrifying a mid level Zong Stage Heavenly Jewel Master was.

Xiao Ru Se had been standing at the side, and could see things relatively clearer. Faintly, she had seen that when Zhou Weiqing released his arrow, Admiral Zhou had blown out a breath of air.

Zhou Weiqing was stunned, but at the other side, Admiral Zhou was just as stunned. Of course, with the huge difference in cultivation level, how could Zhou Weiqing possibly injure him? However, feeling the power of that arrow, he had also gotten a good estimation of his son's strength.

"Ru Se, please leave first, I have to talk to this little brat alone." Admiral Zhou said passively.

"Yes sir." Xiao Ru Se agreed respectfully, before turning around to leave.

Admiral Zhou's face seemed as calm as water, and in a flash, he appeared next to Zhou Weiqing, grabbing his shoulders. In another flash, the surroundings blurred around Zhou Weiqing as he lost sight of everything, only feeling a strong wind blowing past him. As he was also a Heavenly Jewel Master now, he could naturally sense that his father was not using his Heavenly Jewels, and this insane speed was totally with Heavenly Energy alone. Such speed was as if he was flying at low altitudes; this was the power of a 8-Jewelled Mid level Zong stage Heavenly Jewel Master!

After about 15 minutes, Admiral Zhou finally stopped, and Zhou Weiqing saw that his father had brought him to a small hillside.

Admiral Zhou put his son on the ground, and suddenly put his hands to his waist: “Wahahaha! £\$%^&* & ^ % \$ £ ” £\$%^&! My son is no longer a trash! Wahahaha!!!”

Admiral Zhou’s boisterous laughter almost startled Zhou Weiqing into falling off the cliff. In his memory, he had never seen his black-faced father so happy before.

Admiral laughed out loud for nearly the time it took to finish a meal before he finally stopped. However, when he looked at Zhou Weiqing once again, he resumed his usual strict face.

“Little brat, tell me how you became a Heavenly Jewel Master. Don’t miss out any detail.”

Zhou Weiqing said tentatively: “Dad, my Awakening process is a bit... weird. If I did anything wrong... can you not beat me up?”

Admiral Zhou gave him a hmph and said: “Alright, I won’t hit you. You’re already a Heavenly Jewel Master yourself, at least Your Father, I, will not have to keep worrying about your future! Why would I beat you up then! Do you think I enjoy beating you? My heart aches when I do so as well! Hmph. If not for the fact I’m afraid that you, this little brat, will die easily from not having enough to eat if I pass away, do you think I have so much time to beat my own son everyday?”

Although his father's tone was still brash and cold, but listening to his words, Zhou Weiqing felt a warmth in his heart. Indeed! No matter how much Dad hits me, he is still my father!

Humans, when they get excited, it is easy for them to blurt out the truth. Zhou Weiqing showed that trait right at this moment. "Dad, I did it with Shangguan Bing'er."

"Do it then do it... what's that got to do with your Heavenly Jewel Awakening?" At this point, Admiral Zhou was still extremely excited, but before his words ended, he suddenly realised what was being said, and grabbed the front of Zhou Weiqing's leather armor, scaring the little white tiger into shrinking its head back down again. "What did you say? You did what?"

Zhou Weiqing gave a foolish grin and said: "Heh ... that ..." As such, he started his tale from him getting the black pearl, running away and told everything to his father.

Even though Admiral Zhou was a Mid Level Zong Stage Heavenly Jewel Master, listening to his son's experiences this past few months caused his expression to change many times. Of which, the greatest change was when Zhou Weiqing described his Awakening with Shangguan Bing'er as a sacrifice, and when he had taken Huyan Aobo as his teacher.

Zhou Weiqing spoke for almost an entire hour before he finished detailing his experiences of the past month, and he also passed his father the Immortal Deity Technique manual.

Flipping open the Immortal Deity Technique, Admiral Zhou's face changed as soon as he read a few lines. Almost involuntarily, his hand raised up as if to hit Zhou Weiqing again, but he stopped himself halfway.

"Dad, you must keep your word, you said you wouldn't hit me just now." Zhou Weiqing said pitifully at his father.

Admiral Zhou threw the Immortal Deity Technique onto him, and Zhou Weiqing quickly kept it again.

Admiral Zhou said in a serious voice: "That is to say... you, this little brat, ate some strange black pearl, and cultivated this nonsensical Immortal Deity Technique, causing the Evil aura within the pearl to activate; followed by which you took advantage of Shangguan Bing'er as a sacrifice to Awaken your Heavenly Jewels? And Bing'er didn't kill you little bastard?"

Zhou Weiqing thought snidely to himself: Dad, if you call me a little bastard, doesn't that mean that you...

"Uhh... Yes that's right."

Admiral Zhou's furrowed brow relaxed a little, and he gave a small sigh before saying: "Bing'er is just too good a girl! Sigh... you better treat her well and take good care of her. From now on, she's our Zhou Family daughter-in-law. Hmph. Aren't you very good at acting, and learnt a whole bunch of rascally tricks? I don't care what you do, but you better bring her back home soon. However,

you better remember that you can't force her, and she better be willing to come with you!"

Zhou Weiqing blinked in surprise, feeling joy pervade him and he said excitedly: "Dad, does that mean you are okay with me and Shangguan Bing'er?"

Admiral Zhou gave another hmph and said: "You have gotten the advantage this time little brat. As for Huyan Aobo, when you are 16, you should really work hard and learn how to create Consolidating Equipment Scrolls. You should understand how important a Consolidating Equipment Master is for our Heavenly Bow Empire. Alright, get lost now, you can head west to return to the camp, and when you do so, start packing up as well. Tomorrow, you will join Bing'er and report to the Heavenly Bow Unit.

Zhou Weiqing started a little; he did not expect that his father would be so easy going after knowing about him and Shangguan Bing'er, as he had expected a beating.

Once again asking tentatively, he said: "Dad, is that it? Aren't you going to ask me to cultivate harder?"

A strange light flashed in Admiral Zhou's eyes, and he said exasperatedly: "Urge? How could I rush you. That nonsensical Immortal Deity Technique, how can it be rushed? You little brat, you better remember, if you dare to die before Your Father, I will turn myself into a ghost and break your legs. Now, get lost!"

Zhou Weiqing saw that his father was near bursting point again, and didn't stop to continue talking and ran off.

Looking at his son's retreating figure, Admiral Zhou suddenly burst out laughing again, muttering to himself at the same time: "Hmph, who still dares say that my son is a trash, haha, he's a genius amongst all genius! Bing'er that little girl is extremely good, with her restricting that little brat, that'll be more than enough! Heh, that brat still wants me to teach him, what's there to teach! My 8th Jewel's Skill was the Touch of Darkness, that little brat... Wahahaha!"

Chapter 26 – If I let go of you, I won't have a wife anymore! (1)

Zhou Weiqing naturally did not know that his father was still laughing maniacally to himself behind. Escaping a beating this time, he was already very satisfied. Without any delay, he rushed back to his tent; he did not have much to pack up anyway, and thus he jumped into bed to have a good sleep.

Right at this moment, he heard an almost ghostly voice from outside: “Zhou Little Fatty, you're back?”

Zhou Weiqing got a fright and quickly jumped off his bed: “Who's there? It's late at night, don't scare me!”

As the tent flap raised up, Shangguan Bing'er entered, dressed in a cotton outfit. Her expression seemed very peaceable, without the usual cold mask she wore, but without knowing why, the Shangguan Bing'er of today caused Zhou Weiqing to have a very uneasy feeling in his heart. “Bing'er, what's wrong?” Zhou Weiqing asked with trepidation.

Shangguan Bing'er stopped about two metres away and said passively: “You're not Zhou Little Fatty, you're Zhou Weiqing right? You're Admiral Zhou's only son.”

At this time, Zhou Weiqing could no longer hide the truth, saying in embarrassment: “Yes, but my childhood nickname was really Zhou Little Fatty.”

Shangguan Bing'er nodded her head gently and said: "Good, very good. I should have known earlier, no wonder you were so familiar with Xiao Se. How foolish of me... Zhou Little Fatty... Zhou Weiqing... My mom always said, the worst men in the world are those who lie to you. You're good, very good." As she said that, she turned and walked away.

Zhou Weiqing was just about to chase her, but she suddenly turned around and whipped out her sword, saying in a severe voice: "Do not follow me, or I'll kill you!" After saying that, she turned around and left once again, in a very resolute manner.

Staring dumbfoundedly at the closing down before him, Zhou Weiqing felt on the verge of weeping but no tears came. How could you blame me for that? If I had told you who I was earlier, would you have allowed me to stay in the army camp?

Right at the moment, there was a loud Swish, and the tent flap opened once more. Just as Zhou Weiqing was delighted that Shangguan Bing'er had changed her mind and returned, he saw it was his dad.

"Little brat, I forgot to ask you something just now. Since you're together with Bing'er now, what about the princess?"

Zhou Weiqing said uncertainly: "Princess Difuya? Didn't I ask you to turn down the marriage?"

Admiral Zhou gave a loud humph: "Turn down the marriage?"

Don't tell it to me, go tell your godfather that. If you have the ability to persuade him, your Father, I, will be happy to oblige.”

Having said that, Admiral Zhou turned around to leave, but just as he lifted the tent flap, he stopped and said with his back to Zhou Weiqing: “A man should chase 2 but ensure 1, before going for 4,5,6,7! Our Zhou Family has very few members, and no matter how many wives you bring home, our house can support them. Damn it, you little brat, you're not even 14 and you've already done it. When Your Father, I, was 14... I.... Ahem. Tomorrow you better hurry up and get lost. Anyway, here's a birthday present.”

With that, a black object flew in front of Zhou Weiqing, and by the time he had caught it, Admiral Zhou had already disappeared.

The black object was very light and soft to the touch, and as Zhou Weiqing brought it closer to the lamp light to look, he realised it was a black tight fitting sleeveless vest, extremely soft like silk, but its black surface had a rather dim silvery glow.

He still remembered my birthday... Zhou Weiqing suddenly felt his eyes grow moist, and he had the urge to chase out after him. In the end, he did not do so. “Dad, thanks. I will definitely make you proud in the future, so that you can be known as Zhou Weiqing's father, and not me as Admiral Zhou's son.”

“Hmm, oh yes, I need to say goodbye to Ru Se Elder Sis as well.”

...

Dawn.

Shangguan Bing'er was carrying her bags, a dark cloud over her face as she walked out from the army camp. As soon as she exited the camp, she saw a smiling Zhou Weiqing with his backpack shouldered as well, standing there outside waiting. "What are you doing here?" Shangguan Bing'er stopped in her tracks, looking very unapproachable.

Zhou Weiqing grinned and said: "Of course, it's to go with you to the Heavenly Bow Unit. I said before, no matter where you go, I'll follow you."

Shangguan Bing'er gave a cold humph: "This is the army, how dare you leave on your own accord? Aren't you afraid of being punished?"

Zhou Weiqing said: "It's my dad who asked me to go with you to the Heavenly Bow Unit."

Shangguan Bing'er started a little, and a self mocking expression appeared on her face: "Oh yes, you're Admiral Zhou's son." As she said that, she spun around and released her Heavenly Jewels, shooting forth at top speed.

Zhou Weiqing did not dare delay, moving the attribute wheel to the Wind Attribute and focusing Heavenly Energy into his right leg, and just like that, the two of them left the main army camp one after the other.

As their figures disappeared in the distance, Xiao Ru Se's figure appeared at the exit, her face carrying a smile with a hint of melancholy. She softly muttered to herself: "Good luck to you two, Little Wei, Elder Sis will be waiting for you two here."

As she said that, she turned around and in the air, resounded her melodious voice: "You were not there when I was born, I was old when you were born. I regret that you were late born, You regret that I was early born..."

As his cultivation level of Heavenly Energy had risen, along with the completion of the first portion of the Immortal Deity Technique, Zhou Weiqing's speed had raised by quite a substantial amount. However, he was still highly dependent on his Demonic Right Leg's immense strength to propel him forward, and only by doing so could he barely keep up with Shangguan Bing'er. After all, she was a full agility type Heavenly Jewel Master, and it was only because his energy regeneration had nearly doubled after completing the first portion of the Immortal Deity Technique, that he was able to just keep up.

However, this time, it seemed that Shangguan Bing'er was really angry, as soon as she saw that Zhou Weiqing was keeping up with her, she gave an angry humph and her Elemental Jewel flew discreetly into the socket of her Wind Wielding Boots. In an instant, her speed had a sudden increased burst, and she shot forward like a shooting star in the skies.

Seeing that she was about to increase the gap between them once again; at this critical moment, Zhou Weiqing did not care any further, and his left hand extended out towards Shangguan

Bing'er, and instantly the Fetters of Wind fell upon her.

Shangguan Bing'er did not expect that Zhou Weiqing would use a skill on her, and instantly her body froze in place as she was controlled. Due to inertia from the sudden stop, she fell and rolled onto the floor.

At this moment, Zhou Weiqing displayed the fruits of his labour, the result of the many days of practicing with complementing skills. As the green light of the Fetters of Wind flashed, another black light followed almost instantly. The black light denoting the Touch of Darkness wrapped around Shangguan Bing'er, pulling her back and saving her from the fall, slowing her speed. Alas, the sheer speed from the Wind Wielding Boots Fusion Skill was just too fast, and even though the Touch of Darkness managed to slow her down by a large margin, but the impact caused it to break.

However, in that short span of time, Zhou Weiqing had managed to catch up to her, and when he was barely a few metres from her, he immediately activated his Blink skill, appearing right below Shangguan Bing'er. As she fell down from the sky, she landed right on top of him. Bang!

Shangguan Bing'er fell onto Zhou Weiqing with a loud crash, and was immediately embraced by him. Although she was very light, but slamming down on him like that with such great impact, Zhou Weiqing's face turned pale in pain, but his arms did not lessen his grip, as if saying that he would never let go.

In this scenario, the advantage of the Strength Physical Jewel was put into play. Although Shangguan Bing'er was at the tenth

level of Heavenly Energy, and had two sets of Heavenly Jewels, but her strength was no match for Zhou Weiqing with his strength buff.

“Let go of me!” Shangguan Bing’er said angrily.

“No! I won’t let go! If I let go of you now, I’ll lose my wife forever!” Zhou Weiqing said stubbornly.

“You...” Shangguan Bing’er’s face was cold and furious: “If you don’t let go of me, I’ll die right in front of you now.”

Zhou Weiqing was stunned for a second, and he carried her up and let go of her.

As soon as he let go, Shangguan Bing’er had taken off the Purple Dawn Bow from her back, and instantly nocked an arrow and drew it to maximum capacity, aiming at him. Zhou Weiqing said with a bitter smile: “Even if you proclaim the death sentence on me, shouldn’t you give me a chance to explain?”

Shangguan Bing’er said coldly: “Explain? What’s there to explain? Do you think I’m a fool? Do you think I do not know about Admiral Zhou’s only son, who has had Princess Difuya betrothed to him since young? Viscount Zhou... Prince Zhou, please do not follow me from now on, or I will kill you.”

Zhou Weiqing thought to himself: Although Bing’er may seem very gentle, but when she is resolute, her inner nature is extremely

unyielding. It seems like, words will not solve anything.

Taking a deep breath, looking at the cold glint of the arrow pointed at him, Zhou Weiqing flipped his hands, and drew an arrow from his own quiver.

“I do not need you to take action. I did hide my identity from you. That is my fault, and I will take action myself.”

As he said that, without any hesitation, he took up the arrow and slammed it into his left shoulder. Pshh Instantly, fresh blood spurted out, turning the arm of his uniform entirely red. Zhou Weiqing did not make any sound, biting his lips as his body shuddered.

Shangguan Bing'er was stunned by the scene in front of her, and she subconsciously loosened her hold on the bow. “You... are you crazy??”

Zhou Weiqing said solemnly: “I’m not crazy now, but if you leave me, I will really become crazy. As long as I can keep you by my side, no matter what price I have to pay, I am willing.” As he said that, his hands flipped to the side again, as he took out another arrow. He was not shamming or putting up an act; as he spent more and more time with Shangguan Bing'er, he had found that he had truly fallen for her. Her light, her innocence, her gentle character, the resoluteness in her bones, all of that combined to draw him like a top grade wine. Although Zhou Weiqing was still young, but having inherited the black pearl's senses, he had the feeling that if he let her leave this time, it would likely be forever. As such, no matter what, he had to leave her here, to explain

things to her. He did not want to let happiness slip from his hands just like that. Holding the arrow in his hands pointed to himself once again, he asked her: “Bing’er, will you give me the opportunity to explain myself?”

Shangguan Bing’er stared at him, tears involuntarily falling down from her eyes. At the same time, the Purple Dawn Bow and the arrow fell from her hands, and her body shook and trembled as she looked at Zhou Weiqing in tears, her heart trembling within as well.

Chapter 26 – If I let go of you, I won't have a wife anymore! (2)

Seeing that Shangguan Bing'er did not reply him, Zhou Weiqing's right hand did not hesitate to stab down with the arrow once again, this time close to his chest. Before Shangguan Bing'er could react, another pssh sound rang out as the arrow sank in and blood once again spurted out.

Zhou Weiqing showed his savage side, as he grit his teeth. Despite the sweat beading on his forehead, he stood there resolutely, not moving an inch, as if the 2 arrows weren't stuck in him. Once again, his hands moved towards the quiver, taking out another arrow. "No more!" Shangguan Bing'er finally caved in, and in a green flash of light, her hands were grasping hold of the hand holding the arrow.

"You fool! Aren't you afraid of death? Afraid of pain? Why must you hurt yourself?" Looking at Zhou Weiqing's upper half of the body, which was now soaked in fresh blood, the anger in her heart had long since evaporated. She raised her hands to try and seal the blood flow, but Zhou Weiqing grabbed her hands instead..

"Let me explain to you first; once that is done, we can treat it." Zhou Weiqing's voice was very soft and gentle, looking at her with love in his eyes. All that he had done was a gamble, a gamble that she also held some reciprocal feelings for him, that she would stop him. It worked, and when Shangguan Bing'er had cried, he knew he had finally succeeded.

"No, do you want to die? Let me stop the blood first, then I'll

listen to your explanation okay?” Shangguan Bing’er said between sobs, pulling her hands from Zhou Weiqing’s grasp. She pulled out the arrow from his hand and threw it away, then placed her hands at his wounds and circulated her Heavenly Energy into his body, repelling the arrows embedded in his body with a deft touch before quickly sealing the blood flow.

She then tore his sleeve away, and when she saw the wounds, she drew a sharp breath; they were extremely deep.

In truth, she did not know that if Zhou Weiqing had not activated his Heavenly Jewels and absorbed the black pearl’s evil aura, he would have died by now. Originally, when he had first swallowed the black pearl, a drop of blood on his fist had already dissolved a large Stars Tree, furthermore he had bled out so much. Shangguan Bing’er quickly took out a clean white shirt from her backpack, tearing it into strips, and used it to bandage his wounds carefully.

Zhou Weiqing just stood there, watching as she bandaged him. At this moment, his tensed breath was finally relieved, and the serious eyes turned lively once again.

Quickly bandaging his wounds, Shangguan Bing’er’s forehead was full of sweat as well, and her hands stained with Zhou Weiqing’s blood.

Let’s go to the side to rest.” She looked up at Zhou Weiqing, only to see his pale, ashen face, his eyes closed as he started swaying. Shocked, she quickly held on to his other arm, but as soon as she did so, his body crumpled, falling into her arms.

“Little Fatty, Little Fatty, don’t scare me!” Shangguan Bing’er quickly held him. Even when facing stronger enemies, or when they were facing the direwolf pack, he had not sustained such heavy injuries; yet for her sake, Zhou Weiqing who feared death so much had actually inflicted such heavy self injuries, what more was there to say?

Shangguan Bing’er quickly helped him to the roadside, seating herself against a tree while holding Zhou Weiqing in her embrace.

Zhou Weiqing opened his eyes feebly, giving a forced smile as he said: “Bing’er, I’m alright. As long as you’re willing to listen to my explanation, I can even take another two more arrows.” This wasn’t him spouting nonsense; with his body’s current physique, as long as he wasn’t stabbed in the heart, he would be able to recover from two more stabs. At this moment of weakness for Shangguan Bing’er, if he didn’t take advantage of the situation, he wouldn’t be called Zhou Weiqing. Nestled in her soft embrace, although his shoulder hurt so much that it felt numb, his heart felt as if it had eaten honey and was indescribably comfortable.

Shangguan Bing’er’s tears fell like pearls from a cut necklace as she said: “Little Fatty, you don’t need to speak anymore. I trust you. Even if you lied to me, I’ll forgive you.” Before today, even during the time when they were facing the Forest Direwolves and Zhou Weiqing had tried to sacrifice his life for hers, her heart was still confused; she had not known how she felt about him.

However, just in that instant when Zhou Weiqing had resolutely stabbed the arrow into his own body, Shangguan Bing’er felt as if a

knife had stabbed right into her heart as well. Only then did she realise that this rascally, shameless and brazen fellow had somehow imprinted himself in her heart.

Zhou Weiqing slowly closed his eyes, as his voice grew serious. Still weak, he said faintly: “Bing’er, I really did not lie to you, I never have. Do you remember, when you first asked me about my past, I said I did not want to lie to you, and asked you not to ask further. I admit that I hid my past, but I would not lie to you, at that time if I had told you my identity, would you have allowed me to stay in the army camp? I was afraid you would have shipped me back to my father.”

Shangguan Bing’er bit her lips and said: “But... you already have a fiancée, yet you behaved as if nothing was happening to stay beside me. Do you think you’re treating her fairly? Treating me fairly? How can you even face us?”

Zhou Weiqing said bitterly: “I have never treated Difuya as my fiancée, how could I even speak of treating her or facing her? A woman who would try to kill her own fiancé, do you think I would even think of her? Do you know why I happened to swallow the black pearl originally?” As such, he told Shangguan Bing’er about how he chanced upon Difuya bathing, and how he had been left for the dead.

“... After I ran away, I left a message for my father asking him to help me reject the marriage. After all, she doesn’t fancy me, which I can understand; nor do I fancy her. No matter how beautiful a woman is, if her heart is not good, how can I accept her? She has never been in my heart, and the person I really love is you. You’re

so gentle, and kind; while Difuya, I only caught a glimpse of her bathing, and didn't really see her naked, yet she already tried to kill me. On the other hand, for you, even after I did that to you, you thought about the bigger picture and restrained yourself from killing me, even though you were more than justified to do so, and you even helped train me to become a Heavenly Jewel Master. Ever since that day, your kindness and compassion had touched me, and after spending so much time with you, I have really fallen for you. Bing'er, I really am no longer able to live without you."

Shangguan Bing'er flushed and stammered: "But... Admiral Zhou... did he manage to reject the betrothal?"

Zhou Weiqing said: "My dad is fond of his face, and it won't be easy for him to do that in front of godfather. I'll personally tell godfather when we return. Bing'er don't worry, even if I have wives in the future, it would never be Difuya."

Shangguan Bing'er nodded gently, saying: "En..." However, almost instantly, she realised something was wrong, and her eyes widened. "What did you say?? You still want to have other wives??!"

"Errr... I misspoke... ... Aiiyaahhh, my wound hurts!" Zhou Weiqing's head lolled to the side, his face pale as he 'fainted' then. When he fainted, he still didn't forget to position his head properly, landing right in her bosom. While his feelings were real, it wouldn't extinguish his rascally nature.

At first, he was just enjoying the feeling of being pressed against Shangguan Bing'er's soft body; the feeling was just too great.

However, his blood loss was too great, and before long, he had really fallen asleep.

After an unknown amount of time had passed, Zhou Weiqing finally awoke. As soon as he opened his eyes, he found himself lying down with Shangguan Bing'er's lap as his pillow, with some of her spare clothing covering him like a quilt. Warmth flooded his heart, and he couldn't help but wish that the moment would last forever.

Shangguan Bing'er's small hand rested on his forehead: "You're finally awake, there's no more fever. How do you feel?"

Zhou Weiqing twitched comfortably on her leg, and seeing her concerned look, his heart was filled with tenderness. Moving his shoulder tentatively, he found that although it still hurt, it was already much better. He knew that his recuperative abilities were a lot stronger than a normal human's due to the black pearl, as evidenced from the previous time he was injured by the Direwolf King's attacks.

"Bing'er, you won't leave me again right?" Zhou Weiqing lifted up his right hand to hold hers.

"Mmmn." Shangguan Bing'er nodded softly, a blush tinting her cheeks.

Zhou Weiqing struggled to get up, then unreservedly leaning into her, he put his right arm on her shoulders to support himself as he leaned in closer...

As his face grew closer, the flush on Shangguan Bing'er's beautiful face grew deeper, and she said softly: "Knock it off, you're still injured."

Zhou Weiqing immediately seized upon her word gleefully and said: "Does that mean, as soon as my injuries are healed, we can..."

Shangguan Bing'er chided him reproachfully: "Can't you be more proper!"

Zhou Weiqing grinned and said: "Being proper is not my style! After all, they say that girls only fall for bad boys. Bing'er, do you know that today's my birthday, my 14th birthday. Previously, at Master Huyan's place, when I said that there were 2 more months before I reached 14, I was just randomly giving a time. In truth, today is my actual birthday. How about giving me a kiss as a birthday present?"

"Fourteen..." Hearing his age, Shangguan Bing'er's expression grew a little strange, and she put her hand to his mouth and said: "Little Fatty, you're just fourteen years old, and not fully grown up yet. We shouldn't be too intimate, or it'll affect your growth."

Zhou Weiqing was dumbfounded, he had not expected that he had dropped a rock on his own foot, the expression on his face turned weird.

Shangguan Bing'er thought he was angry, and gave him a quick peck on his cheeks. "Happy Birthday Little Fatty, I'm already

yours, so I'll wait for you to grow up.”

“I...” Zhou Weiqing didn't know what to say to that, having a very complicated feeling in his heart, not knowing whether to laugh or cry.

As it was already four hours later, the two decided to continue on their journey, though it was only after Shangguan Bing'er had verified that Zhou Weiqing's wounds were pretty much healed before agreeing to continue traveling. Of course, they were no longer chasing one after the other, but were running hand in hand.

Chapter 26 – If I let go of you, I won't have a wife anymore! (3)

“Bing'er, what is the Heavenly Bow Unit? How come I've never heard about it before?”

“You haven't heard of the Heavenly Bow Unit?”

“Yeah, I didn't enter a military institute to study, nor did I go to a Jewel Master institute, so naturally I have never heard of them.”

“The Heavenly Bow Unit is a legend in our Heavenly Bow Empire. In fact, in the past, our country was not known as the Heavenly Bow Empire, and it was because of the Heavenly Bow Unit and its merits that caused our country's name change.”

“Wow! That strong? Could it be that the Heavenly Bow Unit is even stronger than my father?”

“I'm not sure about that, I have heard that there are only a few members in the Heavenly Bow Unit, but they are all top level godlike archers, and they can only be commandeered by His Majesty. There have been a few times in history when our country was in dire straits, and it was only because they took action, taking down some key members of enemy armies, that caused the tides to turn and saving us all. I've heard that their individual combat abilities might not be the strongest, but they are extremely skilled assassins that even Heavenly Jewel Masters have to fear.”

“At that point in time, the Kalise Empire was at the peak of its power, and they had seven Heavenly Jewel Masters, while we only had Admiral Zhou alone. We were in deep danger, facing extinction, as the Kalise armies were at our very borders. However, in one single night, four of the strongest Heavenly Jewel Masters on the Kalise side died under their bows. That caused the Kalise Army Commanders and their Emperor to panic and order the armies to retreat from the border, and in the next sixteen years up to now, they have never fully recovered from that time. It can be said that it was the seniors of the Heavenly Bow Unit which saved our very empire. If we are able to pass the test and actually join the Heavenly Bow Unit, that would be the greatest honour.”

“So formidable? I really have to meet them!” Zhou Weiqing said excitedly.

...

Ten days later.

Heavenly Bow City.

After ten days of hasty travel, Zhou Weiqing and Shangguan Bing'er finally returned to the capital city. “Bing'er, where should we go to look for the Heavenly Bow Unit? When I left, my father did not give me any other instructions.” Zhou Weiqing asked as he looked high and low.

Both were dressed in cloth attire, and while it was fine for Zhou Weiqing as his honest appearance did not cause him to stand out in

the crowd, but Shangguan Bing'er's beauty could not be hidden by even the simple clothing, and she was definitely still a head-turner. Luckily, Zhou Weiqing took prompt action, quickly handing her his large Wind Hat to over her face, slightly resolving the situation. Shangguan Bing'er said: "Admiral Zhou gave me a letter, and told me to open it when I reached Heavenly Bow City."

Zhou Weiqing said curiously: "Well, let's open it and see. By the way, do you want to come home with me later? Or should I go back with you?"

Shangguan Bing'er took out a letter from her bosom, and as she heard his words, she blushed: "Little Fatty, no, we're still too small ... perhaps when we return from training in the Heavenly Bow Unit."

Traveling together these few days, Shangguan Bing'er had finally started to accept Zhou Weiqing a little, however our dear Little Fatty felt that he was still living a tragedy. In the past, Shangguan Bing'er always had a cold front towards him, and at least he didn't dare have any untoward thoughts. However, now that the two of them had some relations, with his character, how could he not have some thoughts of being intimate with her. Alas, Shangguan Bing'er refused to be overly intimate with him due to his age, and the most she would do was to hold hands with him, or the occasional rare, quick embrace, causing Zhou Weiqing to itch in his heart, but he had no choice in the matter.

Zhou Weiqing turned his hot gaze to sweep across her body, muttering to himself: "Small? I don't think that's small at all! It's just nice and perfect... hmm... probably 33 or 34C, at the age of

sixteen, that's a lot of latent potential..."

"ZHOU ... LITTLE... FATTY!" Shangguan Bing'er grabbed hold of his ear and twisted. "What are you saying??"

"Ah? Nothing! I was uhh saying, that we aren't that young, according to our country's law, sixteen is of marriageable age. You are already of suitable age, and I've matured early as well!"

Shangguan Bing'er blushed again as she said: "Maturing early still doesn't make it right. Little Fatty, I really am not prepared. I've lived along with my mom since I was young, and we depend a lot on each other, and her temper is not good. Can you wait at least 2 more years for me?"

Zhou Weiqing shrugged helplessly: "Alright, I'll listen to my wife dearest's instructions."

Shangguan Bing'er rolled her eyes at him, but seeing that he was listening to her also put her in a good mood, and she did not quibble about him taking advantage of her with his words. As she opened the letter in her hands, she saw that there was only one line written on it: "Go to the first level of the Di Hao Inn, and look for a drunkard called Luo Ke Di. Tell him this – 'I am looking for the Liu of the Unparalleled Liu Duo.' He will bring you to take the test to enter the Heavenly Bow Unit."

Shangguan Bing'er passed Zhou Weiqing the letter for him to take a look as well, and they exchanged looks. The Di Hao Inn was a rather well known landmark in the Heavenly Bow City; it was six

stories tall and was one of the largest, most well known inns in the entire city. The most interesting thing about the inn was that it catered to all walks of life, the higher the level of the inn, the higher the ranking and the price; as Heavenly Bow City citizens, they naturally knew the place.

Shangguan Bing'er said: "I shall head home first to see my mother, let's meet tomorrow at noon outside the Di Hua Inn alright?"

Zhou Weiqing could not bear to part with her, and held on to her hand.

A laugh slipped out of Shangguan Bing'er and she said: "Look at your foolish appearance." She spread her arms and gave him an embrace, and just as she was about leave, she was hugged in return by Zhou Weiqing. Of course, he didn't dare to go overboard, and just kissed her lightly on her forehead.

Watching the Shangguan Bing'er as she vanished around the corner of the street, Zhou Weiqing regained his senses and headed back home as well.

Admiral Zhou's house was a manor with a relatively small courtyard, and the entire area was less than a thousand square metres, with around a dozen servants and without a single guard. If they didn't witness it for themselves, no one would believe that the Heavenly Bow Empire's commander in chief would have a house like that. However, Admiral Zhou had said that soldiers were meant to fight on the battlefield, and not as a guard.

Even Emperor Di Feng Ling had brought up to Admiral Zhou about improving or expanding his manor, but he had always rejected it. In the empire, Admiral Zhou was one of the most respected persons, not just because he was the strongest person in the empire or the commander in chief of the army, but also because he was an extremely good role model. With a leader like that, how could the ranking officials in the Empire dare embezzle.

“Mum, I’m home!” As soon as Zhou Weiqing entered the house, he shouted at the top of his lungs.

“You little brat, you still know to come back! Did you hear that your father went back to the front lines, so you came running back? Come, let mommy see you, have been eating well? Are you thinner?” As soon as Zhou Weiqing’s shout resounded out, a voice cried out in reply, mixed with excitement, love and anger. From the inner courtyard, a lady walked out; it was Admiral Zhou’s wife, Zhou Weiqing’s mother.

Zhou Weiqing’s mother, Ling Zihan was not a great beauty, and could probably only be considered above average in terms of looks. She was a childhood friend of Admiral Zhou’s, and their love was very deep. Even after Admiral Zhou was famous, and he found out that his son’s meridians were blocked, he still didn’t bear to let his wife give birth to another child; from that you could see how much he loved his wife, and thus he did not marry again.

“Mum!!” Seeing his mother, Zhou Weiqing couldn’t help but leap forward and give her a big hug.

Ling Zihan was originally very angry with him for running away from home, but with that hug, most of the anger vanished. Lifting her hand to give Zhou Weiqing a knock on the head, she scolded: “You little brat, you think your wings are ready to spread? You actually dared to run away from home? Hmph, wasn’t it just looking at the princess bathe, how big a deal is that? Difuya that girl is your fiancée, what’s wrong with looking! Will she lose a piece of meat looking? Why did you run!?” If Shangguan Bing’er was here, she’d definitely be shocked by how doughty and intrepid Ling Zihan was.

Zhou Weiqing said with a woebegone expression: “Wasn’t that because Dad was at home? If he weren’t at home, I wouldn’t have ran.”

Ling Zihan gave a cold humph: “So what if he’s at home? As if he can beat you to death? When your father beats you, it’s for your own good. Every time he beats you, aren’t you still full of energy? Although you aren’t able to cultivate Heavenly Energy, but when he beats you, he always used Heavenly Energy to improve your body. If not for that, if that old fellow beat you for nothing, I would have dealt with him!”

Zhou Weiqing stared dumbfoundedly at his mother, only now did he know how much effort his father had spent on him, that even his beatings were not just to teach him, but to help him. All this while, although he knew his father loved him, he always thought his mum loved him more. However, listening to his mother’s words, he suddenly realised that his father’s love for him was no lesser, although he never expressed it out clearly. At that moment, the sudden shock, the sudden contrast in his heart, made him stand there in a daze, speechless.

Right at that moment, a sudden clear and enraged voice sounded out from outside the manor. “Zhou Weiqing! Get out here right now!”

The voice was extremely forceful, and gave Zhou Weiqing a fright; even Ling Zihan at his side was rather startled, after all the little brat had just returned home, how could someone find trouble with him so quickly? “What’s going on? Who’s that, you little brat?” Ling Zihan asked curiously.

Zhou Weiqing’s memory was very good, but he could not find any trace of such a voice in his memories, and he said with a puzzled face: “I do not know as well! Let me go out and see.” As he said that, he rushed out.

The Zhou Family manor did not have any guards, and only had some servants, but in all the dozens of years the manor had stood there, this was the first time that someone had dared to shout and yell outside the Admiral’s Manor, even holding a scolding tone. All the servants within the compound were rather puzzled, wondering who it was who had such guts to come here looking for trouble.

The Zhou Family Manor usually had its door open, and before Zhou Weiqing could exit, the owner of the voice had already entered.

There were two people, and on sight of them, Zhou Weiqing’s heart clutched.

It was two females, the one at the back was the person he had just parted with less than an hour ago, Shangguan Bing'er. At this moment, her face was full of worry, and her hands were being held by the woman in front, as if she had been dragged here.

The woman holding onto Shangguan Bing'er seemed to be around 30 years of age, and if Shangguan Bing'er's beauty were to be described as a little under-ripe, then this lady would be definitely in the prime of her beauty, the sort of striking looks that was usually peerless in a generation, that could even shake the spirit. Although her face was icy cold in anger, Zhou Weiqing couldn't help but stare a little. Shangguan Bing'er and the lady had very similar features, and without question Zhou Weiqing knew who she was.

"Who's Zhou Weiqing? the middle aged lady asked coldly, her breathing was obviously ragged as if the sheer rage surrounding her was igniting the very air.

"Aunty, how are you, I am Zhou Weiqing." Zhou Weiqing did not dare hesitate, and quickly stepped forward, looking at her with his honest expression.

"Who's your aunty? You're Zhou Weiqing? Good, I've been looking for you. Do you want to take your own life, or do you want me to take action personally?" When the middle aged lady looked at Zhou Weiqing, he felt a cold shiver run down his spine, as if his body was being pierced by two sharp swords.

"Is there need to be so ruthless...?" Zhou Weiqing asked, dumbfounded.

Chapter 27 – Zhou Weiqing’s Sixth Attribute

(1)

“Do you want to take your own life, or do you want me to take action personally?” His future mother-in-law had dragged Shangguan Bing’er to his doorstep, and the first line she said was this, causing Zhou Weiqing to be unbelievably shocked. Although he had guessed that his future mother-in-law would be extremely angry after finding out what had happened to Shangguan Bing’er, he had not expected her to be so intrepid, and come knocking.

When Zhou Weiqing’s mother Ling Zihan saw Shangguan Bing’er’s mother, it was as if she was struck by a bolt of lightning, and she stood there shocked and silent, with an obviously strange expression on her face.

“Mom!” Shangguan Bing’er quickly rushed in front of her mother with a harried expression on her face. “Mum, listen to me! It was all a misunderstanding, it wasn’t Little Fatty’s fault!” Although she knew Zhou Weiqing’s real identity, but she was still used to calling him Little Fatty.

Today, when she returned home, when her mother had taken a look at her, she had already discovered that she had transformed from a young girl to a young woman. The normally gentle and kind mother had been extremely furious, forcing her to say what had happened. After which, she had been dragged all the way to the Admiral’s Manor.

Shangguan Bing’er’s mother said coldly: “Accidentally killing someone, isn’t it still killing someone? Who are you that you can

use my daughter's virtue as your Sacrifice to Awaken your Heavenly Jewels? Zhou Weiqing, if you are a man, you better commit suicide in front of me, and take responsibility for your actions."

Listening to her words, Zhou Weiqing couldn't help but get angry as well. "Aunty, you do not have to worry, I will definitely take responsibility for Bing'er, and I will definitely not shirk it. No matter what the reason was, I have indeed taken her virtue, but I mostly definitely will not commit suicide in front of you; that would be irresponsible and cause more harm to Bing'er. I will spend my life to repay her, love her, and take care of her."

Shangguan Bing'er's mother said scornfully: "You? You think you deserve my daughter?"

"Mum!" Shangguan Bing'er was rather anxious in her heart; one side was her mother, and the other side was the man she had accepted; being stuck in the middle was extremely painful for her.

Zhou Weiqing looked at her, not backing down a whit. "You're right, I know that with my looks, I probably do not deserve Bing'er. But what can those good looking men do for her, does that really mean they will treat her well? I can be like a bear; on ordinary days, I'll be lying down, acting foolish yet cute, and she can hug me for warmth or use me as a pillow. In a harsh winter when there is nothing to eat, I am willing to sacrifice myself as food reserves; and in times of danger, I will stand tall and become the most ferocious Heavenly Beast." When Shangguan Bing'er heard Zhou Weiqing's words, she was dazed with sentiment, her eyes turning red as her eyes grew resolute.

When Shangguan Bing'er's mother heard his words, her body trembled a little, and her expression changed, the fierce gaze seeming to waver a little, as if she was remembering something unpleasant. Subsequently, an unbelievably terrifying aura spread out from her, the likes of which Zhou Weiqing had never felt before.

“What a glib tongue you have boy, let me see, what can you rely on to give my daughter happiness.” As she said that, her eyes flared up, and with a wave of her left hand, Shangguan Bing'er stumbled to the side and found herself unable to move. She was extremely shocked as she did not even know that her mother had such a terrifying power.

The next moment, the beautiful middle aged lady appeared right in front of Zhou Weiqing, her hand hurtling towards his shoulder. Although she was very fierce in her words, she knew her daughter was now having a relationship with this young man, and despite her needing to vent her anger on him, she did not overdo things.

Zhou Weiqing had been training hard these last few weeks, and being attacked suddenly, the Immortal Deity Shield hidden beneath his skin immediately came into effect, and his five energy whirlpools started spinning at top speed, his Heavenly Jewels already appearing around his wrists. With a silver flash of light, he subconsciously used Blink, barely dodging the Shangguan Bing'er's mother's blow.

Zhou Weiqing felt the hairs on his entire body standing as a chill ran down his spine. He had the feeling that if he had been hit

by that blow, he would have taken a huge injury. That beautiful middle aged lady looked rather frail, but the stress that she gave to him was unprecedented, even compared to when his father was seriously trying to beat him.

“Ehh? Blink?” The middle aged lady looked at Zhou Weiqing with some surprise, after all it was definitely not easy to dodge that blow of hers, which could easily change directions.

“Wait!” At the same time, another voice sounded out, as Ling Zihan finally awoke from her shocked trance. With a step forward, she stood before her son, saying with an excited expression on her face: “You... you’re Tang Xian Elder Sis?”

When Ling Zihan said those words, everyone started, especially Zhou Weiqing; as from appearance, his mother looked at least 7-8 years older than the middle aged lady. More surprising was the fact that they knew each other! Tang Xian looked puzzlingly at Ling Zihan, saying: “You are...?”

Ling Zihan said enthusiastically as she rushed forward: “Tang Xian Elder Sis! Look carefully, it’s me, Zihan! Those years ago, you and Shangguan Elder Brother saved me at the Dragonpit Riverside. You also stayed at my house for over a month, and at that time you said you liked the environment of my house. I was still a little girl at that time, and Shui Niu was studying at the Jewel Master Academy.” Tang Xian’s eyes showed surprise and happiness as she said: “You’re little Zihan? It seems just like yesterday, yet already twenty years have passed.”

Ling Zihan held onto Tang Xian’s hand and said: “Yes, it’s me!

It's been twenty years, and I've grown so old, but Tang Xian Elder Sis, you're still just as beautiful as you were."

Zhou Weiqing's mouth twitched; he had never expected that his mother and his future mother-in-law would know each other. It was lucky that they knew each other too, this future mother-in-law seemed unbelievably powerful, and if his mother did not intervene, he would have been in serious trouble.

As he thought about that, he silently sidled to the side and helped up Shangguan Bing'er from the ground. At this point, she had also recovered her ability to move, and both of them exchange strange looks. Tang Xian's eyes suddenly changed and she whipped her head around to stare at Zhou Weiqing: "Zihan, this little brat, who is he to you?"

Ling Zihan knew Tang Xian's power very well, and quickly gripped her hands tightly, saying: "Tang Xian Elder Sis, this is my son; mine and Shui Niu's son. He is our only son, if he has done any wrong, please punish me instead Elder Sis."

Tang Xian drew a deep breath, and slowly released it, as she continued glaring at Zhou Weiqing: "Zihan, if it were any other thing, I would have easily forgiven him. However, this son of yours took my daughter's virtue. How could I possibly let him go?"

"Ah? He just returned home, I'm also not sure what is going on. Weiqing, get over here now and kneel down to your Aunt Tang Xian." Ling Zihan said furiously at Zhou Weiqing, although Shangguan Bing'er, who was standing beside him, could clearly see her giving him a signal with her eyes.

Zhou Weiqing braced himself as he walked forward, thinking to himself: Kneeling to my mother-in-law, that isn't so bad. At least it's not some outsider. Lowering his head, he walked to the front and kneeled down.

Ling Zihan said: "Tang Xian Elder Sis, we haven't met for so many years, where are you staying now? Where's Shangguan Elder Brother? Is he good?"

"Don't mention him." Tang Xian revealed a angry and suffering face. "I brought Bing'er to the Heavenly Bow City, but I never expected that you to be here, nor did I expect that the Shui Niu you mentioned years ago would actually turn out to be the Admiral Zhou of Heavenly Bow Empire.

Ling Zihan gave her son a kick and said: "Little brat, speak now and tell us what happened?"

Zhou Weiqing once again told his tale, and Tang Xian's face remained icy, while Ling Zihan was totally dumbfounded.

At this moment, Shangguan Bing'er also stepped forward to Zhou Weiqing's side and knelt down in front of her mother. "Mum, I also like Little Fatty. What happened in the past was a mistake, and wasn't his fault. After that, on the battlefield, Little Fatty saved my life twice, and was even willing to sacrifice his life for me when we were surrounded by the Forest Direwolves, attempting to let me escape. Mum, I will not like another man in my life again. If you kill him, then you must kill me as well."

Shangguan Bing'er's words caused both Zhou Weiqing and Ling Zihan to be visibly moved, and the shock and excitement in Zhou Weiqing's heart almost caused him to lose his composure. This was the first time Shangguan Bing'er had actually admitted verbally that she liked him, and especially that line that she would never like another man again, it struck the softest spot in Zhou Weiqing's heart. At the same time Ling Zihan was very touched, thinking to herself: That little girl doesn't seem to have inherited her mother's fiery temper, that's lucky, that's lucky.

"You..." Tang Xian's brow furrowed, before she sighed and said: "[Grown girls are hard to keep at home... grown girls are hard to keep at home](#). Sigh, never mind, this little brat Zhou Weiqing shall have the advantage... show me your Heavenly Jewels."

Tang Xian originally brought her daughter here because she was angry, but also as a bluff, a show of strength. As a mother, how could she not see that her daughter really liked that Zhou Weiqing, but as a mother, she also wanted to vent her anger and also test that little rascal as well. Zhou Weiqing's performance had satisfied her, and with Ling Zihan mediating, he was saved the beating as well. After all, he was a Heavenly Jewel Master, one with the Spatial Attribute, and could be considered a decent match for her daughter. She just wanted to verify what attribute his Elemental Jewel was.

Zhou Weiqing showed his wrists dutifully, and when Tang Xian saw the blue-green Cat's Eye Jewel around his wrist, her face changed instantly and she grabbed Zhou Weiqing's left hand, saying in shock: "Alexandrite Cat's Eye?"

Zhou Weiqing felt Tang Xian's hand like a vice around his wrist, causing it to hurt, and he gave a bitter smile as he nodded: "Yes! Auntie, that is an Alexandrite Cat's Eye."

Tang Xian seemed stunned as she said rather absentmindedly: "What attributes?"

Zhou Weiqing said: "Wind, Lightning, Spatial, Darkness, Evil..." As he said up to there, he paused a moment, then continued resolutely: "And one more attribute that I haven't been able to identify."

This time, even Shangguan Bing'er was surprised; she had not known that Zhou Weiqing still had a sixth attribute.

Zhou Weiqing looked at her apologetically, nodding his head. He did not want to hide anything further from Shangguan Bing'er, her words just now had touched him deeply.

That's the literal translation of 女大不中留, usually used as a lament by parents as their daughters grow up and need to be married off into another family. In Chinese culture, the female is married into the male's family, so they 'lose' their daughter in that sense.

Chapter 27 – Zhou Weiqing’s Sixth Attribute (2)

“Six attributes, it’s actually six attributes!” Tang Xian’s look at Zhou Weiqing changed, and all of a sudden she laughed out loud. Originally an exquisite beauty, her laugh made the surroundings seem to pale in comparison. “Haha... Shangguan Yue, you old fellow. Hmph, aren’t you always so proud about your talent, you’re merely a four attribute Alexandrite Cat’s Eye!”

As she said that, her gaze fell upon Zhou Weiqing once more: “You said earlier that you do not know what the sixth attribute is... have you Stored Skills for it?”

Zhou Weiqing nodded and said: “I have stored one. In the Skill Storing Palace, I chanced upon a small little cat with three eyes which kept staring at me. I had no idea what attribute it was, but I just tried Skill-Storing anyway, and I didn’t expect it to just succeed like that. However, that Skill doesn’t seem to be very useful, after all its range is 5 yards, and its might isn’t very strong.”

“Three-eyed cat?” Tang Xian’s body shuddered a little as she gave a start. “Use on me one time.”

“Okay” Zhou Weiqing agreed easily. The skill of his sixth Attribute did not seem to be an attack type skill, so he was not worried about trying it on Tang Xian.

As the attribute wheel in his eyes spun towards to colourless

wheel, he activated the stored skill, which surprisingly did not require much Heavenly Energy, only about the same as the Fetters of Wind.

As he lifted his left hand, Tang Xian, Ling Zihan and Shangguan Bing'er saw the Alexandrite Cat's Eye on his left wrist flash with a sudden light, which warped about and vanished as it landed on Tang Xian's body.

Tang Xian slowly raised her right hand, as her expression abruptly changed. "It truly is The Tyrannical Killer – The 3 Eyed Dragon Cat's unique skill, Absolute Delay. Good Heavens! You little monster. Wait, that's wrong! Even the Fei Li Empire's Skill Storing Palace shouldn't have such a rare Heavenly Beast like the 3 Eyed Dragon Cat. Zhou Weiqing, what colour was the 3 Eyed Dragon Cat that you Stored the Skill from?"

Zhou Weiqing thought a bit and replied: "I think it was yellow."

Tang Xian said in sudden understanding: "No wonder. The Fei Li Empire's Skill Storing Palace really got lucky; they actually managed to catch a youngling of the 3 Eyed Dragon Cat. An adult 3 Eyed Dragon Cat is already beyond a Zong Stage Heavenly Beast, and would definitely be a nightmare for most Heavenly Jewel Masters, who would dare to catch it?"

As she said that, she gave a strange look at Zhou Weiqing. "Even a youngling 3 Eyed Dragon Cat is already a Zong Stage Heavenly Beast; you're only of the level of a single Jewel, and you could actually Store its Skill? Furthermore, you managed to get its unique skill Absolute Delay. This isn't just something that can be

explained by luck.”

Zhou Weiqing grinned and said: “Perhaps that little 3 Eyed Dragon Cat found me pleasing to the eye and decided to gift it to me.”

Ling Zihan saw her son’s smug appearance, and couldn’t help but scold him: “Smelly little brat, in front of your Aunt Tang Xian, what do you have to be smug about!”

Who knew that Tang Xian said instead: “Let him be smug, he definitely has the right. Zihan Little Sis, you do not know, but that skill, Absolute Delay, is something that even that old Shangguan Yue will be envious of.”

Zhou Weiqing rubbed his nose and said curiously: “Aunty, I didn’t find it very useful though! The range of effect is so low, and it seems like it only works for one second.”

Tang Xian gave a humph and said: “What do you know! Absolute Delay is a monstrously strong skill, and can be even considered a heaven defying skill. Amongst the Di Huang Stage Heavenly Beasts, it is still considered one of the top skills. Furthermore, do not forget that you’re still only at the cultivation level of a single set of Heavenly Jewels, and your Stored Skills will improve and evolve as you get more Heavenly Jewels. When you reach 6 Sets of Jewels, you will find out how scary this Skill truly is.”

“I’ll give you a piece of advice though; the true strength of the Absolute Delay lies in two places...”

“The first is the that it’s an ability that can be easily manipulated around, and can be used with perfect compatibility with any Consolidated Equipment or Skill. You and Bing’er are both archers, so I’ll just give a simple example. If an enemy is using a weapon to block your arrow, but your arrow stops in the air for a second before continuing, what would happen?”

Listening to Tang Xian’s explanation, Zhou Weiqing and Shangguan Bing’er couldn’t help but show a startled expression.

Tang Xian continued saying: “The second key point about it is the word ‘Absolute’. That is to say, it will definitely succeed and have the same effect no matter how strong your opponent is, no matter the cultivation level difference. Although one second might seem like a very short time, but in a fight between experts, a second of delay can be the difference between victory and defeat, the difference between life and death. You should train hard on this Skill, and it will be useful to you all your life.”

Zhou Weiqing nodded and said: “Thank you Auntie.”

Tang Xian did not seem to have heard him, continuing to mutter to herself: “Actually being able to Store the Absolute Delay Skill, looks like your mysterious sixth attribute is time, one of the three Saint Attributes that only the owner of an Alexandrite Cat’s Eye can have. Furthermore, there is the spatial attribute to complement it...”

“Wind attribute for speed, Lightning attribute for damage,

Spatial Attribute for constant change in the battlefield, Darkness for mystery, Evil for supplementing, and Time for Rhythm. This is almost the perfect mix.”

Shangguan Bing’ had never known that her mother was actually so powerful, and had such profound knowledge about Heavenly Jewel Masters. As she heard her mother speak, she couldn’t help but ask: “Mum, what are the three Saint Attributes?”

Tang Xian said solemnly: The three Saint Attributes refer to the Divine Attribute, Spirit Attribute, and Time Attribute. Actually, there should be four Saint Attributes, Evil was also once considered a Saint Attribute. However, because the Evil Attribute brings about too many negative side effects for the Heavenly Jewels, and furthermore it is not restricted to Alexandrite Cat’s Eyes, it’s total power is a little less than the three Saint Attributes that I mentioned earlier, thus it was removed from consideration. Bing’er, I have to say that your luck was actually pretty good.”

Shangguan Bing’er flushed deeply, giving Zhou Weiqing, who was grinning smugly at the side, a 180 degree pinch, before lowering her head in embarrassment.

Tang Xian looked at Zhou Weiqing with a stern look: “Zhou Weiqing, I have to remind you. Although you are considered to be extremely gifted and talented, you have to know that no matter how talented a person is, without hard work and cultivation you will still not amount to anything. Furthermore, before you break through to the level of 6 sets of Heavenly Jewels, it is not difficult to kill you; any Heavenly Jewel Masters who have a higher cultivation level will still be able to handle you. At most, you can

be considered outstanding amongst those of the same level.”

Zhou Weiqing said simply: “What about after six sets of Heavenly Jewels?”

Tang Xian said passively: “After six sets of Heavenly Jewels, it should be enough for you to protect yourself. After nine sets, you will be hard pressed to find an opponent in the world.”

Zhou Weiqing grinned and said: “Heh heh, Thank you aunty for your teachings.”

Tang Xian glared at him and said: “You’re already having this relationship with my daughter, are you still calling me aunty?”

Zhou Weiqing blinked, and instantly understood the underlying meaning, and he quickly said with flattering tone: “Mum...” As he said that, he criticised in his heart: When you first came, you still said I did not deserve your daughter, in such a short time you already admitting I’m your son-in-law; such a quick change! Of course, how could he know, it was only people of Tang Xian’s power levels that could truly understand how terrifying and monstrous it meant to have those six attributes.

Tang Xian nodded in satisfaction, while Shangguan Bing’er looked on dumbfoundedly. That rascal, his skin was just too thick, how could her mum also ...

Tang Xian glanced at her daughter and said: “Nevermind, you

should just call me Aunty for now. When you two are married, then you can change. Bing'er, you better keep watch on him, don't let anyone snatch him away. When you two grow older in a few years time, you can get married. Zihan, us two sisters haven't met in such a long time, aren't you going to invite us in?"

"Ah! Tang Xian Elder Sis, quick, come in!" Ling Zihan quickly responded. At this point, if we were to say who was the happiest in the whole scene, it had to be her. In her heart, Shangguan Yue and Tang Xian were like gods descended upon earth! Seeing her son being able to marry their daughter – in fact, Tang Xian seemed rather eager to do so, if not for the fact that her son was still young, it was likely they would host the wedding now – how could she not be happy and excited? Although it was the first time she had met Shangguan Bing'er, but from the earlier words she spoke, Ling Zihan already liked this future daughter-in-law; furthermore, she had heard the name of this most beautiful young lady in the Empire many times before.

Seeing that both his mother and future mother-in-law had entered the house, Zhou Weiqing finally couldn't resist any longer. Sticking his hands to his waist, he started laughing in glee "Wahaha! Wife, now you can't run any longer! Even mother-in-law has agreed."

Shangguan Bing'er couldn't help but wish that a hole in the earth would open up and swallow her, and she gave him a quick kick before running away.

Tang Xian and Ling Zihan chatted till very late before leaving late at night, and before leaving they agreed to meet up more often.

After his mother had seen Tang Xian off, Zhou Weiqing finally ran into her room with a stomachful of doubts. “Mum, how did you know my future mother-in-law? From your reaction, it seems as if she is even more powerful than dad?”

Ling Zihan was in a very good mood now, and she couldn't help but laugh as she said: “Little brat, your luck is really good!”

“That year, I was only a teenager, and I met a Heavenly Beast at the river side, and almost died there and then. Luckily, I was rescued by Shangguan Yue and Tang Xian who had been travelling the parts. At that time, your father was still studying and training in the academy, and was not at home; we were still not married at that time. To repay them, I invited them back to my house to stay, and they really loved it there at your (maternal) grandfather's house, and so they stayed for a while. I do not know their origins, but they are definitely extremely powerful. I do not know what Tang Xian Elder Sis' cultivation level is for sure, but twenty years ago, when Shangguan Elder Brother killed that Heavenly Beast, the Elemental Jewel around his wrist was similar to yours, but he had ten of them!”

“Ten sets?!” Zhou Weiqing's eyes widened and he couldn't help but exclaim in shock. A Heavenly Jewel Master with an Alexandrite Cat's Eye, with ten sets of Jewels! What kind of power and strength was that? Even his father was only had eight sets of Heavenly Jewels, and furthermore was only of a single attribute, yet he was already considered the strongest in the entire Heavenly Bow Empire. Twenty years ago, he had already had ten sets of Heavenly Jewels, that was already beyond the Zong stage. By now, who knows what his power levels had grown to. Zhou Weiqing had

never expected that Shangguan Bing'er's father would be so powerful!

Chapter 27 – Zhou Weiqing’s Sixth Attribute (3)

Ling Zihan sighed softly and said: “Shangguan Yue Elder Bro is about 20 years older than Tang Xian Elder Sis, but the first time I saw them, he still looked middle aged. At that time, Tang Xian Elder Sis was slightly older than me, but look at her now, doesn’t she still look so young? My guess is that her cultivation levels are probably at least equal to your father’s. As for Shangguan Big Brother, he should be an unimaginable top level expert. Alas, I do not know what happened between the two of them; according to the little that Tang San Elder Sis mentioned, they have already separated for over ten years, but she refused to go into detail.”

Zhou Weiqing scratched his head and grinned, comforting himself by saying: “In any case, [the rice is cooked](#). Even if they are very strong, it does not concern me too much. Mum, do not worry, eventually, your son will be as strong as them!” As he said that, he gave Ling Zihan a hug, and kissed her cheek.

Ling Zihan tousled her son’s hair, sighing as she said: “Little Wei, your father has made you suffer a lot in order to let you learn how to protect yourself, my heart ached as well even though it was for the best. So, what do you plan on doing from now? What about you and Difuya’s marriage?”

Zhou Weiqing said: “Regarding Difuya’s marriage with me, I will have to talk to Godfather about it... Love requires both sides to be harmonious, and I’m sure Godfather will understand and not force me. He wanted to give Difuya’s hand in marriage to me mostly to repay Dad for what he has done for the Empire, to allow me, who

was once just a trash, to have some status in the Empire. However, I'm now a Heavenly Jewel Master, and that isn't necessary anymore."

"No matter what, I will never marry Difuya. I already met with Dad earlier in the army camp, and he asked me to join the Heavenly Bow Unit for training. Tomorrow, Bing'er and I will be reporting there."

"Heavenly Bow Unit?" Ling Zihan's expression grew a little strange. "Little Wei, when you go there, you mustn't be corrupted by them and turn bad."

"Mum, I'm your son, am I that bad? Furthermore, why would I be corrupted by going to the Heavenly Bow Unit?" Zhou Weiqing asked in surprise.

Ling Zihan gave a humph and said: "Go, go. When you reach there, you will know what I mean. Anyway, the Heavenly Bow Unit isn't very far from the Heavenly Bow City, remember to come back and visit me often!"

The next day, when Zhou Weiqing reached the Di Hao Inn, it was already lunch time. Today, he was well prepared, bringing along all of his savings with him, along with ten gold that his mum had given him. The Di Hao Inn's speciality was that it served customers from all walks of life, and their food was well known in the parts for being delicious, and Zhou Weiqing planned to give Shangguan Bing'er a good treat before they entered the Heavenly Bow Unit.

Seeing Shangguan Bing'er approach from the distance, he quickly waved at her, calling out: "Bing'er, here!"

Today, Shangguan Bing'er was still dressed in a cloth attire; she seldom dressed up or used make up, but her natural beauty still shone from within. The only difference from yesterday was that she now had a Wind Hat of her own, covering her beautiful features. She did not like being stared at by others as a spectacle; furthermore she was so well known in the Heavenly Bow City, as such this was a measure she decided to take. Shangguan Bing'er quickly walked up to him, a faint blush tinging her cheeks as she said in a low tone: "Let's go in."

Looking at her pretty and abashed look, Zhou Weiqing's heart stirred and he held her hand. To his surprise and delight, Shangguan Bing'er only gave a token struggle before allowing him to hold her hand.

The pair entered the Di Hao inn like that; it was currently lunch hour and the first level was almost seventy percent full. Zhou Weiqing brought her to an empty table and was about to call for food, but she said: "Little Fatty, I've already eaten. We're here to look for someone!"

Looking at her hemming and hawing, Zhou Weiqing said solemnly: "No, you can eat again with me, a husband treating a wife, isn't it something normal. I won't lack this bit of funds, come, let's order, let's order."

As he said that, he stole a glance at Shangguan Bing'er, only to see her blushing again with her head down, looking unbearably

adorable. It was clear that Shangguan Bing'er's bearing towards him had improved by leaps and bounds... it was the power of the mother-in-law!

In truth, he had truly guessed correctly, and Shangguan Bing'er's attitude towards him was also largely due to Tang Xian. Shangguan Bing'er had grown up together with her mother, and did not have any memory of her father. It could be said that her mother was her only kin. Furthermore, she was a very filial person, and when Tang Xian acknowledged Zhou Weiqing as her son-in-law to be, it had actually removed the last barrier between the two of them, and now that she faced Zhou Weiqing once again, she no longer had any more misgivings. The barriers around her heart were down, but luckily Zhou Weiqing did not know the truth, or that rascal would likely try get a foot after taking an inch!

Zhou Weiqing ordered some food, but did not overdo it in consideration of Shangguan Bing'er; he ordered 2 meat and 2 vegetable dishes, and also 2 large bowls of rice. After a short while, the food was served and the delicious smell wafted in the air.

"Bing'er, quickly eat while its hot. You're too thin, you should eat more, so you can develop better. Heh heh." Zhou Weiqing quickly piled food into her bowl, filling it up in a small mountain.

Looking at Zhou Weiqing's attentive disposition, and the food piled up in front of her, Shangguan Bing'er's eyes suddenly reddened, and she looked a little pitifully at Zhou Weiqing and said: "Little Fatty, will you always treat me well?"

"Ah?" Zhou Weiqing started. He did not expect his teasing words

to be met with such melancholy from Shangguan Bing'er. "What are you thinking about, Bing'er? Of course I'll always treat you well; forever and ever. Why do you suddenly ask?"

Shangguan Bing'er lowered her head and muttered: "My mum said that my dad abandoned us when I was just two years old, and she left home together with me and came to Heavenly Bow City to stay. My mum is so miserable, I often see her sitting alone at home lost in thought, she must be thinking about my father. I'm so afraid, afraid that one day I'll end up like her..."

Looking at her like that, Zhou Weiqing felt a stabbing pain in his heart, and he got up and sat next to her, enveloping her in a warm embrace. "Bing'er, don't cry, it's hard to say what really happened, and it isn't our position to discuss about our elders, but I swear that unless you don't want me anymore, otherwise I'll always be your Little Fatty."

Shangguan Bing'er lifted up her head to look at him and said: "You'll always be my bear?"

Zhou Weiqing nodded, and couldn't resist kissing her lightly on her forehead, causing her to turn tears into laughter, snuggling a little into his embrace, and she said: "Let's eat now, before it gets cold."

Zhou Weiqing said seriously: "Let me hug you a while more, and I will be full. You're a feast for the eyes, a feast that can't be bought by riches alone! Bing'er, look... don't you think we should ignore the age issue?"

Shangguan Bing'er pushed him aside exasperatedly and said: "Hmph, I give you an inch and you want one foot, it's not so easy as that! My mum said that when men do not know how to appreciate things that they get too easily. So I've decided to extend the time even further. We shall wait till you are twenty years old then we can talk."

"Nooooooooo!!" Zhou Weiqing gave a horrified scream, it was a little loud and instantly drew the attention of the nearby customers.

Shangguan Bing'er flushed in embarrassment and hit him lightly: "Let's eat quickly, we're here to handle proper business."

Zhou Weiqing asked in a foolish tone: "What's more proper than wedding festivities?"

Shangguan Bing'er's face fell and she said: "If you don't stop talking nonsense and eat with me, I'll extend the time further!"

"I'll eat with you now alright." Zhou Weiqing lamented. In his heart though he made a firm resolution that when they reached the Heavenly Bow Unit, he would have to find an opportunity to take her. As long as she gave in to him once, would there be a lack of a second time, a third time, or perhaps more? As he thought about that, he started grinning foolishly.

As Zhou Weiqing wolfed down his food, Shangguan Bing'er chewed slowly and daintily. Soon, she found out the reason why

that fellow started off by piling food in her bowl; she had barely finished off a third of her food when he had already polished off all the remaining food and his large bowl of rice. “Ahh, that was great, it’s been a long time since I had such great food. Although the army mess has no lack of food, but in terms of taste, it’s just too lacking.” Zhou Weiqing said as he patted his belly.

Shangguan Bing’er giggled and pushed her bowl towards him: “If you aren’t full, you can have the rest of mine. I really did eat earlier, you know my habits.”

Zhou Weiqing blinked and took it unrestrainedly, and once again wolfed down the remaining food. This time, it seemed that he enjoyed it even more. “[Eating to my fill, with a lingering fragrance in my mouth.](#)” As he said that, he looked suggestively at her lips.

Shangguan Bing’er ignored him and said softly: “Little Fatty, look, isn’t that the person we are looking for?”

Zhou Weiqing’s gaze followed where she was pointing at, to see a middle aged man seated at the corner of the hall. The man seemed to be around 30 years of age, dressed in white, and was rather handsome, with a long black cape draped behind him, causing him to look rather suave. However, his gaze seemed to wander a lot, drifting about as he scanned the crowd.

On the table in front of him, there were at least a dozen wine bottles. Drinking so many bottles of wine, even if they could be the lower quality rice wine with a lower alcohol content, it was still pretty impressive. This was the main reason why Shangguan Bing’er said that he could be their target.

Since Admiral Zhou had told them to look for a drunkard in this Di Hao Inn, their target was most likely someone who came here daily to drink. From Shangguan Bing'er's observations since they entered the place, that middle aged man was definitely the one who had drank the most.

Zhou Weiqing immediately volunteered: "I'll go ask", and he headed towards the man. As he reached the man, he asked in a guileless tone and expression: "Excuse me, are you Mr Luo Ke Di?"

The drunkard rolled his eyes and a slightly sharp voice sounded out: "Get lost, do not block Your Father, I, from watching beauties. I was just looking at a 38E, and you little brat blocked me."

Hearing his words, Zhou Weiqing was dumbfounded, and a strange sense of familiarity enveloped him, and he subconsciously said: "I'm looking for the Liu of the Unparalleled Liu Duo."

literal translation of the idiom 生米煮成熟饭, meaning that what's done is done, it's too late to change anything now. Usually used to describe a couple having 'done it' already

That's actually the meaning of the idiom he uses (唇齿留香), but he is also using it as a pun here as it can be literally translated as lips leaving fragrance, he is teasing her by saying that the food she left for him was tastier because of her lips.

Chapter 28 – [Lethal ‘Weapon’](#) (1)

“En??” The middle aged man stood up suddenly, shoving Zhou Weiqing to the side, his somewhat blurry eyes fixed attentively in a direction. He then said exasperatedly: “Dammit kid, it’s all your fault, the E Cup has left. Sigh, it isn’t easy to find such a large one, is it easy to be Your Father, I? Wait, why are you a male? Old Zhou said it would be a beautiful girl!” As he said that, he seized up Zhou Weiqing.

Zhou Weiqing grinned and said: “Heh heh, That must be you are Luo Ke Di Senior. There are two of us, the other is a girl, and I joined later. Admiral Zhou asked us both to look for you together.”

“So there really is a beautiful girl! Where?!” Luo Ke Di immediately perked up at the sound of that.

Zhou Weiqing blinked, thinking to himself: What sort of person was this? Was this really the well respected Heavenly Bow Unit that Shangguan Bing’er mentioned? Why does he seem so similar to that weird old man! Of course, he isn’t as vulgar as that old rascal, but he’s a lot more straightforward.

Zhou Weiqing turned and waved towards Shangguan Bing’er, beckoning her over, and she immediately started walking over. As she did so, Zhou Weiqing heard Luo Ke Di muttering to himself: “Looks not bad, but only 33 inches... not my type.” Very quickly, Shangguan Bing’er had reached them and she gave a respectful bow and senior: “Hello Senior.”

Luo Ke Di's narrowed eyes suddenly lit up, and he said: "A blemish does not obscure a jade! Although a little small, but extremely likable."

To Shangguan Bing'er, when he said small, she naturally thought he was referring to her age, but Zhou Weiqing instantly knew what he was referring to, and without batting an eyelid, he said: "Senior, there's a top quality one over there."

"Eh? Where?" Luo Ke Di immediately perked up.

Zhou Weiqing pointed to a lady who was sitting alone at a table just a short distance away. She was eating alone, and there were several dishes lined up on her table. The strange thing was that although the entire hall was nearly filled up to 80% capacity, the tables surrounding her were still empty.

The woman's back was facing Luo Ke Di, and he had not noticed her previously. However, now that he looked closely, his heart trembled. Her head of black hair was combed neatly behind, with a graceful figure and a long green dress that seemed to be of extraordinary quality. The thing that attracted Luo Ke Di most was that, from the angle he had, he could see that her bosom was of imposing size. "At least 38 inches! Heavens! That is literally a Lethal 'Weapon'! It's probably an F Cup too! That is truly a rare, magnificent sight."

Luo Ke Di swallowed hard before turning to Zhou Weiqing and saying solemnly: "Hey lad, I'll go pay the bill, and when I walk past the table, you call out to me. You know what I mean!" As he said that, he winked at Zhou Weiqing, then started walking towards the

green clad lady. Zhou Weiqing gave him a knowing smile, but Shangguan Bing'er started and asked curiously: "What does he mean?"

Zhou Weiqing grinned and said: "He'll walk over, and I'll call him, and he can use the opportunity to turn around and look at her."

Shangguan Bing'er got a strange look in her eyes as she said: "Is he... really the person we're looking for? Why is he even worse than you..."

By now, Luo Ke Di had walked past the table, and Zhou Weiqing quickly cooperated and called out: "Luo Ke Di, you still have half a bottle of wine unfinished here!"

With the cue given, Luo Ke Di turned around in a suave motion, it was such a natural, innocent movement, and his eyes just 'happened' to rest on the lady sitting alone.

In the next instant, Luo Ke Di seemed to freeze in place, his entire body stopping and not moving an inch, in his mind two phrases reverberated... So big... Save me... Indeed, that green clad lady had a pair of lethal 'weapons'; as expected it was an F cup of massive proportions. However, the problem was, her face was also a true lethal weapon! The left side of the face was like the surface of the moon, full of craters and pockmarks, and the right half of the face was filled with pimples. Her thick sausage lips stretched almost to both ears, while the pair of unevenly placed beady eyes glittered with yellow light. The strangest thing was that, her face was strangely shaped, with the top part small and a wide jaw, and her

chin filled with some stubble. Top quality... this was indeed an unbelievable top quality; even if you tried to look like that, it would be difficult!

From Zhou Weiqing and Shangguan Bing'er's angle, they could see that Luo Ke Di's face turned red, then white, and green, and purple... His chest heaving as he wrestled with his emotions.

At that time, the 'lethal weapon' looked up to see Luo Ke Di staring at her, and immediately gave him a coquettish look and said: "This handsome gentleman, would you like to have a meal with me?"

Luo Ke Di's expression suddenly calmed down, and he seemed to recover himself, saying unhurriedly: "My apologies, beautiful lady, I would love to do so but I'm afraid I have some urgent business to take care off. Perhaps next time." He then looked back at Zhou Weiqing and Shangguan Bing'er and said passively: "I'll be waiting for you both outside." After he said that, he turned around in a suave, charming manner, and walked off. Although he looked extremely calm, Zhou Weiqing could see that his steps were growing ever faster, and as soon as he reached the exit of the Di Hao Inn, Zhou Weiqing could hear the faint sounds of retching.

Zhou Weiqing's face revealed a brilliant, honest looking smile, and he turned to Shangguan Bing'er and said: "Looks like this Senior Luo isn't feeling very well! Let's go as well Bing'er. Don't look back!" As he said that, he pulled Shangguan Bing'er towards the exit, and he thought evilly to himself: You old fellow, trying to fantasize about my wife, that's your punishment! Hmph!

As soon as they left the inn, they saw Luo Ke Di squatting down at the corner of the exit, vomiting his guts out. The smell of alcohol filled the air, and clearly he had just expelled everything he had eaten and drank.

Zhou Weiqing pulled Shangguan Bing'er further away, with his signature smile still on his face. Although Shangguan Bing'er didn't know exactly what had happened, but she could guess a little, and she said softly: "Little Fatty, you're too mean!"

Zhou Weiqing said gently: "As they say, tit for tat is fair play. I'm truly suspicious about what my dad said about this Unparalleled Liu Duo, could it be the Liu of Liu Mang?"

After some time, Luo Ke Di finally recovered, and as he lifted up his head to look at Zhou Weiqing and Shangguan Bing'er, his expression was surprisingly unperturbed, as if nothing had happened earlier. Walking close to the two of them, he smiled as he said to Zhou Weiqing: "Little bro, is that what you call top quality?"

Zhou Weiqing's face expression was honest and guileless, and with a hint of confusion in his voice, he said: "Yes! When I walked passed her just now, I was extremely shocked too. Such a top quality ugly lady, it's hard to find in the world. Senior, what happened to you just now? Is your stomach upset?" Luo Ke Di's expression looked somewhat depressed, and he sighed lightly as he said: "Indeed top quality... anyway, you both, come with me." As he said that, he started walking towards the Heavenly Bow City's exit.

Being looked at by that depressed look, Zhou Weiqing suddenly felt a chill run down his spine, as if he had been bitten by a venomous snake. That man... was certainly one of a kind as well. As Luo Ke Di walked slowly in front, he led the pair out of the Heavenly Bow City, to the left and about 500 metres forward before he finally stopped.

Turning around, he said in a solemn voice: “You both are here to join our Heavenly Bow Unit right? In that case, you two should know that it isn’t that easy to join up. No matter what your identity or status is, what background you have, as long as you want to join the Heavenly Bow Unit, you have to pass through three tests. And I, am your examiner.

The current Luo Ke Di seemed very earnest and businesslike, coupled with his good looks, it was very hard to connect and relate him to the same person who was roguishly talking about breasts earlier. However, Zhou Weiqing sensed danger, the danger of a kindred spirit; furthermore it was clear that this person had a much stronger control over his emotions and acting.

Shangguan Bing’er said: “Senior, how shall we go about the tests then?”

Luo Ke Di said: “The test is very simple, you will now go ahead 300 yards, and shoot at me with arrows. Each of you will have ten arrows worth of chances, and to pass the first round, you will have to be able to force me to parry the arrow.

Shangguan Bing’er was originally very nervous, but upon hearing that, she relaxed a little, saying: “In that case, please

advice me, Senior.” As she said that, she pulled Zhou Weiqing ahead.

As Zhou Weiqing followed her, he said: “That fellow gives me a sinking feeling, something is fishy! Bing’er, you better be careful as well.”

Shangguan Bing’er said doubtingly: “The seniors of the Heavenly Bow Unit have all give countless heroic contributions to our Empire, and are all considered heroes of the empire. Little Fatty, are you thinking too much? Earlier, that Senior must have drank too much, which is why he lost control of himself. Look, he seems so much better now after vomiting out all the alcohol right?”

Zhou Weiqing arched his brow and said: “I hope that’s true.”

As they reached the 300 yard mark, both of them turned around. At such a distance, Luo Ke Di was but a speck in the distance, but they were both Heavenly Jewel Masters, and their vision was naturally much better than any ordinary humans, and they were still able to see him clearly.

“You two take turns, little girl, you go first.” Luo Ke Di’s voice came to them; though it wasn’t very loud, it still sounded out clearly in their ears. This was a distance of 300 yards! Zhou Weiqing and Shangguan Bing’er exchanged looks of surprise, that alone required a high cultivation level of Heavenly Energy to achieve.

As Shangguan Bing’er took off the Purple Dawn Bow from her

back, she released her Heavenly Jewels. Immediately, her first Physical Jewel spun in the air and coalesced into her palm in a burst of bright green light, forming the Silent Tracking Arrow.

As you guys should know by now, the title of the chapter is rather punny. 绝世‘凶’器 can be broken down to 绝世 and ‘凶’器. 绝世 would mean ultimate, unique, or just very strong. ‘凶’器 on the other hand is a play on words as like in the chapter, as 凶 – is fierce, while 胸 refers to the chest, or breasts in this case, hence the inverted commas, as they use it interchangeably in their Luo Ke Di and Zhou Weiqing’s conversation. I honestly couldn’t think of a good title for this so I just took inspiration from Mel Gibson 😊 and left you guys with this explanation at the end.

Here are some interesting title suggestions from other translator friends!

Deceptioning – Ultimate Boobage, Dangerous pair of weapons, Bombsom (bosom)

Taffy – Dangerous Cleave-age (cleavage)

Thyaeria – World Shaking ‘Lethal’ bosom

OMA – Ultimate breast weaponry

My personal favourite is Kookiedreamer & Haku’s suggestion – A Lethal Boobie Trap

Chapter 28 – Lethal ‘Weapon’ (2)

Shangguan Bing'er did not have any confidence of being able to even harm Luo Ke Di, but for the purpose of the test, to just have him not be able to dodge and be forced to parry her arrows, she was extremely confident. After all, she had the Silent Tracking Arrow, and that was literally the best solution for this test, and she did not foresee any problems passing this first test. This was the reason why she relaxed after hearing about it.

As expected, after Shangguan Bing'er had fired the arrow, Luo Ke Di dodged it in a flash, but the Silent Tracking Arrow in the air spun around quickly and followed him instantly, reaching the front of his face. Luo Ke Di had no choice but to raise his hands, a white light springing out from his hand and stopping the arrow.

Shangguan Bing'er kept her Purple Dawn Bow with a smile, saying to Zhou Weiqing: “He truly is a great senior from the Heavenly Bow Unit, so strong!”

Little did she know that Luo Ke Di on the other side was just as surprised; although he had easily stopped the Silent Tracking Arrow with a finger, that finger was currently feeling numb. With his experience, he could naturally easily determine Shangguan Bing'er's Heavenly Energy cultivation levels and Attribute. He thought to himself: She is indeed worthy of being called the top genius youth of the Heavenly Bow Empire! At such a young age, she is already of the 10th level of Heavenly Jing Energy! No wonder Old Zhou recommended her to enter the Heavenly Bow Unit, she truly has a great future ahead.

“Alright, you passed. You, brat, it’s your turn.”

Luo Ke Di’s target had never been Shangguan Bing’er, and now that it was finally Zhou Weiqing’s turn, he gave a secret wicked smile, thinking to himself: Smelly Little Brat, how dare you play with me, you’ll see how I punish you later. Shangguan Bing’er might be a Heavenly Jewel Master and pass easily, but you’re at most an ordinary Jewel Master. Hmph!

At the other hand, Zhou Weiqing had released his Overlord Bow. Due to the fact that they were 300 yards apart, although Luo Ke Di could see him releasing his Consolidated Equipment, but he could not clearly see the Jewels around his wrist. As such, he immediately determined that Zhou Weiqing was a single Jeweled Physical Jewel Master. It was hard to blame him for making that snap judgement, after all, in the Heavenly Bow Empire, there were just the two known Heavenly Jewel Masters. Even if another Heavenly Jewel Master appeared, they might not choose to stay in the Heavenly Bow Empire which could hardly afford to provide them with sufficient funds.

As Zhou Weiqing whipped out an arrow and nocked it to the Overlord Bow, he drew it to about half its strength and with a whoosh sound, the first arrow flew out.

What was the Overlord Bow? It was one of the top bows amongst all the Physical Jewel Consolidated Equipment, and was known for its sheer destructive power, after all only pure Strength Heavenly Jewel Masters could Consolidate it. Even though it was only drawn to half its maximum capacity, the arrow that flew out was still faster than from a Purple Dawn Bow.

As the first arrow shot out, his second arrow flew out almost an instant later. Furthermore, Zhou Weiqing had drawn the bow to its maximum for the second arrow. This archery skill was known as Dual Shot; the first arrow being shot out at a relatively slower speed followed by the second arrow which would reach first. This skill was taught to him by Shangguan Bing'er, and was usually used against stronger enemies to surprise them.

Luo Ke Di's eyes narrowed as the arrows hurtled towards him with a loud whistling sound after being fired from the Overlord Bow, and the expression in his eyes changed a little. What a powerful bow, yet it can also be considered a useless bow. In a 1v1 situation, one of the most important thing to an archer was silence. With the sound this bow makes, it was rather useless; as most enemies would be alerted and escape.

As he was thinking about that, he had also made his move at the same time. As the two arrows reached him, Luo Ke Di did not even move his legs, instead his upper body seemed to whip to the left, as if his entire body was being broken from the waist.

Although Zhou Weiqing's arrows seemed to be targeted at the same spot, but in truth, there was some slight difference, one of the arrows slightly skewed to the left, and one to the right. However, this Luo Ke Di's dodging was unbelievably shocking, and he somehow easily dodged both arrows.

Instantly, Zhou Weiqing thought of several words: Physical Jewel Master, Flexibility. Without question, this Luo Ke Di was a Physical Jewel Master, and amongst his boosts he definitely had

the flexibility attribute.

Although he was thinking, Zhou Weiqing's hands did not slow down at all. Another two arrows shot out again; this time one was targeted at where his upper body was leaning currently, while the other towards where his body would end up if he straightened. In this way, if Luo Ke Di stood up straight, he would be hit by the latter arrow, but if he didn't, he would be hit by the former. Although Zhou Weiqing knew that this two arrows might not force Luo Ke Di's hand, his goal was to try and at least make Luo Ke Di move his feet.

However, to his surprise, Luo Ke Di did another high difficulty movement, and his upper body at the left seemed to snap to the back instead like a whip, and without getting up, he ended up in a reverse bridge position, and all the time his legs had not moved an inch, as if they had been nailed to the ground.

“Little brat, is that all you've got? Do you really think you can join our Heavenly Bow Unit with just that level of skill? Even in this open space, you can't even make me move my feet, you should go home and continue suckling milk!” Luo Ke Di's mocking words came from afar.

That guy, he was definitely taking revenge for just now! Zhou Weiqing's heart was as clear as a mirror. Although Shangguan Bing'er's arrow was indeed powerful, but with the abilities that Luo Ke Di revealed thus far, he could have easily dodged it until the Heavenly Energy in the arrow dissipated. Yet, he had easily let Shangguan Bing'er pass, and was just waiting for him!

A cold smile appeared on Zhou Weiqing's face. Hmph, not moving your legs? I'll see how you do not move for this. As he thought that, his fifth arrow shot out.

Once again, the loud whistling sound rang out as the fifth arrow sped towards Luo Ke Di's left foot. With a loud laugh, Luo Ke Di lifted up the leg, easily bringing it above his head, in a '[Golden Rooster Stands on One Leg posture](#)'. However, in the next instance, tragedy struck for him.

Previously, the arrows fired and dodged had flown off into the distance; as long as they flew off 1.5km into the distance, the Heavenly Energy in them would have dissipated, and the explosive effect of the Overlord Bow would not come into play. However, this time, although Luo Ke Di easily dodged the arrow, but it landed right on the ground below him.

With a huge explosive sound, Luo Ke Di was caught by surprise, and his reaction was a little slower than usual. The huge explosion caused him to fly up, and although he reacted quickly in releasing his Physical Jewels, twisting and turning in the air to reduce the impact, but his clothes were torn up. "F**k, what bow is that..." Luo Ke Di cursed in his heart, but his troubles were not over yet, as another loud whistling sound was heard, accompanied by a much stronger pressure.

Luo Ke Di's anger was sparked in his heart. At this moment, his body was in midair, and it was hard for him to leverage off anything. Without any choice, he quickly hit his palm towards the ground, and a strong bout of Heavenly Energy slammed against the ground, and he made use of the impact to spin backwards further

into the air. He was indeed a Physical Jewel Master, and had 5 Physical Jewels. In the Heavenly Bow Unit, he was considered one of the weakest, but his Physical Jewel Boost was of coordination and flexibility, and even though he was in the air, he had the confidence to dodge the incoming arrow.

However, another surprising thing appeared. Just as he made use of the impact as leverage to spin higher in the air, and seemingly dodge the arrow, he suddenly felt a pain on his chest, and he flew backwards. With a loud explosion, he was knocked back at least ten metres.

In the distance, Zhou Weiqing said with a wicked smile: “I hope you enjoyed the Overlord Spatial Arrow.”

An actual Taichi manoeuvre

Chapter 29 – Godlike Archery (1)

Luo Ke Di had been knocked back by Zhou Weiqing's arrow. Luckily, he was a 5 – Jewelled Physical Jewel Master, and his physique was extremely strong and durable. Under such a circumstance, he was still able to react and lessen the damage done. Furthermore, when Zhou Weiqing shot this last arrow, he had plucked out the arrowhead, and Luo Ke Di did not sustain any damage. Otherwise, being taken by surprise like that and hit by an arrow from the Overlord Bow, even though his cultivation level was a lot higher than Zhou Weiqing's, he would still be injured. This was the price to pay for underestimating an enemy.

In truth, it had been extremely difficult for Zhou Weiqing to hit Luo Ke Di. The first four arrows were all testing and probing the situation, and only the fifth arrow targeting the ground was the key to his plan. Luo Ke Di had not known about the power of his Physical Jewel Consolidated Equipment, and the strength of the explosive nature of the Overlord Bow, and had been caught by surprise by the explosion and sent flying into the air. At that time, Zhou Weiqing had already won half the battle.

In the next instant, when Zhou Weiqing fired the next arrow, he had sent the Spatial Attribute Skill Blink from his Elemental Jewel and fused it with the Overlord Bow. Calculating the fact that Luo Ke Di had a limited range of motion while in midair, his Overlord Spatial Arrow's effect was pretty simple. It did not have any increase in power, but it was able to cause the arrow to Blink in midair. Once the arrow had reached about 250 yards from Luo Ke Di, it blinked right to him. Indeed, Luo Ke Di's judgement had not been wrong at all, but alas he had not calculated the fact that the arrow could just blink next to him! Although Zhou Weiqing could not fully control the Overlord Spatial Arrow yet, his luck was

pretty decent and it had succeeded in a single try.

A cute little white head popped up from Zhou Weiqing's bosom, blinking its deep blue eyes, though it did not make any sound. Wasn't that the much missed little white tiger? Nobody knew why the little white tiger was so attached to Zhou Weiqing, and though he often 'bullied' it, the little thing refused to leave his side. Because of this, Shangguan Bing'er was often depressed about it.

As Luo Ke Di fell hard on the floor, he executed a perfect roll and jumped back up. Feeling the pain and stuffy feeling in his chest, he was also in a gloomy mood; after all he did not even know how he had been struck by the arrow. Was something wrong with my hearing? That's impossible! Just from distinguishing distances and attacks from hearing alone, even the rest of the guys in the Heavenly Bow Unit weren't any stronger than me! He thought to himself.

This was tantamount to [a skilled goose hunter getting his eyes pecked out by a goose, a skilled captain capsizing a ship in a small pond](#). With his clothes torn and filled with dirt, Luo Ke Di was rather depressed.

Zhou Weiqing and Shangguan Bing'er came running over, and Shangguan Bing'er said with concern clear in her voice: "Senior, are you okay?"

Luo Ke Di felt even worse from her comforting words; if she had ridiculed or taunted him, he probably wouldn't have felt so bad, but being comforted and cared for by a little girl, even though his skin was thick, he couldn't help but flush in shame. Looking

strangely at the honest-looking Zhou Weiqing, he said: “Little brat, not bad! Looks like I have misjudged you.” With his archery skill and power, how could he not have felt that the arrowhead of the last arrow had been removed, otherwise he might have been injured.

Zhou Weiqing gave a hearty laugh and said: “Senior, it’s just my luck, just luck. When I shot the last arrow, my hand slipped and just happened to shoot askew of my target. Who knew that you would accidentally knock into it instead. Does that count as passing the first test?”

Hand slipped? Luo Ke Di’s brow twitched at that as he couldn’t help but think to himself. Who do you think you’re lying to?? The earlier arrows you didn’t strip the arrowhead, yet this particular one you did so. Would you do that if you didn’t have the confidence of hitting me? Hmph. This little rascal really knows how to pretend [to be a boar to eat tigers](#), why does that seem so familiar though?

Luo Ke Di gritted his teeth and said: “Yes, you both have passed the first test. Now it’s time for the second test. Little Brat, pass me your Purple Dawn Bow and quiver.”

Zhou Weiqing started and looked at him vigilantly: “What for?”

Luo Ke Di’s eyes revealed a crafty look as he gave a faint smile. Before they could even see him moving, let alone react, Zhou Weiqing felt a flash in front of his eyes, and the weight on his body lifted, and his Purple Dawn Bow and quiver appeared in Luo Ke Di’s hands. “Earlier, you both each shot 20 arrows at me, now it’s

my turn to shoot 20 arrows at you two. As long as in this 20 arrows, one of them doesn't hit either of you, then you will pass the second test. Do not worry, I'll pluck out the arrowheads. You guys can start running now, and I'll count to five. One..."

Damn, this is falsely using authority to take personal revenge! Zhou Weiqing thought in his heart, but he did not dare to delay at all, as he and Shangguan Bing'er exchanged looks. Without hesitation, both turned and ran off at top speed.

At the same time, Luo Ke Di leisurely took out an arrow from the quiver, tapping on it with his fingers and breaking off the arrowhead. He slowly nocked it and drew the bow, all the while counting slowly: "two, three, four, five... here's the first arrow!"

Zhou Weiqing and Shangguan Bing'er heard his voice, and instantly leapt and twisted to the side. However, as soon as they did so, they realised something was wrong; they did not hear any sound of an arrow whistling through the air. Could it be a silent arrow?

"Fool! If I say it's coming, does it mean it should really come?" As Zhou Weiqing executed a roll on the ground and was just about to vault up and change directions, he suddenly felt a pain on his buttocks, and he was instantly knocked 3 feet to the front.

It's really a silent arrow? That arrow was obviously shot after his warning, and even ignoring the fact that it was silent, he probably still wouldn't have been able to dodge it if it was loud. After all, the arrow had reached him just as his body was still on the ground, and unless he used the Blink skill, he would not have been able to

react in time. However, Zhou Weiqing did not want to reveal his Elemental Jewel secret just yet. Although he had used it earlier in the first test, that was under the condition that Luo Ke Di had not been able to see the arrow. If he used it in such a situation now, it would be extremely obvious to Luo Ke Di.

Despite the fact that the arrowhead was already broken off, but with the power of the Purple Dawn Bow, when the bow shaft struck his buttocks, Zhou Weiqing felt a large force transmit to him. However, it shuddered against the Immortal Deity Shield that automatically protected him, causing it to spread throughout his body and dissipating most of the energy; as such, he was only knocked a few feet to the front and with a slight pain.

So, this is the real way of using the Immortal Deity Shield! Inspiration struck Zhou Weiqing as he suddenly understood the Immortal Deity Shield's effect. When the attack landed on his body, the shielding effect from the five energy whirlpools was just the basic, and the more important effect was the spreading and dissipating of the attack power. Although he would still take some damage on his body, but most of the impact had already been expended, and it would greatly reduce any injury to him.

“Eh? You’re pretty good at taking hits!” Luo Ke Di said with some surprise as he looked at Zhou Weiqing, who stumbled back to his feet and continued running forward after the first hit.

According to his original plan, the first arrow should have numbed his buttocks and allowed him to shoot his twenty arrows at will, as corporal punishment. He had reserved all twenty arrows for Zhou Weiqing; after all, he needed to vent away the pent up

depression after being shot by Zhou Weiqing just now. However, Zhou Weiqing was unexpectedly fine after the first arrow, and this stirred up Luo Ke Di's competitive heart.

Swoosh Another arrow flew out. This time, Zhou Weiqing had extended his senses to their maximum capability, and due to that, when the arrow reached him, it gave him a shock in his heart. This was because he found out that it was not a Silent Arrow!

The arrow that Luo Ke Di had shot out did actually have some sound, but it was extremely faint, and even with Zhou Weiqing's senses at their max, it was only when it reached about 10 yards from him did he catch a faint sound.

How did he do that? Zhou Weiqing thought puzzledly, as his buttocks was hit by the arrow once again. This time, his body had just flew forward when the 3rd arrow had reached. He hadn't even landed from the second blow and had no chance at all, and it was followed by the fourth and fifth arrow!

Shangguan Bing'er had started running at the same time as Zhou Weiqing, and the two had jumped apart earlier. However, soon, an extremely strange sight entered her eyes.

Zhou Weiqing was continuously being hit by a stream of arrows from Luo Ke Di, and he wasn't even able to hit the ground before being hit by arrow after arrow, as they kept him in mid air.

What sort of archery is this? Shangguan Bing'er mind froze and she stared dumbfoundedly. After all, both sides were 300 yard

apart, and to accomplish such a feat, when the first arrow hit Zhou Weiqing, Luo Ke Di's third arrow already had to be in the air! Only then could the arrows strike continuously without any break, causing him to be caught in midair!. This also meant that as soon as Luo Ke Di fired his arrow, he had to determine where and how Zhou Weiqing would be knocked back, and fire his next arrow into that trajectory. This wasn't just a simple matter of eyesight and discernment!

Furthermore, as she looked at Luo Ke Di, he was walking slowly forward as he fired the arrows rapidly, and she was barely able to make out his firing motions. He was also doing so extremely leisurely, even taking the time to give her a suave smile, and barely glancing back at Zhou Weiqing. The even more shocking thing was that, Luo Ke Di was not using a Silent Arrow, but he was able to get more than eighty percent effect of a Silent Arrow. Such unbelievable skill!?

Godlike archery skills! This could only be described as godlike archery! Although his cultivation level is only 5 Jewels, but this archery, such skills, they are almost beyond human comprehension. Is this the true strength of the Heavenly Bow Unit?

By now, Zhou Weiqing's Heavenly Energy levels were dropping dangerously low. After all, he had been hit by 8 or so arrows, and even his impressive reserves were running dry. Earlier, he had used the Overlord Bow and Overlord Spatial Arrow earlier, coupled with the current expenditure of energy from the Immortal Deity Technique, caused his Heavenly Energy to drop really quickly.

Zhou Weiqing made the snap decision to stop the Immortal Deity Shield from protecting him, as he needed to reserve sufficient Heavenly Energy for the use of one last Blink. He did not want to fail here in this second test!

After stopping the Immortal Deity Shield, a change quickly occurred, the first one being the massive increase in pain. Originally, Zhou Weiqing was only knocked 3 metres away by each arrow; without the Immortal Deity Technique, the next arrow actually knocked him 5 metres away, and the searing pain and numbness on his buttocks caused him to cry out loud.

These are the literal translations of two idioms, the former is 打雁却被雁啄了眼, while the latter is 阴沟里翻船. Basically, both have similar meanings – failing miserably at an easy task, or failing at the last minute due to being careless.

Another literal translation of a common idiom I'm sure you guys have seen before. It means hiding his true strength to surprise / defeat enemies

Chapter 29 – Godlike Archery (2)

However, the change also caught Luo Ke Di by surprise, causing his expression to change slightly. The continuous combination arrow skill he was using now was dependent on extremely accurate judgement, and the moment Zhou Weiqing's ability to take blows changed, meant that the arrows he shot out earlier also would miss. At this time, the 11th arrow had just struck Zhou Weiqing, and the 12th and 13th arrow were already in midair, looking as if they would miss him.

Right at this moment, Luo Ke Di finally revealed some of his true abilities. As he shot forth the 14th arrow, it flashed with a bright white light, obviously having been filled with Heavenly Energy. This arrow was extremely fast, giving Shangguan Bing'er, who had become an audience, a great shock. Such an arrow was even faster than her Silent Tracking Arrow or Zhou Weiqing's Overlord Bow's arrow, yet Luo Ke Di was only using ordinary arrows with the Purple Dawn Bow!

Even more shocking to Shangguan Bing'er was what followed, the arrow filled with the bright white light did not actually travel in a straight line, instead arcing through the air and nudging the 12th and 13th arrow as it flew past them, before striking onto Zhou Weiqing's buttock once again. An even stranger sight was that, as soon as it reached Zhou Weiqing, the white light on the arrow vanished.

The result of that was, with three Pssh sounds, all three arrows landed almost simultaneously onto Zhou Weiqing, sending him more than a dozen metres ahead. This time, Luo Ke Di had stopped his continuous fire; clearly his rhythm had been interrupted, and

Zhou Weiqing landed on the floor on his front.

Good Heavens! Was that still archery? Shangguan Bing'er covered her mouth in shock. Naturally, she could tell that Luo Ke Di did not even bother attacking her, and he was totally doing this to seek revenge on Little Fatty. However, it was also clear that he was not being malicious about it, not only did he remove the arrowheads, but he also only made use of the Purple Dawn Bow's, and did not use Heavenly Energy to injure him. However, that last arrow was just too breathtaking, that single arrow had actually corrected the course of the previous two arrows and hit the target, all at the same time! Shangguan Bing'er could only stare blankly at the scene in front of her, not knowing even how to judge such a skill.

From a very young age, Shangguan Bing'er had liked bows and arrows, and fallen in love with archery. However, just at that moment, she realised that everything she had learnt previously, was literally nothing compared to the archery that Luo Ke Di was displaying. If this man wanted to take their lives, he did not even need to make use of his Physical Jewels or even Heavenly Energy, and he could just depend on archery to take both of them down.

“Heh heh, Little Brat, now for the final gift, [a double lucky six!](#)” As Luo Ke Di moved the Purple Dawn Bow, six arrows suddenly appeared at the bowstring as he nocked them together and pulled, and with a twist of his body, the six arrows launched out simultaneously!

This time, Shangguan Bing'er actually managed to see some of Luo Ke Di's actions; just before the bowstring released and

sounded out, Luo Ke Di's right hand seemed to blur into motion, leaving several shadowy afterimages, before the six arrows flew out.

None of the six arrows actually traveled in a straight line, as they all arced in different paths, racing straight towards Zhou Weiqing.

With Luo Ke Di's discerning vision, how could he not see that the little rascal did not have energy left to even dodge a single arrow? Furthermore, he had used an exquisite skill with extreme accuracy, sealing off all of Zhou Weiqing's possible escape routes. As long as he gets hit by a single arrow, the other five would definitely hit as well.

However, right at this moment, Zhou Weiqing went berserk.

Getting hit by fourteen arrows, especially the last four arrows which brought about such acute pain, it brought forth the rage from Zhou Weiqing's heart. This was petty revenge, an obvious petty revenge! I'm not going to use Blink anymore!

Although Zhou Weiqing's entire body was numb in pain, but there was one thing that Luo Ke Di did not know. Indeed, Zhou Weiqing was hurting so bad that he could barely move at all, but his right leg was totally unaffected! After being knocked back by the last three arrows in succession, he had not tried to get up, instead, lifting his right leg up high. With all his might, he circulated all his remaining Heavenly Energy into his Demonic Right Leg, and slammed it savagely onto the ground, and at the same time he pushed with all his might with both hands.

In a huge explosion, the entire earth caved in from the leg, literally smashing open a 2 metre long, 1 metre wide hole in the ground! With the pressure exerted by Zhou Weiqing, he quickly slid right into this hole.

Ting Ting Ting Ting... A burst of concentrated sound rang out at where Zhou Weiqing was a moment ago, that was the last six arrows arcing and hitting each other, while Zhou Weiqing's entire body disappeared from Shangguan Bing'er and Luo Ke Di's line of sight.

Luo Ke Di's eyes widened in surprise; even with as much experience and knowledge as he had, he had never seen anyone evade an arrow in this manner, and the six arrows that he had been so confident off had actually missed the target. As such, although Zhou Weiqing was in a mess, he had definitely depended on his own strength to dodge the last few arrows.

“Little Fatty!” Shangguan Bing'er ran quickly towards him, pulling him out of the hole in the ground.

Besides his right leg, Zhou Weiqing felt that his entire body was hurting terribly, and he couldn't help but curse in his heart. Damn it, that old fellow is too vicious, my poor ass! Of course, he knew that Luo Ke Di had not been trying to injure him, otherwise he would not have targeted his fleshy buttocks. However, having this been done to him in front of Shangguan Bing'er, he felt like all his face had been thrown.

“Damn kid, are you a mammoth? Such strength!? Alright, that counts as your win, you both have passed the second test as well.” Luo Ke Di walked over to them as well, and seeing the large hole in the ground, he couldn’t help but exclaim in surprise as well.

Once again, a cute little white tiger head squirmed out of Zhou Weiqing’s bosom, dust and dirt all over it. Jumping onto Zhou Weiqing’s shoulder, it issued a low roar towards Luo Ke Di, showing its displeasure.

Zhou Weiqing finally got up with much difficulty, hurting all over. He could also feel a strong sense of bloodlust and violence invading his mind. Oh no, is it the Demonic Change activating due to my wounds?! Breathing in deep, he quickly reined in his feelings and focused hard, constantly repeating to himself that it was just a test, until his feelings started to calm down.

Only the little white tiger on his shoulder could see the sudden flash of red in his eyes, and it blinked its little eyes. If anyone was close enough to observe, they would have seen a sudden flash of excitement in its little eyes.

“Ehh, what’s this little thing, how amusing. A little white tiger, that’s the first time I’ve heard of such a thing. Is this a Heavenly Beast you’re rearing?” Luo Ke Di looked on curiously at the small white tiger on Zhou Weiqing’s shoulders.

Zhou Weiqing drew a deep breath as he settled his composure, before giving a humph and said: “Yes, it’s mine.”

Luo Ke Di grinned and said: “Heh heh, little fellow, don’t be so moody. Only a person who has gone through suffering will become an outstanding person. Look, even when I was knocked back by your arrow, I still didn’t get angry. In the future, we might even become comrades in arms, I was just acting according to the rules, right?”

Acting according to rules? Shooting me alone? Zhou Weiqing gave him a glare, however in truth, although he still had a little anger in him, it was mostly respect he felt. He might not have seen how Luo Ke Di’s archery, but just from the way he had been suspended in the air by the earlier bout of arrows, he knew that the difference in skill level between Luo Ke Di and them was just too huge.

Luo Ke Di walked over and patted Zhou Weiqing on the back, saying softly so that only he could hear: “Hey kid, let’s discuss this alright? When we get to the Heavenly Bow Unit, if you do not mention what happened just now, I’ll ensure you pass the 3rd test, how about that?”

Zhou Weiqing started a little, then instantly understood. So, this fellow was afraid of losing face! Indeed, with his cultivation level and skill, being tricked by Zhou Weiqing was indeed very embarrassing, furthermore there was still the earlier scene of vomiting from seeing the ‘Lethal Weapon’.

Zhou Weiqing immediately lifted his hand, grinned and patted Luo Ke Di on the shoulder as well, saying: “Senior’s archery is unrivaled, us juniors being able to pass the test is truly by luck, not easy indeed! Senior is definitely someone we need to learn from.”

Both of them exchanged a meaningful look, as if telling each other: You know what I mean.

Shangguan Bing'er couldn't help but stare from the side, her jaw dropped. Those two fellows had been plotting against each other from the time they met, and each had suffered some losses, yet now they seemed like good friends? This change was just too fast! With her temperament, she naturally did not understand the communication between these two rogues.

“Alright, this little brother is such a promising youth, indeed worthy of being recommended by Admiral Zhou to join our Heavenly Bow Unit. Come, I'll bring you both to the Heavenly Bow Unit's camp, your last test will be held there.”

What Zhou Weiqing and Shangguan Bing'er didn't know was that, in truth, Shangguan Bing'er could have went to the Heavenly Bow Unit without undergoing the first two tests. After all, she was a Heavenly Jewel Master, and Admiral Zhou had long since verified her loyalty to the empire. With her innate talent, how could she still need any more tests? The only test that was required was actually the 3rd test that Luo Ke Di mentioned, to see if her current ability was sufficient.

As for the two earlier tests, it was in fact made up by Luo Ke Di to take revenge on Zhou Weiqing for making fun of him earlier. If they hadn't already been slated to join the Heavenly Bow Unit, Luo Ke Di wouldn't have the authority to test them and bring them to the Heavenly Bow Unit on his own, as it was considered the top level secret in the entire Empire! As such, even a wily young fox

like Zhou Weiqing was no match for the tricks of the old fox Luo Ke Di.

Under Luo Ke Di's leadership, the three of them quickly entered the Stars Forest. Luo Ke Di moved ahead very quickly, heading in a beeline towards the depths of the Stars Forest. His flexibility boost was indeed impressive, with just some Heavenly Energy boost, in the thick brush of the Stars Forest, he moved as if it were flat ground. Both Zhou Weiqing and Shangguan Bing'er had to make use of their wind attributes, and Zhou Weiqing even needing to make use of his right leg's boost, in order to catch up with him.

Zhou Weiqing was extremely familiar with the Stars Forest, and after a while, he had guessed where Luo Ke Di was headed.

About a year ago, he had been exploring the depths of the forest when he had been stopped by a troop of soldiers. At that time, he had been extremely curious about why there was a troop of soldiers stationed there, but had not explored further. Now, it seemed like that was clearly where the mysterious Heavenly Bow Unit was stationed, or at least close to that area.

六六大顺 – Basically supposed to mean good luck ie. rolling two sixes in a game in today's world. Actually the saying originates from the ancient writings of Yijing (易经). He is making a pun here, with the word 6 inside, as he is giving Zhou Weiqing the final six arrows at once

Chapter 29 – Godlike Archery (3)

After more than two hours of travel at their maximum speeds, Luo Ke Di finally slowed down a little. Just ahead, the army camp that Zhou Weiqing had spotted long ago came into their vision, and the patrolling soldiers also spotted them.

Zhou Weiqing asked curiously: “This is the Heavenly Bow Unit?”

Luo Ke Di gave a humph and said: “Of course not, they are only the external guards stationed here. In this area, there are three Battalion worth of troops which are outside of the Five Regiments, and they only report to the Royal Family. There are many sentry points and hidden posts guarding the place, and the innermost area is where our Heavenly Bow Unit is.

As he said that, he brought the two and strode forward. The patrolling soldiers were extremely alert, but on seeing it was Luo Ke Di, they immediately saluted respectfully, and because of that, none of them even stopped Zhou Weiqing or Shangguan Bing'er, only giving them a few curious looks.

As they entered the army camp, both of them realised that there weren't many people within. Undoubtedly, most of the soldiers stationed here were on patrol or sentry duty. From the noticeable patrols, the Heavenly Bow Unit was right in the middle of the protection of the three Battalions of soldiers.

After passing about 500 metres into the camp, they passed by another patch of forest and entered a large clearing. At that

moment, a huge courtyard appeared before Zhou Weiqing and Shangguan Bing'er's eyes.

The courtyard was fenced in by a 3 metre tall wall made out of thick wooden boards and tied together by vines, and ordinary smaller wild animals would be easily kept out by this fence. The courtyard was rather large; just from an estimation outside, it seemed to be about 100 metres wide. The two large wooden doors were open wide, revealing the spacious courtyard and the row of wooden houses at the back. Each of the wooden houses were individually situated, right deep in at the back of the courtyard, and there were about a dozen of them.

As Luo Ke Di led the two into the courtyard, it seemed empty. Once they had entered the courtyard, it seemed as if they were no longer in the forest, although the air was still as fresh and clear as in the forest.

Zhou Weiqing thought to himself: These guys from the Heavenly Bow Unit sure know how to enjoy themselves!

“The newbies are here, come on out!” Luo Ke Di stood in the middle of the courtyard and yelled at the top of his lungs.

“Old Rogue, why are you yelling! Don't you know we all have a mission to carry out tomorrow?” The door of the wooden house on the left opened up, and a man walked out. The man was of medium build, around 1.7m tall, and a clean cut short hair. His shoulders were wide, and the muscles around his neck were bunched up like a small hill. Although he wasn't very tall, but he gave off a massive and stable aura. Looking to be about 40 years of age, his features

seemed ordinary, but his eyes were piercing and fierce, as if a dormant volcano which could explode at any time.

Luo Ke Di grinned and said: “Little Mo Mo, these two newbies are brought over by Old Zhou. It’s been a long time since we had new blood, and it’s definitely not an easy thing for us to do so. We all have to meet up eventually, and since they have reached just in time, that means I can join up you guys on the mission tomorrow as well.”

The middle aged man’s glance landed on Shangguan Bing’er and Zhou Weiqing, looking extremely apathetic, and he said passively: “My name is Han Mo. Old Rogue, if you call me Little Mo Mo again, I’ll destroy your hidden stash of wine.” As soon as he said that, he turned around and went back into his house, slamming the door shut with a bang.

Luo Ke Di shrugged his shoulders helplessly and said: “Don’t mind him, he’s always like that to everyone. Amongst the bunch of us, he is the one with the coldest attitude.”

“Ohh, the newbies are here? Wahaha, and there’s a beautiful lady, that’s great. Welcome welcome, much welcome to you two for joining us.” Right at that moment, a large figure appeared out of nowhere, and in a few steps he was right in front of Zhou Weiqing and Shangguan Bing’er.

The man was extremely tall, about 1.9metres, and extremely well built. He seemed even older than Han Mo, with a head of dishevelled red hair. With a pair of brown eyes set in a stalwart looking face which seemed lined with power and strength, he had a

warm welcoming look on his face, showing a large contrast from Han Mo earlier.

“My name is Gao Shen. Little brother, little sister, what are your names?” As Gao Shen walked to the front, he put his arm around Luo Ke Di’s shoulder as he asked the duo.

“I’m Zhou Little Fatty, she’s Shangguan Bing’er. How are you, Senior Gao.” Zhou Weiqing said simply.

With a hearty laugh, Gao Shen said: “What Senior? I’m just a few years older than you guys, just call me Gao Shen Elder Bro will do. Old Rogue, you take good care of them, I’m going back to prepare mine and Han Mo’s arrows.” Having said that, he waved to Zhou Weiqing and Shangguan Bing’er, before turning around to leave.

Luo Ke Di shrugged once again and said: “We have a total of 7 people in our Heavenly Bow Unit, and there are only 5 of us at home now, as the other two have gone out on missions. Gao Shen and Han Mo are a pair of partners. There should be two more whose houses are nearby.”

Shangguan Bing’er said with a faint smile: “That Gao Shen Elder Brother seems to be a nice guy.”

Luo Ke Di’s mouth twitched and he grinned, saying: “Nice guy? Among those two fellows, if I had to choose only one to be a friend, I would definitely choose Han Mo instead of Gao Shen. Little girl, do you know what’s Gao Shen’s nickname? Han Mo’s nickname is called Arrow Tower, and Gao Shen’s nickname is called Cannon. In

our Heavenly Bow Unit, the evaluation that Gao Shen gets the most is this line: Murder and arson, look for Gao Shen. The death tally of the other six of us added up cannot match his, he is indeed a homicidal maniac.”

“Old Rogue, do not scare the kids.” Right at that moment, a magnetic voice sounded out behind them. As Zhou Weiqing and Shangguan Bing'er turned around, they saw two men walking in from the outside, and the both of them had a huge contrast in appearance.

The man on the left was tall and lanky, looking about forty years of age as well. Luo Ke Di was already considered rather handsome and suave, but compared to this middle aged man, he was not even on the same level. He had a very handsome face, fair skin, straight eyebrows pointing upwards, a pair of attractive yet fierce eyes, straight nose and firm mouth. His long gold hair was draped at his back, giving him an overall graceful air. Especially his pair of deep blue eyes with a hint of melancholy, that was definitely a lady killer. Wearing a spotlessly clean white robe, it definitely complemented his appearance.

Shangguan Bing'er noticed that the middle aged man had a pair of large hands, with cultured fingers like jade.

Just as Shangguan Bing'er was looking at the suave middle aged man, Zhou Weiqing was staring dumbfounded at the other man. This man was standing beside the suave middle aged man, and was a huge contrast in appearance. Only about 1.6m tall, with no visible muscles on his skinny frame, he seemed to be about 50 years old, with his messy grey hair set to the back. His eyes were darting

around, secretly eying Shangguan Bing'er while he his throat moved, as if swallowing saliva. Along with the tobacco pipe in his mouth, he looked vulgar and like a scoundrel.

As Shangguan Bing'er looked at him, their gazes met, and she couldn't help but furrow her brow, subconsciously moving behind Zhou Weiqing. This scoundrelly-looking old man's gaze was even more loathsome than Luo Ke Di's.

Right at this moment, Zhou Weiqing cried out: "Teacher!!", giving Shangguan Bing'er a huge surprise.

Zhou Weiqing rubbed his eyes, ensuring that he had not seen wrongly, and dashed forward with delight on his face. "Teacher! It's really you!"

That suave middle aged man is his teacher? Shangguan Bing'er thought in surprise, then she suddenly saw Zhou Weiqing give the old scoundrel a big hug.

A strange expression appeared on Shangguan Bing'er's beautiful face, and it was as if comprehension dawned upon her, why Zhou Weiqing was so precocious and the reason why he had a mind full of dirty thoughts.

"Ehhh, why are you here little brat? Your dad let you come?" The old scoundrel rolled his eyes, looking very surprised, and said exasperatedly: "Let go of this old man, your Father, I, do not have any interest in men. What's the point of hugging!"

Luo Ke Di stared dumbfoundedly at them and said: “Mu En, this little brat is your disciple? That means he’s Old Zhou’s son? Damn it, didn’t you say that little brat was a trash? Old Zhou is such an old fashioned, serious guy, how could he possibly let his son learn from you and be ruined? No wonder that little brat was full of evil tricks, and yet seemed so familiar. After so long, it was all from you, this old thing!”

Mu En instantly grew enraged, pushing Zhou Weiqing aside and exclaiming: “Luo Ke Di, you little rogue, what are you saying? What do you mean ruined by me? When did I ruin him? Your Father I has taught a fine student as should be, okay!? If you talk more rubbish, I’ll ‘ruin you’ a little first.”

“Alright, alright, you both, tone it down a little. Don’t scare the kids.” The handsome middle aged man shook his head helplessly. Turning to Shangguan Bing’er and Zhou Weiqing, he smiled and said: “Ignore them, although they argue a lot, they are actually extremely close; they just can’t help themselves and argue every time they meet up. Don’t mind them, they don’t have any malice. Let me introduce myself first, I’m called Hua Feng, and I’m the Leader of the Heavenly Bow Unit.”

As soon as Hua Feng opened his mouth, Mu En and Luo Ke Di both quietened down. Zhou Weiqing and Shangguan Bing’er both bowed down towards Hua Feng and said: “Greetings, Hua Feng Senior.”

Zhou Weiqing definitely did not expect that he would meet Mu En here. Four years ago, when he had just passed his 10th birthday, Admiral Zhou had suddenly brought this dirty old man Mu En in

front of him and asked him to be his teacher. After which, he had accompanied Mu En for two years and studied under his tutelage. He had not learned any fighting or killing techniques, but rather how to survive in the society, how to conduct himself in the world and deal with people; of course he also learned how to be a rogue and scoundrel.

Admiral Zhou given this evaluation about the dirty old man to Zhou Weiqing like this: He might not have a lot of power, but in this society, he is one of the type of people who has the best survival capabilities. As long as you can learn some of his abilities, at least in the future you will never starve to death. In truth, what Zhou Weiqing did not know was that Admiral Zhou had struggled for a long time before asking Mu En to teach his son. Mu En's nickname was God Eye Scoundrel, and you could imagine what Zhou Weiqing would learn from him. For Zhou Weiqing, being only 14 years old, to know so much and be so precocious, it can be said that it was due to those 2 years when he was learning from Mu En.

Hua Feng smiled and said: "Welcome, both of you, to the Heavenly Bow Unit."

Shangguan Bing'er said: "Hua Feng Senior, isn't there still another test before we join officially?"

Hua Feng said; "For Admiral Zhou to recommend you both, that means you definitely have the right and ability to enter the Heavenly Bow Unit, otherwise, old Rogue wouldn't bring you guys here. As for the test, you two will join us on a mission tomorrow, and your performance during the mission will be your test."

Chapter 30 – Paradise Strange (1)

Since they were already here, they would definitely want to do their best. Zhou Weiqing and Shangguan Bing'er nodded towards Hua Feng in agreement.

“Wait, Little Wei, did you manage to solve your blocked meridian problem? I haven't seen you for over a year, and you've already grown so much!” Mu En said with a surprised expression. He knew Zhou Weiqing's actual age, and also the state of his body previously; as such, he did not expect that Zhou Weiqing would actually become a Heavenly Jewel Master.

Zhou Weiqing said with some dissatisfaction: “Teacher, that time you left without saying a word! Your disciple hasn't just solved the blocked meridians issue. Look!” As he said that, Zhou Weiqing lifted up his right hand, and as he circulated his Heavenly Energy, his Heavenly Jewels appeared. Around his right wrist, the Icy Jade glittered as it orbited the wrist, showing its purity in front of everyone.

Mu En blinked his eyes; although he was the oldest in the group, but his eyesight and vision was incomparable, otherwise he wouldn't have the nickname of God Eye Scoundrel. When the absolutely pure Icy Jade appeared in front of him, Mu En was immediately stunned.

Luo Ke Di's gaze immediately drifted to Zhou Weiqing's left hands. Alas, Zhou Weiqing was already rather experienced, and his left hand was totally covered by his sleeve.

Hua Feng's eyes seemed to flash with an excited light, looking at Zhou Weiqing with a very gentle gaze. His eyes seemed to have a hint of bewilderment and recollection, as if he were trying to think of something.

“That's not possible! It's only been slightly over a year since we've met, even if you solved your blocked meridian issues, it shouldn't be possible for you to Awaken your Heavenly Jewels! You... little brat... are you a fake?” As he said that, Mu En took a step forward, his hands reaching for Zhou Weiqing's face and pinching them.

Zhou Weiqing said smugly: “If you're jealous, then just say you're jealous! I'm so suave, so handsome, who could possibly successfully masquerade as me! You know my dad's temper, he would never resort to do anything for personal gain. If not for the fact that my Heavenly Jewel Awakened, how could he possibly let me come to the Heavenly Bow Unit together with Shangguan Bing'er? Teacher, let me introduce you, this is my wife, Shangguan Bing'er, our Heavenly Bow Empire's top beauty! Heh heh.”

Shangguan Bing'er rolled her eyes at him, but did not refute it.. Perhaps it was because she had met the 'Rogue' and the 'Scoundrel', and did not feel safe, and needed Zhou Little Fatty to help her feel safe.

Without a doubt, this little rascal's smug look made them want to hit him, but the fact that his Heavenly Jewels actually Awakened definitely shook the three Heavenly Bow Unit members present. After all, before Zhou Weiqing, there were only the two Heavenly Jewel Masters in the entire Empire, one was Admiral Zhou, and

the other was the young genius of the generation, Shangguan Bing'er. Perhaps an additional Heavenly Jewel Master wasn't that important for a large Empire, but to such a small Empire like Heavenly Bow Empire, it could be something that totally changed the state of affairs in their entire Empire, something important that could totally change their fate in the next few dozen years. It can be said that if the Heavenly Bow Empire did not have the 8 – Jeweled Admiral Zhou to protect them, with the addition of the Heavenly Bow Unit, perhaps the Empire would have been exterminated by now.

Luo Ke Di looked towards Mu En and said: “Old Scoundrel, his Physical Jewel is definitely real. When I was testing their strength earlier, he used a piece of Consolidated Equipment, a bow, on me. Its strength was rather impressive.

Hua Feng said: “Let's go, we should head to the official meeting hall to discuss more.”

“Rogue, go over and call Arrow Tower and Cannon over as well.” As he said that, he walked over to Zhou Weiqing, patted him on the shoulder, and headed towards one of the largest wooden houses.

The rest of them followed him into the wooden house; it was empty and only had a huge long table in the middle, surrounded by many round chairs. Obviously, this was where they normally held their meetings. Hua Feng sat down at the main seat, and Luo Ke Di brought the other 2 members in as well. “Boss.” Han Mo and Gao Shen greeted Hua Feng, who smiled faintly and said: “Everyone, sit please.” Everybody took their seats, and Zhou Weiqing sat together with Shangguan Bing'er.

Hua Feng turned his gentle gaze towards Zhou Weiqing and said: “Let me introduce these two. This young lady is our Heavenly Bow Empire’s young generation’s greatest genius, Shangguan Bing’er; previously when Admiral Zhou came he had mentioned her, and that she will be joining us for two years for training. As for this young lad here, he is Admiral Zhou’s only son, Zhou Weiqing. Previously, he had studied under Mu En about survival for two years. Now that his Heavenly Jewel has Awakened, he has become our Empire’s third Heavenly Jewel Master, and will also join us together with SHangguan Bing’er for training. Miss Shangguan, you are a dual agility type Heavenly Jewel Master, while I am a Wind Attribute Elemental Jewel Master; are you willing to take me as your teacher?”

Shangguan Bing’er started a little, and an excited look came over her face. Towards the Heavenly Bow unit, she had heard many tales about them and had always yearned to join it. Earlier, she had witnessed Luo Ke Di’s amazing archery, and now that the Heavenly Bow Unit’s leader, who even had the same Elemental Jewel Attribute as her, wanted to take her in as a disciple, how could she not be willing? Furthermore, among the five members of the Heavenly Bow Unit they had seen so far, it seemed like only this leader was relatively normal...

As such, Shangguan Bing’er stood up and walked up to Hua Feng. Kneeling down, she called out “Teacher.” As she said that, she bowed down three times.

After she had finished bowing, Hua Feng helped her up. “You can follow me from now on, and I’ll pass on everything I know to you. You are a talented Heavenly Jewel Master, and I’m confident that

you will surpass me before long.”

After Shangguan Bing'er returned to her seat, Hua Feng turned to Zhou Weiqing and said: “Since your Heavenly Jewel Awakened, you should be of the Darkness Attribute like Admiral Zhou. Unfortunately, we do not have anyone with the same attribute as you, so I recommend that you continue learning from Mu En. In our Heavenly Bow Unit, Mu En might not be the strongest person, but his archery is definitely the top.”

As soon as Hua Feng said that, instantly 3 soft humphs sounded out, naturally it was the other 3 members of the Heavenly Bow Unit.

Luo Ke Di's humph was filled with disdain, Gao Shen's was filled with provocation, while Han Mo's was rather fierce and forceful.

“What are you guys humph-ing about! Any of you want to compete in archery? Within 100 yards, even if all 3 of you face me, I'll still beat you.” Mu En said airily, slumping back in his chair comfortably.

With the cool eye of the bystander, Zhou Weiqing saw that when Mu En said that, the other 3 eyes wandered and nobody met his gaze.

Hua Feng laughed heartily, saying: “If we're just talking about archery, I'm confident that in this world, in the 100 yard distance, Mu En is unbeatable. Little Wei, Bing'er, in the future I'll just call you that alright, let me introduce the Heavenly Bow Unit to you.”

“Our Heavenly Bow Unit has been set up for around 130 years, and it has acted 3 times previously when the Heavenly Bow Empire was on the verge of extinction, and turning the tides. As such, 86 years ago, our Heavenly Bow Empire changed name to honour our Heavenly Bow Unit, and from then on our Heavenly Bow Unit was considered the crack unit, known as the God Bow of the Empire, and this land is considered sacred land in the Empire. The first generation of the Heavenly Bow Unit as also 7 people, and from then on, it has always been maintained at 7 people. We are all considered the second generation of the Heavenly Bow Unit, and each of us have inherited a different type of archery, which I can hope you can carry on and improve.”

“Our Heavenly Bow Unit had also once contained Heavenly Jewel Masters, though there haven’t been many. Admiral Zhou was actually supposed to lead the Heavenly Bow Unit, but due to some other reasons, I had to take over instead. Currently, amongst the 7 of us, I’ll do a simple introduction of our attributes and unique points.”

“I’m a 7 Jeweled Wind Attribute Elemental Jewel Master, and as the leader of the Heavenly Bow Unit, I’m mostly in charge of strategy and direction, as well assassinations. My nickname is called ‘Ultimate Assassin’.”

When Hua Feng said the two words, ‘Ultimate Assassin’, even though he was smiling, but both Zhou Weiqing and Shangguan Bing’er both felt a chill run down their spines.

Hua Feng turned to Mu En and said: “Mu En, 6 Jeweled Physical

Jewel Master, half agility and half strength, and he is mainly in charge of destruction and sneak attacks, able to killing and sniping enemies in any conditions or environments. He is also in charge of disguises and hiding identities. With the best vision in our entire unit, his nickname is called ‘God Eye Scoundrel’.

“Luo Ke Di, 5 Jeweled Physical Jewel Master, half coordination and flexibility, and he is mainly in charge of scouting, survey, tricking enemies, and is the only scout of our unit. His nickname is Drunken Rogue, and partners with Mu En, which is what they call the Unparalleled Liu Duo.” At the side, Mu En gave a humph, saying: “Being in charge of scouting, that just means he is the weakest amongst us all.”

Luo Ke Di said angrily: “What do you mean weakest? I have lived a dozen years less than the rest of you.” Although he said that, it was clear that he was only acting fierce. Zhou Weiqing and Shangguan Bing’er exchanged looks, both of them couldn’t hide the shock in their hearts. Being the weakest in the unit, Luo Ke Di’s archery was already so impressive, they could barely imagine what the others’ could be like.

Mu En curled his lip in disdain, but Hua Feng ignored him and continued: “Han Mo, 6 – Jewelled Physical Jewel Master, toughness and stamina, and he is extremely skilled in keeping up a constant barrage of strong attacks. In our unit, he is in charge of continuous attack and suppressing fire. His nickname is Arrow Tower, with the meaning that he is just like an arrow tower, firing unceasingly.”

“Gao Shen, 6 Jeweled Elemental Jewel Master, Fire Attribute,

and is just a master of destruction and attacking. His nickname is Cannon, and under a normal circumstance, the pair of Gao Shen and Han Mo working together can easily suppress a more than a thousand ordinary soldiers.”

Hua Feng said: “There are two other members as well, but they are out in a mission right now. I’ll introduce them to you both when you meet them in the future.”

Zhou Weiqing couldn’t help but ask: “Leader, what do you mean by mission? Do we go on missions for the Empire?”

Chapter 30 – [Paradise Strange](#) (2)

Hua Feng smiled and said: “Of course not, we do not actually lie in the direct jurisdiction of the empire. Even the Royal Family cannot command us to do anything normally, and we usually only take action if our Empire is on the verge of destruction. As a Heavenly Jewel Master, you should know that Jewel Masters take a lot of money to sustain. As such, we need our own income, and this comes from these missions. To be more accurate, we are an assassin organisation, and we are known in the world as ‘Paradise Strange’.

Of course, besides the few of us, no one else in the world knows that the Heavenly Bow Unit from Heavenly Bow Empire is actually Paradise Strange. In the entire Boundless Mainland’s assassination world, our Paradise Strange is ranked the 7th of all the assassin organisations. Being set up for over a hundred years, the completion rate of our missions is about 79% and those organisations which rank above us are all at least ten times our numbers.

“Paradise Strange?” Zhou Weiqing’s mouth twitched, as he thought to himself: Damn, that sure is an innovative name!

Hua Feng smiled faintly as he said: “The Strange launches the dark destructive arrows, sending you to Paradise. From now on, you are also members of Paradise Strange, however, these 2 years will be your training period, and as such, you will not be given a cut from the missions. When your power reaches an acceptable standard and everyone agrees, we will start giving out a cut to you as well.”

Mu En looked at Zhou Weiqing and gave a humph before saying: “Little Brat, do not think to judge us assassins by the normal Jewel Master standards. If we were to fight normally, without our bows, face to face, any normal 5-Jeweled Heavenly Jewel Master would be able to destroy our entire Heavenly Bow Unit. However, do you know over this past 100 odd years, what our battle accomplishments have been? I’ll only mention the higher level ones. The strongest person we have assassinated was a 9-Jeweled Heavenly Jewel Master; just him alone would normally be strong enough to equal hundreds of 9-Jeweled ordinary Jewel Masters! Furthermore, over the years, we have racked up a death tally of 11 9-Jeweled Heavenly Zong Jewel Masters, 43 8-Jeweled Jewel Masters, 114 7-Jeweled Jewel Masters.”

Shangguan Bing’er said: “Seniors, we will definitely work hard and train with all our might, please do give us your guidance.”

Han Mo stood up and said to Hua Feng: “Boss, if there is nothing else, I’ll head back now.”

Hua Feng nodded and said: “Bing’er, come with me, I’ll arrange a place for you to stay, and also test your current strength.”

“Yes, teacher.” Shangguan Bing’er stood up. Just as she was about to leave, Zhou Weiqing quickly grabbed her hand, moving closer to her ear and whispering softly: “Bing’er, don’t get taken advantage off by that old handsome dude!” Towards Hua Feng, with such good looks and graceful air, he felt a sense of danger in his heart.

Shangguan Bing'er flushed deeply, gave him a pinch, before leaving with Hua Feng.

Zhou Weiqing could clearly see that when Hua Feng left, his mouth had twitched upwards in an amused smile, and couldn't help but feel a little perturbed. Could it be... despite whispering so softly, he heard my words?

As soon as Shangguan Bing'er and Hua Feng exited, Mu En, Luo Ke Di and Gao Shen, who were seated on the opposite side of Zhou Weiqing, all burst out laughing. Luo Ke Di was the most exaggerated, laughing till tears streamed down his cheeks, even banging his fist on the table, while Mu En had almost slid off his chair while laughing. Zhou Weiqing asked puzzledly: "Why are all of you laughing, what's so funny?"

Gao Shen said while laughing heartily: "Little Wei, did you feel that your whispering was very soft, and that only Bing'er could hear it?"

"What? Did... did you all hear what I said?" Zhou Weiqing asked in surprise.

Luo Ke Di gave him a big thumbs up and said: "Little Wei, let me tell you, if anyone else had said what you said to Boss Hua Feng, even if they didn't die, they would be severely injured at least. Your voice... soft? Have you forgotten what we do for a living? We're all archers, and assassins! For an archer, being able to judge distance and speeds from hearing is our bread and butter, even an ordinary Zong Stage Heavenly Jewel Master may not be able to do as well as us! Your whisper was no different from speaking beside

our ears. Hahahahaha! And you actually was afraid that Boss would try to steal your girl... hahaha, ahhh I almost laughed to death.”

“What so funny!? As a man, what’s wrong with being concerned about my wife.” Zhou Weiqing cried out, his embarrassment also turning into anger.

“Damn, little brat, stop throwing my face as well.” Mu En said to him. “Little brat, in terms of generation, do you know what Boss Hua Feng hopes that you will call him most?”

Zhou Weiqing asked suspiciously: “What?”

Mu En paused and said: “Little Mother.”

“What?!” Zhou Weiqing’s eyes almost popped out of his sockets. “Do you mean that Leader is a lady?”

“No, no... of course our Boss Hua Feng is a man, however, he likes other men as well. Furthermore, the person he is in love with is your father! Hahahahahaha, little brat, you actually worried that someone who wants to be your little mother would steal your wife. Hahaha, I can’t stop laughing.”

Zhou Weiqing could only stare dumbfoundedly at the trio, his jaw agape as he remained speechless. All of a sudden, without warning, Mu En and the rest of them stopped laughing, their expressions changing, and almost instantly dropped to the ground.

Right behind them in the wooden wall of the house, 3 small holes appeared where they had been a split second ago.

Hua Feng's voice traveled from the distance: "If the three of you want to die, I don't mind helping you fulfill your wish."

Luo Ke Di's face turned pale, while Gao Shen immediately put on a straight, solemn face, saying: "Rogue, how can you gossip about Boss? I look down on you! I'm heading back to pack my things for the mission tomorrow." As soon as he said that, he vanished out of the room hastily.

Only Mu En sat back down in his chair as if nothing had happened, looking at the stunned Zhou Weiqing and said passively: "Little Wei, do you understand now?"

"Understand? Indeed I understand now. No wonder we are called Paradise Strange... Indeed there isn't a single normal person here..." Zhou Weiqing's had a strange expression on his face, as an extremely weird scene appeared in his mind... his father and the graceful Hua Feng holding hands...

Feeling his gut start to roll, Zhou Weiqing immediately gave himself a slap, bringing himself away from that picture instantly.

Of the seven members of the Heavenly Bow Unit, he had met 5. One homosexual, one rogue, one scoundrel, one homicidal maniac, and one ice cube. Thinking, he asked tentatively: "Teacher, what are the nicknames of the last 2 members?"

Mu En stood up and walked over to him, saying: “You will have to be careful of the last 2 members. One of them is the only female in our Heavenly Bow Unit, a beautiful lady. She has been in love with Hua Feng for over twenty years, just like how Hua Feng has been in love with your father. Her name is Shui Cao, but we usually call her [Little Grass](#). However, she definitely suffers from hormonal imbalance, and her temper is extremely violent and fiery; besides Hua Feng, she is fierce to everyone else, and her nickname is also [Volcano](#). Fire refers to her temper, while mountain refers to her attribute, as she is an Earth Attribute Elemental Jewel Master. She is the one you have to be the most careful of, as in her eyes, your father is the one who stole her beloved.”

“The final member is our vice leader, called Yi Shi. His speciality is sneak attacks, as well as supporting arrows, and is the best support in the battlefield. In terms of treacherous and sinister plans, nobody can beat her. Her gender is... unique... just like her nickname, Transvestite.”

Currently, Zhou Weiqing had a head full of black lines, and his facial muscles were twitching. What sort of collection of people were these? Adding a transvestite and a tigress, how were they going to spend the next two years?!

“Come on, let’s go as well. I’ll assign you a place to stay, then you can show me your strength. You’ve already accomplished Consolidated Equipment for your Physical Jewel, have you also Stored Skill for your Elemental Jewel?

Zhou Weiqing nodded and said: “Yes I have.”

Mu En's eyes spun as he said: "That Old Zhou, he really is willing to splurge on you!"

By now, Zhou Weiqing had mostly recovered. After all, he had been around Mu En for over two years, and his ability to take in strange new sights was well trained. Listening to Mu En's words, he could only grin to himself.

Luo Ke Di said: "Alright, I'll head back to drink wine. Little Wei, don't forget about what I told you earlier."

Zhou Weiqing raised his brow and said: "What did you say? I forgot already."

"What?!" Luo Ke Di slammed the table and waved his fist at Zhou Weiqing. "Little Brat, are you asking to die?"

Mu En rolled his eyes and said: "I think the one who's asking to die is you! My disciple just came and you're already threatening him? How can you be his [Shi Shu](#) like that?"

Zhou Weiqing quickly hid behind Mu En, nodding and saying: "Exactly, Shi Shu! My memory is usually quite bad, but if I get a welcome gift, perhaps it'll help me jog my memory and help me remember what you said earlier."

Luo Ke Di's mouth couldn't help but twitch a little: "As dragons' sons are dragons, a phoenix will also beget little phoenixes, a rat's

child will naturally know how to bore holes. You little brat, you've only just arrived and you're already trying to con me."

Mu En laughed out and said: "Well said, I will definitely pass on your words to Zhou Shui Niu. Looks like you are already confident of beating him! Heh heh!"

Luo Ke Di said angrily: "I was talking about you!"

Mu En said innocently: "But, Little Wei is not my son, he's just my disciple. You said rat's child, but he isn't my child at all. Ahhh, it's been so long since I've seen Zhou Shui Niu beating someone up, I can't wait to see it!"

Luo Ke Di stared at the teacher disciple pair, speechless, before he finally caved in and said with grief and indignation: "I'm scared of you two! Old scoundrel, I'll give a welcoming gift alright."

Mu En said in a magnanimous manner: "No problem! Just remember to bring it before we set off tomorrow. Come Little Wei, let's go."

Zhou Weiqing gave Luo Ke Di a wide smile, saying: "Shi Shu, thanks! I'm sure your gift will be extremely good!"

On hearing his words, Luo Ke Di almost wanted to slam his head against the wall. This master disciple pair was just too unbeatable, quickly working together so with such compatibility. An ordinary welcome gift was not even sufficient, having to be an extremely

good one! Looking at the two of them walk off, he couldn't help but gnash his teeth together, thinking to himself: Perhaps it's also time that Your father, I, should also find a disciple!

As they exited to the courtyard, Mu En turned to Zhou Weiqing and said: "Little Wei, just now that Little Rogue said that your Consolidated Equipment was quite a good bow. Let me have a look. Little Rogue has always had good taste, and is very picky; having him praise your bow, it should be pretty good."

Basically it is 变态天堂, where 变态 has several meanings. The reason why the name is so awesome in Chinese is because many of the meanings suit them! Basically, 变态 can be used to mean... just changes, down to the perverted, weird, strange which I used, to being monstrously strong etc.

天堂 of course means Heaven or Paradise / Utopia.

Cao (草) means grass

The following explanation is because of how Volcano is written in Chinese (火山, which literally means fire mountain)

师叔 – literally means Master/Teacher's Junior or brother. I've seen it translated as Martial Uncle, but that's actually rather off, so I'm leaving it as the pinyin.

Chapter 30 – Paradise Strange (3)

While traveling to the Heavenly Bow Unit, Zhou Weiqing's five energy whirlpools at his Death Acupuncture Points had been drawing in energy at full speed, and by now at least half of his Heavenly Energy had already recovered. As he lifted up his right hand, an icy mist issued forth as the Overlord Bow coalesced in his hands.

Looking at the bow, Mu En's eyes lit up. "What a good bow! The lines, the strength, the patterns, and even the feel of Heavenly Energy from it. This should be specially made for Strength Heavenly Jewel Masters, and is definitely extremely powerful. When you have a few more sets of Jewels, I wonder what power will this Bow have. What is its name?"

Zhou Weiqing grinned and said: "Overlord Bow." He was 14 years old this year, and it could be said that the happiest years of his life were the ones he had spent with Mu En. At that time, he did not know that Mu En was a powerful Jewel Master from the Heavenly Bow Unit, and they had spent the time eating, drinking and having fun, touring the world. Of course, this was under Admiral Zhou's restrictions, otherwise, visiting prostitutes and gambling would have been added to the list of fun.

"Overlord Bow? '[Forcing yourself onto someone?](#)' What a dirty name."

Zhou Weiqing was struck speechless: "Teacher, it's your thinking that is dirty!"

Mu En rolled his eyes and said: “Come to my room, and tell me what has happened over the past year. I really cannot imagine how your cultivation shot up four levels and even Awakened your Heavenly Jewels so quickly.”

Zhou Weiqing said: “Teacher, it’s five levels. I’m your disciple, how can I not be as genius as you are?”

Mu En thought about it for a second, and nodded his head in satisfaction, saying: “That makes a lot of sense, alright, at least you have some measure of my genius.”

As they entered Mu En’s wooden house, Zhou Weiqing saw that it was a terrible mess. The walls were all lined with pictures of naked beauties, and some of them even had the signs of mottled spots.

It took a while for Zhou Weiqing to find a relatively clean place to sit, and he told Mu En all about the past year. Towards his respected teacher, he naturally did not hide anything.

After listening to his tale, and examining the Alexandrite Cat’s Eye, Mu En asked Zhou Weiqing to show some of his Stored Skills, before finally believing it was all real.

“Damn! You little brat... your talent is just that little bit more than I, your father! No wonder, I saw that Bing’er was no longer a virgin, so it’s you little brat who did it. Envy, Jealousy, hate!” Mu En’s eyes rolled around in habit.

“Teacher, should I tell the rest what my Elemental Attributes are?” Zhou Weiqing asked.

Mu En immediately shook his head, a wicked look on his face as he grinned: “Why tell them? When the critical moment comes, perhaps we can give them a nice good surprise. You and Bing’er will be coming along with us for that mission, but it’s mostly to observe. During that time, you just stay by my side. When we come back, I’ll start teaching all my archery skills. Since you’re already a Heavenly Jewel Master, there are many things you have to learn. Your teacher will definitely train you well.”

“Teacher, can you not use the words [Tiao Jiao](#) here? Oh yes, when are you going to bring me to the lady baths to peep once again, and to the inns and pubs to train our eyesight and estimate ‘cup sizes’? Oh right, the last time we stole someone’s chicken and barbequed it, that was an amazing taste that I can never forget up till now! You still haven’t thought me how to season and cook that!”

“Also, teacher, I realised that, my taste has started to differ from yours... I think now that girls with larger hips are more beautiful...”

“What do you understand! It isn’t that they must be larger, but they need to be well flared up. You still have many many things to learn brat...”

If there was a phrase to describe Mu En as a teacher, it would be ‘One and Only’ indeed.

Zhou Weiqing and Shangguan Bing'er were both assigned to a small wooden house each. In the Heavenly Bow Unit, they had to take care of their own food, and there weren't any servants or the like. Of course, without question, Zhou Weiqing was the one preparing for Shangguan Bing'er as well; and with a disciple here now, how could Mu En not take advantage as well, and Zhou Weiqing thus had yet another person to prepare food for.

Zhou Weiqing saw that the other members of the Heavenly Bow Unit usually stayed in their own rooms, although Luo Ke Di left in the afternoon once again, likely headed out to drink once more. Mu En was in his own room, not knowing if he was looking at the pictures on the wall and 'training his hands', or was he cultivating Heavenly Energy.

As for Zhou Weiqing, he spent most of his time working hard and cultivating his Heavenly Energy. This was not to say that Zhou Weiqing was very hardworking, but it was just that having so many awesome skills and yet not sufficient Heavenly Energy to sustain them all, it was just too painful a thing. Furthermore, he could clearly feel that the cultivation speed of the Immortal Deity Technique was double his previous speed ever since he broke through the first portion, as the five energy whirlpools drew in energy at a rate that normal Heavenly Jewel Masters could not compare with.

No matter what, Zhou Weiqing still had fear in his heart regarding the Immortal Deity Technique. It just hurt so much every time he broke through a Death Acupuncture Point, and it was just luck that he had the energy from the black pearl earlier. Alas, starting on this Immortal Deity Technique was like boarding

a pirate ship, now he could only hope to complete it as soon as possible and break through all 36 Death Acupuncture Points, after all, it was better to get the pain over with as soon as possible. This was one of the reasons why he was so enthusiastic about training and cultivating.

At this moment, Zhou Weiqing, Shangguan Bing'er and Mu En were sitting around a pot of Zhou Weiqing's soup, which contained the bamboo and other unique vegetables from the Stars Forest.

“Little Wei, this little white tiger of yours, does it really not need to eat?” Mu En glanced at the Little White Tiger which was lazing in Zhou Weiqing's lap. He did not know whether or not the little thing was really a Heavenly Beast, but he told Zhou Weiqing that even if it were so, it was still a youngling, and it wouldn't grow up without dozens of years. Of course, rearing it as a pet was still fine.

Zhou Weiqing munched upon the bamboos that he had just dug up, and said: “I don't know what's going on either, but this little thing keeps going strong even without eating. I'll just leave it be.”

Mu En's eyes revealed a hint of curiosity: “Strange. If it isn't a Heavenly Beast, then it would have died long ago without eating. Yet, if it's a Heavenly Beast, I have never even heard of such a white coloured tiger. Could it be a skin disease?”

“What?! Could that be?” Zhou Weiqing eyed the little white tiger with an unfriendly look, as if he was about to throw it off its lap in fear of some transferable disease.

The little white tiger seemed to sense its incoming danger, shaking its head cutely, and roaring at Mu En.

“Eh, this little thing is very intelligent! It seems to know what I said. Little Wei, if this little thing is really a Heavenly Beast, then you have really gotten lucky! The higher the rank of the Heavenly Beast, the more intelligent it is. Alas, this little thing is still a youngling, otherwise, if it were a little bigger, you could use it as a steed.”

When the little white tiger heard that, its little eyes widened and it even stopped shaking its head, as if saying: What, you mere humans dare to use me as a steed?

Mu En grinned and laughed, as he chewed on his tobacco pipe, causing Shangguan Bing'er to look down quickly to prevent herself from losing her appetite.

“Little Wei, if this little thing is really a Heavenly Beast, and a King of the beasts, tiger type Heavenly Beast, then it is likely to be at least Zong Stage and above. Treat it well, and even if you aren't able to use it, perhaps your kids will be able to.”

“Mu En Senior, what are you saying!” Shangguan Bing'er flushed in embarrassment, giving Zhou Weiqing a little kick before running out with her bowl.

Mu En said contently: “She'll get used to it. Heh, Little Wei, how about I ask Hua Feng to let me have her as a disciple as well, to learn together with you.”

“What? No, no, no, teacher, you’re so great and strong, with such amazing abilities that even the gods and devils fear, how can you easily teach others?! I want to be your only disciple, and never share it with anyone, not even my wife! Those are our heritage secrets!” What a joke, how could he possibly let Shangguan Bing’er learn from his Scoundrel teacher... Heavens! What if she became a female scoundrel, then he wouldn’t need to live anymore. Although Hua Feng was a homosexual, but that’s a lot better than this perverted old man here! Instantly, Zhou Weiqing felt that homosexuals were so great! Although he was in love with his dad, at least it was very safe to have his wife learning from Hua Feng! Safety first!

The next day, as dawn broke, Zhou Weiqing was swatted awake by Mu En. Even with his strong senses, he did not know how Mu En entered his room without him discovering.

“Good morning teacher, so early?” Zhou Weiqing had cultivated for most of the night while lying down, and only started sleeping not long ago as the position was too comfortable, and as a result he was still rather sleepy. “Don’t talk rubbish, get up quickly, we’re leaving after breakfast.” Mu En grabbed the quilt off Zhou Weiqing.

Zhou Weiqing had no choice but to clamber off the bed, and only then did he realise that Mu En was dressed very differently from yesterday. Decked out in a grey outfit, he no longer looked like the lazy and mischievous old man of yesterday, looking full of energy and vitality.

Zhou Weiqing quickly dressed himself and followed Mu En into the courtyard, seeing that Mu En had already prepared breakfast, and the rest were all in the courtyard eating. As his eyes fell upon Shangguan Bing'er, he saw that she was already neatly dressed; her original Purple Dawn Bow had disappeared, and she was now shouldering a smaller green bow. The Purple Dawn Bow was considered a longbow, and was rather large, but the new green bow she had was almost half the size of the Purple Dawn Bow.

Mu En gave him a tap on the head, saying: "You do not need to look any further, that's what Hua Feng gave to the little girl. He sure is generous, that Green Spirit Bow is light and has an extremely high firing rate, and is definitely one of the best bows for a Wind Attribute Jewel Master, a lot better than the large and heavy Purple Dawn Bow.

Zhou Weiqing grinned and said: "Teacher, look at Senior Hua Feng, so generous even for a welcoming gift... I've followed you for at least 2 years, shouldn't you give me a good bow as well?"

Mu En gave a humph and said: "Hua Feng is rich, but I, Your Father, is very poor, even if I have money, it's all spent on your temporary Shi Mu. En... Little Wei, let teacher give you a life lesson right now, how to depend on yourself!"

Zhou Weiqing had just scooped a mouth of soup into his mouth, and on hearing his teacher's words, he almost sprayed it all out. He thought to himself: Huyan Master is already considered a miser, it seems like this master is comparable or even worse...

He is making a pun – 霸王弓 (Overlord Bow) 霸王攻 (Forcing yourself on someone) where 弓(Gong) and 攻 sound exactly the

same.

调教, which originally means train / teach. However, in recent days on the internet it has become a slang which has a sexual innuendo. ie. I'm going to tiao jiao that girl to be my s** slave.

Chapter 31 – Consolidated Equipment, Skills Stored – Stars Rating (1)

Although Mu En did not give his little rogue disciple any welcoming gifts, but when the group left the Heavenly Bow Unit, Zhou Weiqing still got a change in gear, and his original Purple Dawn Bow had been swapped for a huge black bow. The Purple Dawn Bow was already considered rather large, almost 1.5m long, but the black bow he was carrying now was almost 2 metres long! It was definitely a large contrast with the small Green Spirit Bow of Shangguan Bing'er.

Naturally, the large black bow was given to Zhou Weiqing by Luo Ke Di. Although he loved to drink and was roguish in nature, but he definitely kept his word. However, what made Zhou Weiqing rather gloomy was that the large black bow was almost 80 jin in weight, almost four times that of the Purple Dawn Bow! The draw the bow, was not much easier than his Overlord Bow, and even with his current strong physique boosted by his Strength Physical Jewel, he still needed to circulate a bit of Heavenly Energy and release his Physical Jewel before he could draw the bow to its maximum.

Mu En told Zhou Weiqing that the bow was called Black Dawn Bow, and was not sold anywhere. It was made from thousand year Stars Wood, and it had the greatest shooting range amongst all bows except those Consolidated Equipments. It was also good for training and building up strength, endurance and overall physique.

Luckily, they were not traveling by foot, and as they headed out,

Hua Feng brought them to a luxurious and grand looking horse carriage which was now parked outside, though Zhou Weiqing did not know when that had happened. The carriage was more than twice the size of an ordinary horse carriage, and was adorned with gilded gold and jade on the outside, with lavish decorations, seemingly a little vulgar, and it was harnessed to 4 large horses.

Within the horse carriage, the four walls were lined with an unknown fur rugs, and the large spacious seats were almost like sofas, sitting in them felt so soft yet sturdy, and they were extremely comfortable. Such a horse carriage could even seat at least a dozen people easily and in comfort.

“Teacher, you all are too extravagant, how much does this horse carriage cost?” Although Zhou Weiqing said that, he was practically drooling at the sight. Such a comfortable and luxurious horse carriage, if he could own it and travel the world with several beauties, that would be the best thing in the world, even though the exterior was rather overdone.

Hearing Zhou Weiqing mention the horse carriage, Mu En couldn't help but have a indignant look on his face. “This horse carriage isn't ours, it's Hua Feng, that fellow's personal property. Do you think we can sit on it for free? That miserly fellow will collect payment depending on the distance traveled, and every time we go on a mission, at least a fifth of our cuts go to him.”

Hua Feng was sitting deep in the carriage, and as he heard Mu En's words, he gave a humph. “Old scoundrel, don't you have a conscience when you speak? Isn't it more than worth your while to travel in my horse carriage? After all, it's constructed out of

titanium alloy, and even has a shock absorption system installed, not only is it much faster than us when traveling long distances, but its comfort allows us focus our energies on the mission itself. Furthermore, my additional cut is not just for the horse carriage fees, but also the other consumables for the mission. If you guys are willing to take charge of those, I don't mind."

Mu En turned his head around in a huff, while Luo Ke Di, who was lounging back with a wine bottle in hand, said: "Enough, old scoundrel, you are your beloved disciple already conned me so much, and I, Your Father, didn't even complain so much."

Mu En gave him a thwack on his head, saying: "Little Rogue, you're the youngest here. Whose father are you?!"

Luo Ke Di said in anger: "Bullshit, such smelly bullshit! Isn't your disciple a human? Isn't Boss Hua Feng's disciple a human? Are they older than me?"

The silent Han Mo looked coldly at Luo Ke Di and chimed in: "If you keep making noise, I'll throw you out!"

Luo Ke Di said exasperatedly: "It was old scoundrel who started it and taunted me. Why don't you throw him out?"

Han Mo said passively: "I can't beat him, but I can beat you. A single hand cannot clap after all, and if I throw you out, that'll be sufficient."

“Hmph, taking advantage of the weak and scared of the strong. Little Mo Mo, I’ll remember you.” Luo Ke Di had a gloomy look on his face as he gulped down more wine, but he quietened down.

The horse carriage had a specialised carriage driver, who seemed to be around 40 years of age with a honest look. Every four hours of travel, they would stop for a while to rest their horses, and would only travel a total of 14-16 hours a day. However, Hua Feng was not exaggerating; although they were traveling long distances, sitting in this horse carriage was so comfortable that it was even an enjoyable trip. Furthermore, there was a hidden compartment under the carriage, storing a large amount of all sorts of food, drinks and arrows.

One time, Zhou Weiqing had accidentally knocked onto the walls of the carriage, and he had realised that even if he used his Overlord Bow to shoot, he might not even be able to penetrate the thick titanium alloy construction of the horse carriage. He could barely imagine how much it cost to build this horse carriage, and couldn’t help but rejoice to himself – anyway he and Bing’er did not have any cut from the mission and thus would not be reduced any further, so they naturally were having the ride for free.

As for what the mission they were heading to do was, no one had explained it to them. The only thing that Zhou Weiqing and Shangguan Bing’er knew vaguely, was that it was somewhere in the borders of the Fei Li Empire.

In just seven days, by sitting in this luxurious horse carriage, they had reached the borders of the Heavenly Bow Empire and Fei Li Empire. As the horse carriage traveled ahead, they quickly

entered a mountain valley. Although there was a road cut into the valley, it was rather small. The previous time Zhou Weiqing and Shangguan Bing'er had entered Fei Li Empire, they had not traveled this path, but another even smaller road which was somewhat closer. However, with their horse carriage, they had no choice but to traverse this path which was just large enough for them to pass. At the moment, Zhou Weiqing had his eyes closed as he cultivated his Heavenly Energy. All of a sudden, he heard loud neighs as the horses reared up, along with the cries of the carriage driver, before the carriage came to a screeching halt.

Hua Feng opened his eyes slowly, and without even looking outside, he said to Mu En: "Old scoundrel, business is here, you can bring Little Wei along with you."

Mu En's eyes brightened, and he grinned as he said: "I will not reject such a good offer. Little Wei, come let's go."

The other members revealed an indignant look, even including the normally expressionless Han Mo. Luo Ke Di gave an ingratiating look as he said to Mu En: "Old scoundrel, don't you need some help from your buddy?"

Mu En glared at him and said: "Help your sister... ." To which Luo Ke Di replied with a middle finger.

Zhou Weiqing was full of questions as he got off the carriage together with Mu En: "Teacher, what's going on?"

Mu En said with a big grin: "It's our opportunity to make money!

Hua Feng has given us a lot of face, it probably counts as a welcoming present for you. This boss of ours, he is as shrewd and astute as a devil. Why do you think he made the exterior of the horse carriage look so luxurious and vulgar? There is a reason for that.”

Just as Mu En finished speaking, there came a loud shout from the front. “HALT! This mountain is open by me, these trees are planted by me, if you want to cross this road, leave a toll; if not, you’ll have to face death!”

“Bandits?” Zhou Weiqing was an intelligent person, and he quickly understood the underlying meaning behind Mu En’s words. They were unexpectedly using the luxurious horse carriage to draw the attention of bandits and robbing them in return. Such an idea... only this bunch of weirdos could come up with it...

As the two of them exited the carriage, they saw that the front of the road had been blocked by a large group of bandits, numbering more than 20, all of whom were holding weapons. On the side of the mountains, there were another dozen or so bandits holding bows and arrows pointed at them. These bandits were all dressed in blue, and their leader was even dressed in splint mail, and they were definitely an organised group.

The bandit leader seemed to be around 40 years of age, with a large knife held in his hands. “You guys sure have the guts to cross our Light Breeze Mountain Ridge with just a horse carriage! As the saying goes, leaving others with some space, to get some leeway in the future. If you want to live, leave half your valuables in the carriage, while the other half you can carry away. You’ll have to

leave the horses and the carriage though, they now belong to I, Your Father.

Mu En gave a miserable look, moving his trembling body forth a few steps and saying with a pleading expression: “This bandit big brother, look at us, old and young alike, without this horse carriage, how can we possibly travel! Please do us a favour, let us through please, you can have half of our belongings, but we really need the carriage.”

The bandit leader’s face changed: “Dammit, who are you calling big brother? I, your father, will beat you to death for that! You’re older than me by at least 20 years old and you dare call me brother? Am I that old huh?”

Zhou Weiqing was observing from the side, and could clearly sense Mu En’s breathing grow rapid, his humble appearance changing swiftly. Zhou Weiqing grinned in his heart, knowing that his teacher hated being called old. “Little brat! Those in front are yours, I’ll take those on the side.”

“However, leave that one for me, I want to take care of him personally. Let’s go!” Mu En was enraged by the bandit leader and didn’t want to continue acting any further.

Zhou Weiqing nodded and said: “Alright.” As he said that, he had already taken off the Black Dawn Bow from his back, swiftly circulating his Heavenly Energy and releasing his Heavenly Jewels. Nocking an arrow, he quickly drew the tough Black Dawn Bow to a full crescent, pointing it to the front.

The bandit leader started, he had never expected this pair, one old and one young, to dare resist. “Kill them!”

The bandits on the side of the mountain started firing their arrows, but at that moment, Mu En moved. Zhou Weiqing also released his arrow at the same time.

Swoosh like a black bolt of lightning, the arrow flew out. The arrogant bandit leader felt a wave of heat pass by his ears, and a flash of pain at his earlobes, and 4 of the bandits beside him fell. The arrow pierced through the four and continued flying off into the distance.

Even Zhou Weiqing was startled by the sheer power of the Black Dawn Bow; just counting the range and the penetrating power, it was almost as strong as his Overlord Bow.

At this point, arrows were raining down upon them, focused on Mu En and Zhou Weiqing. Mu En moved at the same time, and before Zhou Weiqing could even see anything clearly, he saw a grey blur shimmer around him, and Mu En reappeared once more with more than 20 arrows in his hands.

Chapter 31 – Consolidated Equipment, Skills Stored – Stars Rating (2)

Mu En's hands seemed to blur as he just seemed to fling the arrows out randomly. However, it was as if the arrows had eyes, and screams rang out along the mountainside. The dozen or so bandit archers lining both sides all perished, with an arrow in their throat. The bandit archers were about 50 yards from where they stood, and were on higher ground; Mu En only gave a casual throw of the arrows and had struck over 20 targets with such accuracy, the level of difficulty was just too high!

This was the first time Zhou Weiqing had seen his teacher attack, and he couldn't help but stare, dumbfounded.

Poof, A kick landed on Zhou Weiqing's buttock, as Mu En said exasperatedly: "What are you staring at!? Are you trying to get killed? Go deal with the bunch in front, if anyone escapes you won't get a cut! You're not allowed to use arrows!" As he said that, the Black Dawn Bow which was in Zhou Weiqing's hands a moment ago suddenly disappeared and reappeared in Mu En's hands.

It was only at this point that the bandits on the road awoke to the situation; even the most foolish person would have realised by now that this horse carriage was not an easy target at all. The bandit leader ignored the burning pain in his ear, and gave a strained shout: "Run, sound the alarm!" Saying that, he turned tail and fled. The group of bandits were clearly experienced in fleeing, and they scattered off in all directions, with hardly a single one headed together.

Having been given the reminder by Mu En, Zhou Weiqing slammed his right foot on the ground and shot forward. He knew that Mu En did not allow him to use his bow and arrow in order to test his close combat skills in an actual battle. Even if he did not mind losing face, he did not want to throw his father's face either! As he thought of that, Zhou Weiqing felt his blood boil as excitement surged through him.

As soon as his right leg struck the ground, there was an explosion, startling even Mu En. As Zhou Weiqing's body flew off like an arrow, his speed actually caused Mu En to reveal a surprised expression.

Almost instantly, Zhou Weiqing had caught up to two bandits; the bandits were at best of equal physique to ordinary soldiers and could hardly compare to a Heavenly Jewel Master like him. With each hand grabbing hold of a bandit's neck, he slammed their heads together, causing them to lose consciousness. Almost at the same time, his body vaulted forward, and his left hand struck out, shooting forth a black light which flew forth like a bolt of black lightning, heading towards the majority of the bandits. His body flashed away again in the other direction, with the sheer explosive power of his Demonic Right Leg, he caught up with bandit after bandit, throwing their unconscious bodies back to where Mu En was. As for the black light, it was naturally the Touch of Darkness, which had by now bound over a dozen bandits and brought them together. Only the bandit leader was fast enough to reach the mountains.

Of course, Zhou Weiqing couldn't possibly let him off, and with another burst of speed, he surged forth towards the bandit leader.

As if he had eyes on the back of his head, the bandit leader suddenly kicked savagely to the right while running, causing his body to spin around in a surprising turn, the large knife in his hands twirling towards Zhou Weiqing viciously. From the strength of the blow and the whistling sound it made as it cut through the air, it was clear that it held some Heavenly Energy. The bandit leader was at the cultivation level of the second level of Heavenly Energy, though he hadn't Awakened his Power Jewels, it was still this strength that allowed him to become the leader of the bandits. Alas, this time, he had met an actual Heavenly Jewel Master.

The large knife had only closed half the distance to Zhou Weiqing when a green light flashed, and the bandit leader found that he was suddenly unable to move. The next instant, Zhou Weiqing had grabbed his collar, and with a surge of Heavenly Energy, this bandit leader who weighed at least 200 jin including his splint mail had been thrown all the way back 20 yards onto the path. Of course, it could not be forgotten that Zhou Weiqing had a pure Strength Physical Jewel.

From the time that Zhou Weiqing exploded into action, to the bandits being captured, it was barely the time taken to breathe 10 breaths of air. No matter Mu En or the other members in the carriage, no one had expected him to finish the battle so quickly.

Hua Feng's eyes lit up, looking at Zhou Weiqing contemplatively.

Zhou Weiqing returned to Mu En's side, saying: "Teacher, you guys are too evil, using the horse carriage to lure bandits, and robbing them instead."

At this time, Mu En was standing in front of the bandit leader, kicking him repeatedly as he muttered: “Calling me old? Calling me old...” Zhou Weiqing stood at the side with his mouth twitching. So vicious!

“Spare me, please spare me lords...” The bandit leader cried out shrilly, trying to resist but he couldn’t garner the strength to do so. Zhou Weiqing’s Fetters of Wind was not something that an ordinary person could easily handle.

Mu En looked over at the dozen or so bandits bound at the side, and said: “Little brat, the first skill you stored for your Darkness Attribute, it’s the Touch of Darkness?”

Zhou Weiqing said: “Teacher, you’re so experienced and knowledgeable!”

Mu En said exasperatedly: “What bullshit knowledge, no wonder your old man sent you to the Heavenly Bow Unit. Don’t you know that your father’s eighth Jewel’s Skill is that Touch of Darkness? He likely doesn’t have the face to teach you personally. Hahaha, Old Zhou also has such a day, hahaha, now you can officially be a member of us Paradise Strange, you’re indeed a little weirdo!”

Turning to the bandit leader, Mu En grabbed him up and said: “Where is your lair?! Bring us there now.”

In about an hour, a dozen bandits with ashen faces carried sacks of gold coins back to the carriage under Mu En and Zhou Weiqing’s

supervision, placing the sacks into the hidden compartment of the horse carriage. Before leaving, Mu En patted the bandit leader's face and said: "Remember! When you're in hell, collect more money before trying to rob us!"

In the next instant, Mu En shot out arrows viciously, finishing off all the bandits. "Teacher, they already gave us all their money, why still kill them?" Zhou Weiqing was still rather young after all, and seeing Mu En finishing them off in cold blood, he felt a chill run down his spine.

Mu En gave a humph: "What do you understand, do you think that we are the first targets of these bandits? If we did not have our abilities, what do you think would happen to us when they robbed us? These bandits deserve death more than ten times over."

As the pair returned to the carriage, Luo Ke Di moved over and asked: "Old scoundrel, how much did you earn this time?"

Mu En said exasperatedly: "These poor bastards, we only got less than a hundred thousand gold coins. Without a Jewel master, how strong can these bandits be? Hopefully we get lucky and meet another bunch of bandits later."

Hua Feng said: "Don't complain, remember my 30% cut."

Mu En gave a humph and said: "You vampire!"

Hua Feng's mouth beamed in a graceful smile: "Without my

horse carriage, with the way you look, do you think that bandits would even bother attacking you? Little Wei, your first skill for your Darkness Attribute is already the Touch of Darkness. Are you planning to go on the control route?”

Zhou Weiqing started and said: “What’s the control route?”

The moment he asked that, Mu En couldn’t help but cover his face and lean back in his chair. Gao Shen was so surprised that his eyes bulged out, while Luo Ke Di said: “Are you serious, Little Wei? As Admiral Zhou’s son, you don’t even know what’s control? Who taught you about Heavenly Jewels?”

Shangguan Bing’er flushed and said: “I was the one who taught him. Admiral Zhou only just recently knew about his Heavenly Jewels Awakening, and did not have the opportunity to teach him at all before we came to the Heavenly Bow Unit.”

Hua Feng said: “Simply put, when every Jewel Master is cultivating, they will choose a path that is suited to their Attributes. For example, a fire attribute Elemental Jewel Master will almost always go for on a more offensive route, while a wind attribute Elemental Jewel Master will normally choose to a more nimble or flexible attacking patterns, which is what we call agility attacks. When I mentioned control route, it means focusing on controlling enemies on the battlefield, restricting their movements and attacks. Your Touch of Darkness is a classic control skill, with an additional effect of improving senses and other benefits. I do not know how you managed to successfully Store it, but I have to say I have never seen such a good first Skill.”

Zhou Weiqing said: “Leader, I have never been able to understand how the Stored Skills and Consolidated Equipment are classified, don’t they all improve and evolve as the number of Jewels increase?”

Hua Feng said gently: “There are differences of course; no matter Consolidated Equipment or Stored Skills, they are classified according to their worth, and that is determined by several factors. First of all, is their growth factor. You are right that all skills will improve as the amount of Jewels increase. However, they do have differing rates of improvement, and the when a Jewel is added, a Skill could have a huge difference in how it evolves. For example, if you Store a Skill from a Shi Stage Heavenly Beast, when it evolves, it increases at a rate of 1, while a Zun Stage Heavenly Beast’s skill might increase at the rate of 2, Zong Stage at the rate of 4, and so on so forth. As such, the Skill Storing Palaces have come up with a Stars Rating for Consolidate Equipment and Stored Skills, to determine how strong they are depending on how many stars they are assigned. Of course, the stronger the skill, the more stars they have; the lowest being 1 star, and the highest 12 stars.”

“Taking your Touch of Darkness as an example, it would be considered a 8 Star skill by the Skill Storing Palaces. In general, Shi Stage Heavenly Beasts’ Skills are from 1-3 Stars, Zun Stage Beasts 4-6 Stars, Zong Stage Beasts 7-9 Stars. As for the Skills above 9 Stars, only Heavenly Jewel Masters will be able to get them. The general consensus is that you are usually able to Store Skills of a similar Star rating as your number of Jewels, or you might not be able to fully express your strength. To actually Store a 8 Star Skill when you only have one set of Jewels, it is something that we have never heard of previously.”

“Furthermore, when we are rating skills, control skills generally are considered 1 Star higher than Skills of the same rank. As such, although the Touch of Darkness is an 8 Star skill, it is still comparable to some of the 9 Star Skills. This is also the same for Consolidated Equipment, those which have sockets are usually given an additional Star rating as well. It can also be said that the Star Rating of a Jewel Master’s skills are also what we use to determine the person’s future talent and possibilities.”

Chapter 31 – Consolidated Equipment, Skills Stored – Stars Rating (3)

“Yesterday, when I asked Bing’er to show me her skills, I did a simple rating of her abilities. Amongst Bing’er’s two Physical Jewel Consolidated Equipment, her Silent Tracking Arrow can be considered 3 Stars. Alas, as a Consolidated Equipments, its use to her will gradually reduce.”

“As for the Wind Wielding Boots, it is at least 6 Stars. If Bing’er reaches at least the 9 Jeweled Upper Zong Stage, she could possibly even make use of it to fly. With the addition of the socket it has, her Wind Wielding Boots can even be ranked at 7 Stars, and is definitely a great piece of equipment for Wind Attribute Heavenly Jewel Masters. As for her first Elemental Jewel’s Skill, Wind Blades, it is only a 2 Star Skill and its growth rate is rather weak. Luckily, it is just her first Elemental Jewel.”

Listening to Hua Feng’s words, everyone turned to look at Zhou Weiqing. He blinked and shrank back in his seat warily: “Why are all of you staring at me?”

Luo Ke Di grinned and said: “Of course it’s to look at your skills and equipment to rate them!”

Hua Feng said with a serious expression: “Little Wei, although you are already a member of the Heavenly Bow Unit, I will not force you to reveal your secrets. However, I do hope that you will be able to let us understand your power; this will allow us to better coordinate during fights. Admiral Zhou sent you here to the Heavenly Bow Unit to train, and I trust that you understand that

he trusts us implicitly. The Heavenly Bow Unit will always be the protector of Heavenly Bow Empire.”

Zhou Weiqing looked at Shangguan Bing'er, then at Mu En, who shrugged and said helplessly: “Let them see it then, curiosity killed the cat, I hope their hearts are able to take it. Hmph!” Luo Ke Di said exasperatedly: “Old scoundrel, stop bragging, would it kill you not to brag? I, Your Father, have a very strong heart.”

Mu En did not even retort, just giving him a cold smile.

An hour later, the speeding horse chariot's back door suddenly opened. A figure flew out of the carriage, or more accurately, it had been kicked out.

Luo Ke Di's angry voice came from within the carriage: “Who's the disgusting one! You're the most disgusting one! Ahhhhhh!! My poor heart! I can't stand it anymore, envy, jealousy, hatred!!!”

Without question, the poor soul who had been kicked off the horse carriage was Zhou Weiqing. After they had gone through Rating all of his skills, the entire carriage was filled with the sounds of rapid beating hearts, even Mu En was no exception. What followed was him being kicked out of the carriage, with the excuse being that he needed to strengthen his physique, needing more training and exercise...

“This is clearly just jealousy!!!” Zhou Weiqing cried out with a depressed look on his face, as he ran for his life after the carriage, the heavy Black Dawn Bow on his back.

When Zhou Weiqing had revealed his Alexandrite Cat's Eye, a strange atmosphere grew in the carriage. Gao Shen who was drinking water spat it all out onto Han Mo's face; Hua Feng momentarily forgot he was in the carriage and stood up in surprise, hitting his head on the roof; Han Mo's jaw dropped, causing him to drink some of the water which Gao Shen had spat on him, and was still retching. Luo Ke Di had given himself a slap, as he had been unable to believe his own eyes; he did not control his own strength properly and the right half of his face was still swollen.

When Zhou Weiqing revealed his skills one after the other, besides Shangguan Bing'er, the rest of the members' faces twitched. If not for the fact that their cultivation levels were high, perhaps they would have gotten a stroke there and then. Under such a circumstance, how could Zhou Weiqing not get kicked off the carriage...

In the end, his final Stars Rating were as follows.

The Overlord Bow was rated with 7 Stars, with the addition of the socket, it was 8 Stars.

As for his Stored Skills of his Elemental Jewel, the Fetters of Wind was Rated 8 Stars, Lightning Explosive Palm 7 Stars, Blink 9 Stars due to it being a life saving skill, Touch of Darkness 8 Stars. Both the Devour Skill and Absolute Delay were not ranked, as even the Heavenly Bow Unit members weren't able to properly determine it.

According to Hua Feng, Zhou Weiqing's first jewel had Stored Skills which were probably better than all of Admiral Zhou's skills!

For quite a long period of time after that, a bizarre sight could be witnessed within the Fei Li Empire – a lavish carriage would be racing forward, while a young man in ragged clothes would wildly chase after it without pause.

...

Twenty Days Later.

The North Border of Fei Li Empire.

“Do you see the patch of snow-covered forest just ahead? Our mission today is to hunt and kill a Zong Stage Heavenly Beast, called the Icy Soul Heavenly Bear, which lives in this forest. After killing it, we have to retrieve its nucleus core, fur, palms and gallbladder.”

“What is the nucleus core?” Zhou Weiqing asked. Currently, his skin was obviously a lot more tanned than before, but he seemed a lot more energetic than before.

Since yesterday, Zhou Weiqing had finally been allowed to stop running and he had also been able to change into a fresh set of clothes. Having run all the way since they entered the Fei Li Empire, his entire outlook seemed different, more vigorous and energetic, and he seemed to have grown even taller as well.

Although he still had his honest simple look, his eyes would occasionally gleam with a light that displayed a strong ability.

After running crazily for 20 days, the greatest benefit he had was the surprising amount of Heavenly Energy cultivated. As the energy whirlpools of the five Death Acupuncture Points constantly drew in energy from the atmosphere to replenish his rapidly used energy, they sped up to their maximum. The Immortal Deity Technique was originally already a lot faster than ordinary cultivation techniques, and with this increase in speed while running, Zhou Weiqing could feel that his fifth level of Heavenly Energy was starting to stir restlessly, as if on the verge of breaking through the first Death Acupuncture Point of the second portion. With the experience from the first portion of the Immortal Deity Technique at hand, Zhou Weiqing could sense vaguely that the first Death Acupuncture Point of every portion was the easiest to assault, yet the toughest to break through successfully. After all, didn't he almost die while attempting to breakthrough the Clavicle Death Acupuncture Point?

Besides the benefit of the increase in Heavenly Energy, there were 2 other benefits. First of all, it allowed his Physical Jewel's Strength boost to properly integrate with his body. Besides his Demonic Right Leg, which was already fully integrated, his Physical Jewel's strength boost had a marked improvement in integration with his body, and as soon as he focused his will, he was able to bring forth the strength, and wasn't as stiff and inflexible as before.

Mu En was beside Zhou Weiqing, and he said: "The nucleus core appears only in Zong Stage Heavenly Beasts and above. After all, Heavenly Beasts also have Heavenly Energy, and in essence, there

isn't much difference from our own Heavenly Energy. Once they have reached the Zong Stage, they are able to form a Neidan, which is what we call the nucleus core. The nucleus core can be used by a Jewel Master of the same attribute, which can assist in speeding up cultivation, and also aiding in the success of breaking through and forming of new Jewels. Another usage for nucleus core includes usage in socketed Consolidated Equipment. Not only can the sockets on the Consolidated Equipment be used to socket (contain) Elemental Jewels, they can also socket nucleus cores of the same attribute. For example, you can socket a Strength Attribute Heavenly Beast's nucleus core in your Overlord Bow, and it would increase the power of the bow. Furthermore, since the nucleus cores are able to absorb energy from the atmosphere to replenish themselves, they are not easily destroyed, and when you do not need them, you can easily remove them from the socket."

When Zhou Weiqing heard that, a light gleamed in his eyes: "That's so useful! What are we waiting for, let's get a few more!"

Mu En said angrily: "Fool! Quiet, don't throw our faces again!"

Besides Hua Feng, the other members stared at Zhou Weiqing like a fool. Ever since they knew of his attributes, these few fellows showed him what jealousy was like, and seized every chance they had to use words against him.

Luo Ke Di said sarcastically: "Get a few more? Do you think they drop from the heavens? That we can just get them as we wish? Do you know how dangerous Zong Stage Heavenly Beasts are? Even with your father's power, facing a Zong Stage Heavenly Beast, even if he is of the proper attribute opposing it, he will only be barely

able to defeat a Low Level Zong Stage Beast. Why else do you think all of us came?”

Hua Feng said: “Alright, enough. Let’s get ready to take action. According to our employer, there are at least 20 Icy Soul Heavenly Bears living in this forest. Mu En, you protect Little Wei. Bing’er, you stay by my side. Let’s go.”

As he said that, he walked to the side of the horse carriage, and pressed something at the side. Suddenly, two hidden drawers popped out of the two sides with a metallic grinding sound, and it was filled with various things.

As the members of the Heavenly Bow Unit quickly changed and geared up, soon all of them were outfitted with an additional maroon leather armor. The leather armor did not just protect their upper body, it also covered the joint areas and some critical weak points, including a helmet. At the same time, each of them carried two bows, with a large quiver on the back. For Hua Feng, Luo Ke Di and Mu En, their quivers held about 200 arrows, but for Han Mo and Gao Shen, their quiver was practically filled to the brim, covering their entire back. From a rough estimate, Zhou Weiqing thought there was at least 500 arrows in each of their quivers. Below the quiver, there was a pouch of water and rations.

As soon as they had finished equipping themselves, the lazy looking bunch of the Heavenly Bow Unit turned business-like, with a cold aura emitting from them.

As Zhou Weiqing stood beside Shangguan Bing’er watching, he could feel a sense of bloodlust rising in him as they wore the

leather armor, feeling a strange sense of arrogance invading him.

Zhou Weiqing and Shangguan Bing'er did not have the specially crafted quiver, and they both carried four ordinary quivers totalling 200 arrows as well as some additional stores.

The seven of them stealthily entered the forest, which was already considered part of the border between the Wan Shou Empire.

“Teacher, what are the leather armor you are wearing made of? Why does it give off such a strange feeling?” Zhou Weiqing asked curiously.

Mu En grinned and said: “Foolish little brat, these are unbelievable treasure, made of dragon hide.”

Zhou Weiqing's eyes opened wide as he exclaimed: “Dragonhide?? Are there really dragons in the world?”

Chapter 32 – Icy Soul Heavenly Bear (1)

Mu En said: “Of course there are. Even when they are newborn, dragons are still powerful Zong Stage Heavenly Beasts, while adults are one of the top ranked amongst the Heavenly Beasts. They aren’t usually found anywhere else but in the Wan Shou Empire, where there are many dragon-like Heavenly Beasts. These leather armor of ours were created in the past when we purchases a huge piece of dragonhide and custom made them. Not only are they light and flexible, they also have an extremely strong defense. More importantly for our current mission is the aura it gives off, which will deter other ordinary Heavenly Beasts. They are indeed superb items.”

Zhou Weiqing grinned and said: “Heh, teacher, is there any remaining dragonhide?”

How could Mu En not know what he was thinking, and he said exasperatedly: “How could we possibly have any remaining. If we had any surplus we’d have covered our entire bodies with it.”

At the same time, Hua Feng’s voice came from the front: “Maintain silence.”

As they stealthily entered the forest, the snow was about a foot deep, and it was tough for them to traverse the terrain. The weather was extremely cold, and Zhou Weiqing wore woolen clothing, but Shangguan Bing’er was unexpectedly only wearing a single garment. She looked towards Zhou Weiqing, her gentle gaze making him feel an itch in his heart.

Previously, Admiral Zhou had given him a birthday present called the Snow Silk Coverall, which was light and tight fitting; not only could it be used as a protective inner armour, it was also able to maintain body temperature. The reason why Shangguan Bing'er was not feeling cold was because Zhou Weiqing had given her the Snow Silk Cover. In his words, it was his betrothal gift, and Shangguan Bing'er had not rejected him. Alas, in a tragedy for him, due to the members of the Heavenly Bow Unit being around all the time, he had not been able to seize any opportunities to be intimate with her.

As soon as they entered the forest, Luo Ke Di vanished into thin air. The rest of them took a formation as such – Hua Feng in the front, Gao Shen and Han Mo at the flanks, Mu En covering the back, while both Zhou Weiqing and Shangguan Bing'er were in the center.

After about an hour of travel, Luo Ke Di appeared suddenly. Currently, he did not look a whit like his normal lazy drunken self, and had a practiced, energetic look. With a gleam in his eyes, he told Hua Feng: “Boss, I’ve scouted out in a 5km radius from here but have yet to find anything. According to our employer’s information, the Icy Soul Heavenly Bears which live in these forests are those who have been exiled from their community. Most of the other Heavenly Beasts which originally lived here have also been chased out by the Icy Soul Heavenly Bears.”

Hua Feng nodded and said: “The mission this time is simple, but the main difficulty remains of the power of the Icy Soul Heavenly Bear. Go on and scout ahead, we will continue deeper in.” As he said that, he used an arrow to draw out a direction in the snow. Luo Ke Di nodded and after some more discussion, he disappeared

once more.

After he left, under Hua Feng's direction, the rest of them circulated their Heavenly Energy and moved at top speeds 5km in the discussed direction, before slowing down once more. Zhou Weiqing realised that the reason Hua Feng did this was to ensure that the companions were able to maintain themselves in top shape in order to react to any unforeseen circumstances.

As they traveled deeper into the forest, 2 days quickly passed. Their movement into the forest was rather slow; they could only traverse about 30km a day, and the busiest amongst them was undoubtedly Luo Ke Di. As the scout, he was always on the move to and fro. Zhou Weiqing had asked Mu En on the down low why they were traveling so slowly, and the answer was simple – for safety.

In such a forest where Zong Stage Heavenly Beasts lived, it didn't require much for mistakes to be made – just 3 of those Zong Stage Heavenly Beasts would be more than sufficient to wipe out their whole party. That was the reason why Luo Ke Di had to keep moving and scouting the way ahead, not only was it to find an Icy Soul Heavenly Bear, it was also to find safe routes for his companions; if anything was amiss, everyone could immediately avoid it.

Under his careful observation, Zhou Weiqing noticed that although they had been searching for two days in this icy jungle, with nary a bite of warm food to eat, the members of the Heavenly Bow Unit still remained calm and solemn, as if long used to such a life. “An assassin's natural enemy is loneliness. An outstanding assassin's best quality was patience.” Hua Feng told him.

Finally, in the 3rd day approaching noon, Luo Ke Di came back with an excited look on his face, with news that perked everyone up – he had spotted a lone Icy Soul Heavenly Bear about 4 km from where they were.

Hua Feng said solemnly: “Rogue, are you sure it’s just a single one?”

Luo Ke Di nodded and said: “As soon as I spotted it, I observed it and the surroundings, before scouting a few km radius to be sure, and there were no signs of another Icy Soul Heavenly Bear. This solo Icy Soul Heavenly Bear seems to be looking for something. It’s stout and strong, so it should already be an adult. Luckily it’s winter now, although it doesn’t need to hibernate like an ordinary bear, its senses are relatively duller than usual.”

Hua Feng immediately made a decision, giving out orders solemnly: “In that case, let’s take action. Everyone, remember, we have to kill the Icy Soul Heavenly Bear in the fastest possible time and immediately retreat. Rogue, you provide the distractions. Gao Shen, Han Mo, both of you will be in charge of disrupting any of its skills. I will be in charge of striking its weak points.”

As he said up to here, his gaze landed on Mu En as he said: “Old scoundrel, the front line, I’ll leave it up to you.” Mu En nodded.

Listening to Hua Feng giving out the tasks, Zhou Weiqing couldn’t help but be surprised. With his teacher’s smallest and thinnest frame, he was actually given the task of being in the front

and facing the Icy Soul Heavenly Bear? Did he hear wrongly?

Hua Feng seemed to notice Zhou Weiqing's thinking, and he said with a faint smile: "Little Wei, when the fight starts, you and Bing'er will have to hide further off and not take action. You both will be in charge of providing support and covering our retreat. Do not feel baffled by my arrangements, Mu En will show you his true strength, and let you know what it means to be invincible in a hundred yards."

With the misgivings in his heart, Zhou Weiqing followed the rest, who advanced ahead under Luo Ke Di's leadership. They sped through the several kilometres distance, before Luo Ke Di finally slowed down and gave a hand signal. All of them instantly slowed and held their breaths in rapt attention as they started advancing slowly and stealthily.

Indeed, after a short distance, they passed some thick pine trees, and their target appeared in their line of sight.

200 yards away, a huge black bear was lying on the ground, its 2 front claws pawing at the ground, looking like it was trying to look for something.

Seeing the huge fellow, Zhou Weiqing and Shangguan Bing'er couldn't help but draw a sharp breath. Although Zhou Weiqing had seen Zong Stage Heavenly Beasts in the Skill-Storing Palace before, those were after all sealed and weakened, each of them well behaved and not shocking to him. However the Icy Soul Heavenly Bear in front of them was totally different. It was at least 6 metres tall, and its huge bear paws were constantly slamming on the

ground, giving forth a Dong Dong sound. Even at 200 yards away, all of them could feel the earth shaking from the reverberations.

The Icy Soul Heavenly Bear had a white patch of fur the size of a large palm on its back, extending all the way down to its tail. Its body was faintly surrounded by a layer of dim icy mist. As its back was facing them, Zhou Weiqing could not tell what was the difference between it and an ordinary bear, besides the size.

Mu En soft voice rang out in Zhou Weiqing's ear: "Every Zong Stage Heavenly Beast can be considered a strong Heavenly Jewel Master."

"For example, this Icy Soul Heavenly Bear can be considered a Strength Type Heavenly Beast, and has 2 elemental attributes – Ice and Wind. Amongst the Zong Stage Heavenly Beasts, it is considered one of the stronger ones, and is extremely troublesome to deal with. Furthermore, its defence is astounding. You and Bing'er should just head up this tree, and no matter what happens later, do not take action rashly, understood?"

Zhou Weiqing nodded and grinned: "Safety first, I understand."

Hua Feng waved his hands slightly, his fingers weaving in a series of signals, and without any further speaking, the 5 members sprang into action.

Luo Ke Di immediately rushed to the side to flank it, while Hua Feng, Gao Shen and Han Mo all moved in different directions as well. Only Mu En raised his right hand, releasing his Physical

Jewels, and headed towards the Icy Soul Heavenly Bear from the front.

Zhou Weiqing and Shangguan Bing'er couldn't help but feel nervousness grip their hearts. This was their first time hunting such a high level Heavenly Beast after all. Zhou Weiqing pointed up the tree, putting his hands around Shangguan Bing'er's waist, before leaping up the tree with her.

Shangguan Bing'er rolled her eyes at him, but did not resist, instead leaning into his embrace. Zhou Weiqing grinned with delight, holding her hands lightly. In this land of ice and snow, breathing in the fragrance from her body, with a big battle to spectate, he felt strangely satisfied. The gloom he had from running those 20 days seemed to vanish in an instant.

At the other side, the members of the Heavenly Bow Unit had already taken action. Silent arrows streaked towards the Icy Soul Heavenly Bear from various different angles, targeting its weak spots like its ears and eyes. Without doubt, towards any living creatures, those were usually their vulnerable points.

However, just as it seemed like the arrows would hit their target, all of a sudden, a layer of dim blue light sprang forth from the Icy Soul Heavenly Bear's body, and with a soft Pssh sound, the arrows were all deflected by the blue light barrier.

The Icy Soul Heavenly Bear gave a savage roar of anger. It had not been hit, but it was angered by the sudden attack and spun its head around towards the direction the arrows had come from. As it turned around, Zhou Weiqing and Shangguan Bing'er could finally

see it from the distance. Its eyes were icy blue, full of bloodlust and killing intent, its gaze seemed piercing like a bolt of lightning shattering through the air.

Wuuu The air around the Icy Soul Heavenly Bear seemed to spin around as howling winds arose in a cyclone, whipping up the snow around. Where the cyclone passed, a loud cracking noise was heard as the trees and brush around were all smashed into pieces.

Chapter 32 – Icy Soul Heavenly Bear (2)

“Such an intelligent Heavenly Beast!” Shangguan Bing’er couldn’t help but cry out. “After being ambushed, it still knows how to clear the surroundings so it can have an unobstructed vision, also preventing its enemies from closing in on it. No wonder teacher said that Zong Stage Heavenly Beasts already have almost human-level intelligence.”

As she spoke, there was a quick change in the battlefield as a piercing red light seemed to brazenly charge into the cyclone of wind and snow, savagely smashing into the blue energy shield around the Icy Soul Heavenly Bear, causing it to roar once more in anger.

Zhou Weiqing noticed that this red glow was another arrow; fired from the opposite direction from the first arrow. The huge bear immediately spun around, attracted by the arrow, as it was obviously stronger than the first.

With a furious howl, the Icy Soul Heavenly Bear smashed its paws onto the ground, causing snow to fly up as a large amount of blue light flew up into the sky, warping into thousands of ice spikes and flying towards the direction of the arrow’s source. The shrill sound of the shards slicing through the air was as if hundreds of archers were firing at once.

Right at this moment, a green cyclone appeared without warning in the path of the large amounts of ice shards. From the sight of it, the strength of the cyclone definitely paled in comparison to the mass of ice shards, but its purpose was not to block and stop them,

but to slightly change their path. This was the power of the Wind Attribute, and it was clearly from Hua Feng.

At this time, Mu En was already within a hundred yards of the Icy Soul Heavenly Bear, and as the Physical Jewel denoting Strength and Agility glittered, a large black longbow coalesced in his hands. The next instant, an arrow with a dim gold aura surrounding it coalesced as well, nocked to the bowstring. Just as he was about to draw the bow, a strange sight appeared before them.

Mu En did not draw the bow directly, instead doing an action that left both Zhou Weiqing and Shangguan Bing'er puzzled. His right hand was still pulling on the bowstring, but the left hand holding the bow did not hold it in place as usual, but twirled the entire bow in a 360 degree spin.

The bowstring of his bow was also black in colour, and as he spun the body of the bow, the entire bow was drawn to the max by the vortex. Zhou Weiqing could clearly see that where Mu En's fingers were holding the bowstring, it had already been twisted in a spiral shape, with the arrow's shaft tangled in the middle.

This was the first time either Zhou Weiqing or Shangguan Bing'er had seen such a strange archery method. After all, the bowstring was usually extremely tough, and twisting it as he did, how much stress did it put on the fingers?! Furthermore, with the arrow tangled up in the twisted bowstring, when Mu En released it, it would naturally have a spinning motion as it flew out, how could he possibly control its direction then? Many questions invaded their minds as Shangguan Bing'er and Zhou Weiqing

focused their minds, their eyes pinned on Mu En as they eagerly watched to see what would happen next.

Just as Mu En was drawing his both with his unique style, from the other 4 directions came an endless stream of arrows towards the Icy Soul Heavenly Bear. Furthermore, it was arranged so that just as it was preparing to charge towards a particular direction, another arrow would strike it from the opposite direction. This caused it to roll around in confusion momentarily, not knowing which direction to strike out in.

However, the Icy Soul Heavenly Bear was after all a Zong Stage Heavenly Beast with some measure of intelligence, and was not an ordinary Heavenly Beast. After some hesitation, it finally made its choice. Just as it was about to ignore the rest and charge towards a direction, Mu En's bow sounded out.

It was a very peculiar sound, not the usual whistle and whine of an arrow shooting forth, but a wuuu wuuu roar of a cyclone. Zhou Weiqing could clearly see that what Mu En shot forth was not just an arrow, but a ball of black light, and the sound seemed to increase as it flew forth.

Bang! The Icy Soul Heavenly Bear which was just about to charge was struck by the mass of black light, and what happened next caused Zhou Weiqing's jaw to drop.

Earlier, the countless arrows that had flown in from all 4 directions, shot by the other members of the Heavenly Bow Unit, had not managed to even make the Icy Soul Heavenly Bear move an inch. However, Mu En's arrow actually caused it to stumble

back a few steps, the bright blue shield surrounding it noticeably weakened. As the explosion cleared, the bear's attention was undoubtedly fully drawn to Mu En.

Explosive effect! That was the explosive effect, though it was clearly several times that of his Overlord Bow's explosive effect! Zhou Weiqing was extremely familiar with it and realised so in a heartbeat.

Rooaarr! The Icy Soul Heavenly Beast gave an angry roar, its two front paws striking down once again causing a huge explosive sound. Like an angry wave, snow slammed towards Mu En, and Zhou Weiqing could clearly see that there was a trace of blood where Mu En had struck the Icy Soul Heavenly Beast. Teacher's arrow actually injured it?

After Mu En had shot off that arrow, he had instantly moved. His stature was short and thin, and moving with such agility in the snow, just like a snow monkey, and he had disappeared amidst the snow; even Zhou Weiqing and Shangguan Bing'er who had their eyes trained on him did not know how he disappeared.

The Icy Soul Heavenly Bear's attack naturally did not land on Mu En as well, yet his successful attack had enraged the Heavenly Beast, and a bright angry light shone forth from its icy blue eyes. Its large body seemed to shrink downwards a little, then in the next instant, it leaped forth; its huge body seemed to blur into a shadow as it closed the 100 yard gap in an instant; as it passed by, those surviving trees that hadn't been destroyed by the earlier attacks were blown into smithereens. As its charge ended, it straightened its body, its paws filled with a strong blue light before

it slammed down onto the ground once more.

A surprising scene once again entered Shangguan Bing'er and Zhou Weiqing's eyes. Just as the Icy Soul Heavenly Bear slammed down onto the ground with a huge roaring sound, an uncountable number of huge ice shards flew up into the air from the ground in a 50 yard radius from its body.

These ice shards were all at least 3 metres long, gleaming and sharp at the ends. Without a doubt, any creature in that radius would have its body pierced by the rising shards.

Obviously, the Icy Soul Heavenly Bear had also lost track of Mu En, but its lunge had instantly closed the gap and brought it to where Mu En had been earlier before it launched such an area of effect attack, the goal was to kill off the sneaky Mu En in a single strike.

Such power! Zhou Weiqing thought to himself, while Shangguan Bing'er had to hold onto her own mouth to prevent herself from crying out in surprise.

As the bear's immense strength burst forth, an incredibly terrifying aura filled the area as the gleaming sharp ice shards jutted out from the ground. However, Mu En was still nowhere to be found, and it was clear that he had not been struck by the attack.

Just as the Icy Soul Heavenly Bear had struck out with that powerful blow, the other members of the Heavenly Bow Unit once

again started their assault. This time, all of them attacked at once, as arrows, red light, dark shadows all flew from all directions towards the angry beast. Their targets were all onto its eyes and ears. Without a doubt, at their current levels of strength, these 2 weak points were the only way they could possibly take down the Icy Soul Heavenly Bear.

Another angry roar resounded from the Icy Soul Heavenly Bear, as it tried to spin its body away. However, these arrows seemed to have eyes, no matter how quickly it moved and dodged, they seemed to remain targeted and landing on its eyes and ears. Despite having the energy shield, the attacks still greatly restricted its vision and hearing.

Right at that moment, another Wuu Wuu cyclone sound rang out once more, and as if seizing the opportunity that the Icy Soul Heavenly Bear was rearing up to defend its head, a mass of black light slammed right into the lower 'parts' of the bear. A huge explosion rang out once again, and even with the Icy Soul Heavenly Bear's huge body, it had no choice but to stagger back.

Just a while ago, the Icy Soul Heavenly Bear had still been roaring furiously, but when this arrow struck, it was instantly silenced, its eyes bulging out as it did a very human-like action of shielding its private parts. It's mouth was gaped open, but it was as if something was stuck inside, and it was unable to make a sound.

Shangguan Bing'er, who was in Zhou Weiqing's arms, gave a light humph, blushing slightly as she turned her head around not willing to look. Zhou Weiqing, on the other hand, was staring at the scene with his eyes bulged out like the bear, dumfounded. He

had suddenly realised that the members of the Heavenly Bow Unit had insisted on attacking the eyes and ears of the bear as a feint, causing it to place more emphasis on defending its head, all in preparation for this arrow of Mu En's.

Actually striking the weak point like that... the private parts of the bear... such a place... even if the arrow was blocked by this shield, the explosive impact alone would give the Icy Soul Heavenly Bear something to think about. Rascally... roguish... vulgar... they actually shot that area!

All of a sudden, Zhou Weiqing felt something in his bosom moving, and a furry little head popped out, giving a discontented cry. It was naturally the little white tiger, Fat Cat.

The little fellow had been really thirsty for sleep these few days, it still did not eat anything, and had been sleeping soundly inside of Zhou Weiqing's shirt all this while, causing Zhou Weiqing to almost forget all about it. When he had been hugging Shangguan Bing'er, he had naturally squashed the poor little thing, causing it to awake now and poking its head out to proclaim its discontent. Its cute little paws popped out, grabbing onto Zhou Weiqing's shoulder, as it squeezed its way out and onto the shoulder. As it plopped down comfortably on the shoulder, it saw the strange look of the Icy Soul Heavenly Bear using its paws to cover its privates, unable to cry out.

The strange thing was that, even the attacks of the Heavenly Bow Unit members had stopped, and there was a strange silence in the woods.

“Aooouuuuu!!” A strange, wolf-like cry rang out from its mouth. For a bear to cry out like a wolf, one could only imagine how much pain it was in.

The Icy Soul Heavenly Bear was indeed in much pain. After stiffening for a moment, it gave forth the wretched cry and in the next moment, its original icy blue eyes turned blood red, and a berserked aura seem to spring forth from its body, mixed with a blue green light, as if a fountain blowing out suddenly. Its body was like a huge tornado, smashing everything within its reach. Even though Zhou Weiqing and Shangguan Bing'er were more than 200 yards away, they could still feel the life threatening pressure and aura that seemed to be coming closer.

Chapter 32 – Icy Soul Heavenly Bear (3)

“Little fool, come down, hurry up and follow me.” Mu En’s voice suddenly rang out from below, and Zhou Weiqing quickly held Shangguan Bing’er and jumped down.

“Teacher, that arrow of yours, it’s so savage!” Zhou Weiqing’s lower ‘body’ couldn’t help but shrink back a little on sight of Mu En.

Mu En grinned and said: “Remember, no matter how powerful a person is, there are always weak points. It is the same for Heavenly Beasts. Now, let’s go quickly. That fellow has gone berserk, and it’ll last for at least an hour.

As he said that, he led Zhou Weiqing and Shangguan Bing’er in retreat, to an area more than 500 yards away from the raging bear. Keeping out of sight, they only perked their ears to listen to its rage in the distance. However, none of them noticed that when they left, the cute little white tiger, Fat Cat, glanced at the berserked Icy Soul Heavenly Bear, disdain and scorn in its little eyes.

After Mu En brought the two of them to a safer area, he said smugly: “How was teacher’s 2 arrows? Powerful?”

Zhou Weiqing and Shangguan Bing’er nodded eagerly. For a powerful Zong Stage Heavenly Beast to be injured by his arrows, it was naturally extremely powerful, and indeed something to be proud of.

Mu En grinned and said: “Heh, this is a unique archery method that I created, but it is only suited for Strength Jewel Masters. Alas, my strength is not sufficient to fully control it, and I can only do a single revolution of the bow, otherwise its power will be even greater. However, it is indeed extremely hard to control this skill, and accuracy is a big issue. The more revolutions you turn the bow, the stronger the power, but also the harder it is to control it.”

“The reason why we all retreated so quickly is something you have to learn to read. When Heavenly Beasts feel their life threatened, sometimes they will enter a berserk state. Under such a state, they are at their most terrifying. They are actually draining their life force and innate talent to burst forth with terrifying power, and it will allow them to use several times that of their normal power. It’s somewhat akin to the Demonic Change of those Evil Attribute Heavenly Jewel Masters. The difference is, even under the berserk state, Heavenly Beasts will still have a sliver of intelligence. With the strength of our unit, to even attempt to kill the Icy Soul Heavenly Bear in such a state is definitely impossible, its defence is just too strong. However, after a Heavenly Beast goes through its berserk state, it will enter a weakened phase for quite a period of time. As such, we have all retreated to wait for it to enter its weakened phase. Only then will we have a chance to finish it off. Do you understand now?”

Both Zhou Weiqing and Shangguan Bing’er nodded simultaneously. Without question, such teachings on the battlefield was much easily etched into their memory.

Looking at the harassing attacks of the separated members of the Heavenly Bow Unit, and how in truth they were all done with a purpose in mind, how they managed to make use of that to confuse

the Icy Soul Heavenly Bear for a while, all down to the final act of shooting it down there to anger it and cause it to enter a berserk state. It could be said that from the start, the members had a well thought out and executed plan, and managed to bring the Icy Soul Heavenly Bear into its weakened state without much trouble on their part.

The hour passed rather swiftly, and the terrifying sounds of destruction gradually ceased, followed by a long shrill howl. Mu En gestured to the two of them before heading back towards the Icy Soul Heavenly Bear.

Zhou Weiqing and Shangguan Bing'er followed suit behind, and as they saw the trail of destruction in the forest, they couldn't help but feel their hearts tighten. Within a few hundred yard radius, there were large pits and holes in the ground, as well as the destroyed remains of trees and brush.

The huge Icy Soul Heavenly Bear was now lying on the ground, its chest heaving up and down with exertion. In its mouth, a little Icy Soul Heavenly Bear was there, being chewed upon, while not far off there were another two little ones. The one which was being chewed on in its mouth was bleeding, and looked dead, while the other two were trembling with fear at the side.

The three little Icy Soul Heavenly Bears were about as small as the little tiger, Fat Cat, and were clearly newborn. Apparently, that adult Icy Soul Heavenly Bear's original target had been to look for them.

“Not good! We have to kill it quick, and leave as soon as possible!

With these newborn Icy Soul Heavenly Bears here, it means that there are definitely other adult bears around. This fellow here was probably here to hunt the newborn of its rivals!”

Mu En took action quickly as he said that, once again making use of his unique archery skill, and a savage arrow viciously struck the Icy Soul Heavenly Bear’s head. The huge fellow’s blue energy shield had vanished by now, and Mu En’s arrow struck its head, the explosion causing fur and skin to burst out.

Right at the same time, a strange green light appeared, looking like a comet with its tail trailing behind, piercing straight into the Icy Soul Heavenly Bear’s eyes. Indeed, it was the ‘Ultimate Assassin’’s final blow, and he had chosen their original target.

With a Pssh sound, the huge Icy Soul Heavenly Bear started shivering; it did not want to die, and it was filled with anger and resentment. Alas, its entire head had been pierced through by Hua Feng’s final arrow, causing Heavenly Energy to be released uncontrollably from its body. Finally, its huge body crashed onto the ground, blood pouring from its eyes, nose and mouth, as this large Zong Stage Heavenly Beast finally perished.

Several figures appeared in a flash, and without any need for talk, the 5 of them quickly started cutting up the corpse. They needed to get what they came for and rush off quickly before the other beasts returned.

Zhou Weiqing and Shangguan Bing’er closed in, but due to their low levels of cultivation, they weren’t of any help. Shangguan Bing’er quickly walked over to the two newborn bears, picking

them up with a hand each and hugging them. The two little fellows had not even opened their eyes, and were clearly just born, and their bodies were covered with thin, soft fur, looking extremely adorable as well, though they were still shivering with cold and fear.

Shangguan Bing'er wanted to take off her outer clothing to cover them, but she wasn't wearing much and could not do so. Blushing, she turned to Zhou Weiqing and gave him a pleading look: "Little Fatty, I know you're the best." Zhou Weiqing opened his coat helplessly and said: "Come then, one sleeping is the same as three sleeping I guess."

"Wuuu Wuuu!" The little white tiger cried out in discontent, baring its teeth fiercely at the two little bears, obviously unhappy that they were invading its territory.

Zhou Weiqing laughed and said: "Fat Cat, your sense of territory is so strong eh? You're much older than them, how can you bear to bully them like that?" As he said that, he tapped the little white tiger on the head.

Shangguan Bing'er happily passed him the 2 little bears, shoving them into his chest. As he put them into his coat, the two little fellows stopped shivering. However, in the next instant, Zhou Weiqing's face changed. He suddenly felt two little wet mouths sucking at his chest.

Seeing Zhou Weiqing suddenly put on a strange look, Shangguan Bing'er couldn't help but ask him curiously: "What's wrong Little Fatty, are you alright?"

“Uhh... I’m fine.” Zhou Weiqing quickly replied. He didn’t have the face to tell her the truth, it was just too embarrassing. Furthermore, he would rather he suffer this than having his wife get sucked on by those 2 little roguish bears!

Hua Feng and the rest were extremely quick; although the Icy Soul Heavenly Bear’s fur was tough and resilient, they took barely the time for a meal to complete the mission. Four paws, gallbladder and the nucleus core were soon in their hands.

Mu En said with some regret: “Alas, there isn’t the time to skin the bear. Such a large bearskin, we can at least get another 50 thousand gold coins!”

Hua Feng gave a cold humph and said: “Let’s retreat immediately. We’ll have to escape with our lives before we can talk about earning more. These few little fellows’ parents should have gone out to hunt, with such noises, they should be back anytime soon. Let’s go!”

He had barely finished speaking when all of a sudden, an enraged roar sounded out nearby. Four huge, terrifying figures charged forth from the forest simultaneously, with the same speed and power as the previous bear’s 100 yard charge earlier before dealing the area of effect attack. Hua Feng’s face changed and he said quickly: “Mu En, quick, bring Little Wei and Bing’er away now.”

His reaction was not considered slow, but they were all still too late. The four huge figures were four Icy Soul Heavenly Bears.

Despite their size, they were a lot faster than most Heavenly Beasts, since they had the Wind Attribute. This was especially so when they used this charging skill, and the explosive speed they had was just incredible.

The bear leading the pack was extremely huge, much larger than the one they had killed earlier, and when it charged forth, it spotted the corpse of the dead bear and the little one in its mouth, and without further aggravation, its 8 meter long body went into the berserk state.

As the intimidating body leaped up from its charge, the huge body seemed to form a bow shape in midair as its massive paws smashed into the ground.

“RUN!” At this moment, no one would choose to stay and fight with these huge fellows, and all of them ran off at top speeds.

Alas, this huge Icy Soul Heavenly Bear was the strongest in the forest, it was the Icy Soul Heavenly Bear King, and was a Top Level Zong Stage Heavenly Beast. Furthermore, it was the father of the little bears, and on seeing its dead child, its rage could be imagined.

With a loud explosion, its two bear paws smashed brutally onto the ground, as if an earthquake or landslide was happening. With an earsplitting rumble, an intense seismic wave mixed with a strong yellow light quickly spread out towards them.

Not only was this Icy Soul Heavenly Bear King much larger, it also had a 3rd attribute besides the normal Ice and Wind attributes

– Earth. Currently, the skill it was using was that of the Earth Attribute, and was called the Mother Earth's Roar. Not only was it one of the most tyrannical area of effect attack skills, it was also a strong area of effect control skill! If someone could Store this Skill, it would undoubtedly be one of the Earth Attribute's strongest 9 Star Skills.

Chapter 33 – Fat Cat has become a huge Fat Cat (1)

As the yellow light reached almost 10 metres tall, it brought along snow and ice as it came crashing down towards them, the shock it brought was indescribable. All of them quickly leaped into the air, trying to avoid it from above. Alas, the attack was too quick, and Hua Feng who was in front was struck and knocked back, lapsing into unconsciousness while still in midair. The other members of the Heavenly Bow Unit proved to be of no exception. Although it was easy for them to leap more than 10 metres high, the problem was that the Icy Soul Heavenly Bear King's paws had struck down, causing the entire earth to reverberate strongly, and they did not have proper footing when they jumped.

Luo Ke Di had only reached 5 metres before being swallowed by the Mother Earth's Roar, while Gao Shen and Han Mo were only slightly better. Mu En fared the worst, as he was attempting to return to Shangguan Bing'er and Zhou Weiqing, and did not even manage to get far above the ground before he was enveloped.

Zhou Weiqing and Shangguan Bing'er had been standing at a relatively further distance, and when the Icy Soul Heavenly Bear King had charged forth, they were slightly further away, and Zhou Weiqing managed to make use of the advantage of youth – fast reflexes.

The memory of the previous ice spikes was still fresh in his mind, and as soon as he saw the Icy Soul Heavenly Bears charging forth, he had grabbed Shangguan Bing'er and circulated all his Heavenly Energy into his right leg, and slammed the ground savagely with it

as hard as he could. His leg struck the ground at almost the same time as the Icy Soul Heavenly Bear King, and together with Shangguan Bing'er in his arms, it sent them 15 metres into the air, barely avoiding the Icy Soul Heavenly Bear King's shocking full-powered hit.

As the saying goes, there is a limit to human strength sometimes. The members of the Heavenly Bow Unit had created many miracles of beating stronger, more powerful foes with much weaker strength, no matter being their strategy, combat experience, or the cooperation they had working together, it was already at the peak of what their personal strength could allow. If not for that, just pitting strength against strength on paper, the Icy Soul Heavenly Bear should have easily wiped out the whole team.

However, when the four Icy Soul Heavenly Bears appeared, they knew they had no chance of winning. Furthermore, that Icy Soul Heavenly Bear King had went berserk so quickly and used its full strength upon seeing them, and they did not even have the opportunity to plan or make use of any of their skills. Although that blow did not heavily injure them, the stunning effect of the Mother Earth's Roar had caused them to fly back around a hundred yards, all unconscious.

Four Pairs of enraged and bloodthirsty eyes locked upon the midair Zhou Weiqing and Shangguan Bing'er. However, in the next instant, the four pairs of eyes also narrowed a little, and they did not launch an attack surprisingly.

As Zhou Weiqing had circulated all his Heavenly Energy into his Demonic Right Leg, his aura had burst forth uncontrollably, and

sensing that terrifying aura, the four Zong Stage Heavenly Beasts hesitated momentarily.

Among the four powerful Icy Soul Heavenly Beasts, besides the larger Icy Soul Heavenly Bear King, the other three were also no smaller than the one they had killed, and they were the Icy Soul Heavenly Bear King's wives.

They had all originally belonged to a much larger community of Icy Soul Heavenly Bears, and the Bear King was actually the younger brother of the leader of their tribe. It had attempted to challenge for the position of leader and lost, and was thus exiled from their community, and they had ended up here. It must be known that, to survive a failed challenge, it was a testament to how powerful this Bear King was. Not even counting the the members of the Heavenly Bow Unit, even Zhou Weiqing's father Admiral Zhou would have a tough time dealing with that blow just now.

We're screwed. Although Zhou Weiqing had successfully dodged the first strike with Shangguan Bing'er, the words couldn't help but appear in their minds. They wouldn't even be able to handle a single Icy Soul Heavenly Bear, let alone four!

"Bing'er, run quick, I'll try to block them as long as I can." As he said that, Zhou Weiqing was about to throw Shangguan Bing'er as far as he could. With her dual agility Jewels and her Wind Wielding Boots, she might actually have a small chance of escaping.

However, before he could throw her, Shangguan Bing'er grabbed

onto his shirt and said: “Little Fatty, do you think I’m a person who fears death? I’m already yours, if we have to die, we’ll die together.”

Zhou Weiqing looked at the determination in Shangguan Bing’er’s eyes as both of them landed down on the ground at the same time. He was originally feeling afraid of dying, but looking into her eyes, seeing the despair in her eyes, he felt as if the blood in his body started boiling.

The black tiger tattoos appeared all over his body as his eyes turned bloodshot once again. His right hand let go of Shangguan Bing’er as a violent and bloodthirsty aura burst forth from him, and the black King word appeared on his forehead once again, while his bones seemed to break out in sound. Despite being in this land of ice and snow, Zhou Weiqing felt his body heating up, as if a fiery core was exploding forth from within.

Is this the demonic change again? I do not want to lose consciousness! I want to be awake! I want to control it by myself! Stimulated by the despair in Shangguan Bing’er’s eyes, Zhou Weiqing had fallen deep into the Demonic Change State, as an evil air about ten times thicker than earlier surrounded him. Despite that, he kept chanting those words in his mind.

It could clearly be seen that the snow around Zhou Weiqing was rapidly turning grey and disappearing, and this effect seemed to slowly broaden in a circle around him.

As compared to the Icy Soul Heavenly Bears, his aura was not especially strong, but it gave these four Zong Stage Heavenly

Beasts a sense of danger.

Especially the bloodshot eyes and the black 'King' on his forehead, it actually caused them to awaken from their frenzied states.

The little white tiger which had been standing on Zhou Weiqing's shoulders all this while had a gleam in its eyes, and it seemed to take in rapid deep breaths, as if the evil aura around Zhou Weiqing was its favourite food.

As Zhou Weiqing's body seemed to dip down, his muscles were tuned by the Demonic Change into perfect condition, reaching almost three times his normal strength. At the same time, he was also able to flawlessly use his Heavenly Energy and skills with impeccable efficiency. As long as he had sufficient Heavenly Energy to sustain himself, he would be able to continuously use all his skills infinitely.

Alas, these four Icy Soul Heavenly Bears were not the weak little Forest Direwolves that he had originally met. Despite the sense of danger that Zhou Weiqing's evil aura brought to them, they would not easily back down. Their children's' death had caused much rage and depression, and they continued moving towards Zhou Weiqing slowly. Even under the Demonic Change state, Zhou Weiqing was still just too weak in comparison to the four bears. Without question, as soon as they launched their attacks, Zhou Weiqing would be torn to shreds.

Right as this moment, the little white tiger on Zhou Weiqing's shoulder suddenly moved, and the four cute baby pink paws

pressed down on him as it sprang forth. Zhou Weiqing, who was originally losing control of his own mind, suddenly felt clarity return, but almost in the next instant, his bloodshot pupils shrank in surprise.

As the little white tiger Fat Cat leaped away from Zhou Weiqing's shoulder, its body seemed to expand out quickly, by the time it landed silently on the ground, it had actually become a 3 metre long, 1.3 metre tall immense white tiger. Its deep blue eyes giving forth a shining lustre, and as Fat Cat raised its head, it gave a proud roar.

As the roar rang throughout the forest, there was a shocked silence. Zhou Weiqing felt a strange strength sparked within his body, and he spread his arms, puffing out his chest and a ear shattering roar issued from his mouth as well.

It was another tiger's roar, simple, thick and clear, while the white tiger's was loud sharper, and excited. The two roars, one low and one high, they complemented each other, showing the incomparable power and majesty of the king of the jungle.

Looking at Fat Cat's huge body appearing in front of them suddenly, the four Icy Soul Heavenly Bears stopped in surprise. Besides the Icy Soul Heavenly Bear King, the other 3 revealed a look of fear in their eyes, and when Zhou Weiqing roared together with Fat Cat, even the Icy Soul Heavenly Bear King's body shrank back a little; although its eyes were still fierce, it no longer seemed as wild as before.

Roarrrr. As its roar ended, Fat Cat gave another low roar, this

time, turning around to Zhou Weiqing, swiping its claws at his shirt, and pulling the two little bears out, putting them onto the ground.

The two little bears were covered with a layer of grey, their little bodies trembling as if suffering much pain.

Fat Cat's eyes suddenly turned a crystal white colour, and two bright white lights shot forth from its eyes, striking both little bears respectively and clearing the grey mist around them. The two little bears stopped struggling.

The next moment, Fat Cat lifted a large paw and placed it atop the two little bears, its head turning back towards the four Icy Soul Heavenly Bears, issuing another low roar, as if saying something.

After the series of low roars, Fat Cat's head turned towards the north, and the white in its eyes receded, turning back to its usual blue color. However, its eyes also turned cold and deadly, as a killing aura rose from its body.

Chapter 33 – Fat Cat has become a huge Fat Cat (2)

“Wuuu” The Icy Soul Heavenly Bear King’s large body stood upright, its front paws held to its chest, as it did a rather human-like action of paying respect to Fat Cat. The other 3 bears did the same thing, and after doing so, they slowly walked forward, no longer any enmity in their movements.

Fat Cat lifted the paw from the two little bears, turning around and looking at Zhou Weiqing, who was still struggling to gain control of his body. Once again, two bright white lights shot forth from Fat Cat’s eyes into Zhou Weiqing’s eyes, and instantly, he felt two warm currents from his eyes to his Dantian, and the bloodthirsty, violent feelings started vanishing like snow in the summer, and the black tiger tattoos on his skin also started disappearing.

Shangguan Bing’er, at the side, was totally stunned. She had originally thought that both of them would perish here in the snow, even when Zhou Weiqing had entered the Demonic Change state, that thought never changed. Against four Zong Stage Heavenly Beasts, what that would only prolong their deaths.

However, what happened after, gave her the clear example that in this world, anything was indeed possible.

The four large bear heads squeezed together, nudging the two little bears on the ground, issuing soft cries at them. At the side, Fat Cat stood with head held high, proudly ignoring the four large Icy Soul Heavenly Bears.

After a while, it seemed like the four bears had sufficient intimacy and contact with their children, and the Bear King picked up the two little bears, placing them before Fat Cat, before placing its own head in the snow before Fat Cat in a kowtow position as well. After it got up, it gave another weak cry, which Fat Cat replied with a light roar. The Bear King looked for a while more at the two little bears, before leading the other 3 Bears away reluctantly.

Zhou Weiqing had finally regained control of his body and senses, and seeing that the four bears had not only moved off, but even left their children behind, he couldn't help but stare in stupefaction at the huge white tiger, Fat Cat. This fellow, being able to scare off four Zong Stage Heavenly Beasts, how strong was it?!

Zhou Weiqing couldn't help but swallow a large gulp of saliva, remembering to himself how he used to bully it when he was bored. Now that it had become a large Fat Cat...

Just as Zhou Weiqing was thinking nervously to himself, Fat Cat had brought the two little bears back towards him, placing them in his arms.

Zhou Weiqing subconsciously held them, but just at that instant, Fat Cat's huge body pounced right at him.

Has the time for revenge come so soon? Zhou Weiqing involuntarily took a step back, but just before the pouncing Fat Cat

reached him, its body shrank back down in midair, before finally landing lightly on his shoulders and dropping back down into his arms, wriggling till it found a warm comfortable spot. The two little bears were already snug in Zhou Weiqing's outer clothing, and Fat Cat's arrival pushed them away to the side.

Looking down at the cute little thing in his arms, with only half its head poking out, eyes closed and back asleep, Zhou Weiqing could hardly match it with the terrifying King of the Beasts that scared off four Zong Stage Heavenly Beasts earlier.

Shangguan Bing'er walked over to Zhou Weiqing's side, giving him an incredulous look: "What just happened?!"

Zhou Weiqing said helplessly: "I'm not sure myself. Fat Cat this little thing can actually turn so huge, now we know for sure it's definitely a Heavenly Beast. No matter whether what its current strength is, we can be certain that it has an unbelievable talent and should grow up to be extremely powerful. If not, it wouldn't have been able to scare off the Icy Soul Heavenly Bears. Oh well, whatever, it's good to be alive! Heh heh! That's called character! Bing'er didn't you realise? Your husband has such awesome character, able to turn misfortune into something auspicious. Wahaha!"

Shangguan Bing'er rolled her eyes at him, thinking to herself: This little rascal has a very resilient mental state; if it were anyone else, they'd probably have been scared to death or tangled up in wondering what its origin is. Instead, he was being all smug about it, and not even forgetting to take advantage of me. However, she was growing to like his forthright way more and more. Although

he was still rather dirty and roguish, at least he was very real. “Let’s wake up the Senior’s and quickly leave this place.”

“Err...” Only then Zhou Weiqing awaken and remember the members of the Heavenly Bow Unit fainted at the side. To say that he was totally oblivious and not surprised or frightened by the day’s events, that was definitely impossible, after all he had stared at death in the face. However, his ability to tune his emotions were unparalleled, and he recovered really quickly.

...

Two years later. Stars Forest, Heavenly Bow Unit Camp.

“Mu En!! Zhou Weiqing!! You two as*holes! If you have the guts, don’t run!!” A shrill, angry cry rang out, and a yellow shadowy figure charged out from a wooden house in the camp.

It was a lady, looking about 30 years of age, and her beautiful features were distorted by a look of absolute fury on her face. Her hair was still wet, but her right hand was holding a kitchen cleaver, and she looked as if she were an erupting volcano. However, the courtyard was already empty, and her targets were nowhere to be found.

“Hua Feng! Get out here right now! I can’t stand it anymore!” The lady shouted angrily, her formidable bosom heaving as she did so, causing an impressive sight.

“Sigh, those two rascals, they can’t give us any peace.” Hua Feng said helplessly as he walked out of his house, looking at the angry wet-haired lady and said: “Little grass, calm down. Don’t you know Mu En’s temperament by now?”

Little Grass looked at Hua Feng, her expression growing a lot gentler. “Brother Feng, I can’t stand it anymore. It’s already the 12th time this year. I can’t even take a shower in peace any longer. What sort of rubbish is that old Scoundrel Mu En spouting? He even dare tries to justify it by saying he is training that young scoundrel Zhou Weiqing’s eyesight and counting how many hairs I have? If not for the fact I can’t defeat him, I’d have beaten him to death now. I don’t care, you better give me some accountability now. One old scoundrel was already enough of a headache, now with this young scoundrel who has even surpassed his master. Over these two years, you can ask everyone, who hasn’t been tortured by these 2 fellows!?”

“Little Grass, all your complaints are useless. Don’t you know that your brother Hua Feng has been bribed?” A strange and ghostly voice sounded out. Another beautiful lady walked out from a nearby wooden house. She was about 1.75m tall, with a head full of pink hair flowing behind her back, with fine and attractive features. The problem was, she was flat-chested and had something that most women did not have – an Adam’s Apple.

Hua Feng said exasperatedly: “Yi Shi, Little Grass is already angry enough, stop stirring her up further. Mu En and Little Wei might overdo things sometimes, but it’s his own unique style of teaching.”

Yi Shi gave a cold humph, giving a [Lan Hua gesture](#) : “Boss, they didn’t just offend Little Grass, they even dared peek at me when I was bathing.”

Hua Feng couldn’t help but bust out laughing: “I still remember that day clearly. Little Wei is definitely still far from his teacher, he [grew a needle in his eye](#). the next day. After that, he never dared to offend you again.”

Little Grass gave another angry humph, saying: “Don’t mention that little as*hole Zhou Weiqing! When Bing’er is around, he’s always acts so good and honest, and as soon as she leaves to Store Skills, he turns into a scoundrel and a rogue, he literally becomes Mu En and Luo Ke Di combined! Anyway, I don’t care, if you don’t solve this problem, I’ll sneak into your bed every night.”

Yi Shi giggled and said: “Little Grass, aren’t you just finding an excuse to do that? You’ve been wanting to sneak into his bed for years. This sister supports you!”

Little Grass said angrily: “You damn transvestite, get lost! I, Your Mother hate transvestites the most!”

Yi Shi gave a humph and said: “Even though your Brother Feng isn’t a transvestite, but he likes men. What’s the big difference between a homosexual and a transvestite?”

Little Grass twisted her mouth and said: “It’s just a matter of preference. At least Brother Feng is still a real man.”

Just as that moment, a young girl walked in from outside, hearing the exchange between the few of them, and sighing inwardly to herself. Our Heavenly Bow Unit truly doesn't contain any normal people, a bunch of weirdos.

The young girl was rather tall, about 1.7m in height, with a head full of ocean blue hair flowing behind her, and a youthful aura. Her perfectly proportioned figure was still young and not fully ripe, but her fresh beauty was even more alluring. Her pair of pale green eyes were filled with grace and a brilliant, attractive light. "Bing'er, you're finally back."

"If you didn't come back, I would have gone over to kill your husband now." On seeing the girl, Little Grass sprang over and gave her a big hug.

Indeed, this young girl who had returned from the outside was Shangguan Bing'er. After these 2 years, she was now 18 years old, and was in the prime of a girl's life. As for Little Grass, she was the lady mentioned by Mu En previously, the Earth Attribute Elemental Jewel Master who was in love with Hua Feng. Her temper was fiery, and besides Hua Feng who she treated very gently, her temper often erupted like a volcano. Strangely, though she was always against Zhou Weiqing, but she was very close to Shangguan Bing'er.

Shangguan Bing'er said helplessly: "I... haven't married him yet, what do you mean husband. Little Grass Sis, if Little Fatty angered you again, I'll apologise on his behalf. That rascal! Although his mouth is rather bad, his heart is still quite good."

Little Grass rolled her eyes and said: “Enough. I’m not talking about his character anymore, you’re already poisoned by love. Sigh... for this point, you and your sister are the same.” As she said that, she glanced bitterly at Hua Feng, causing him to shiver slightly.

a type of hand gesture in traditional Chinese dance (joined thumb and middle finger, the rest extended), usually feminine

a literal translation of 长了针眼, it’s an expression that he saw something he wasn’t supposed to see

Chapter 33 – Fat Cat has become a huge Fat Cat (3)

Yi Shi was toying with her fingernails at the side, saying idly: “Alas, even though you’re poisoned by love as well, but your man likes other men...”

“You damn transvestite, I, Your Mother, will risk my life to take you down!” Little Grass shouted furiously, and was about to charge over. Shangguan Bing’er quickly grabbed hold of her. If she had to judge who was the most dangerous person in the entire Heavenly Bow Unit, it would definitely be the Snake Lady Transvestite Yi Shi. They often fought like that, and Shangguan Bing’er was rather used to it.

“Alright, everyone. Enough!” Hua Feng shouted.

The 2 ladies and 1 transvestite turned their gazes onto him; Hua Feng looked at Shangguan Bing’er and said: “Bing’er, have you finished Storing your third Skill?”

Shangguan Bing’er nodded and said: “Yes, Teacher. I have accomplished it successfully.”

Hua Feng nodded and said: “That’s great. You and Little Wei already have sufficient means of self protection. Both of you have already inherited our true secrets in archery, and the only thing you lack is more practice and experience on actual battlefields. You’ve already been here for almost 2 years, and it’s time to leave.”

Shangguan Bing'er exclaimed in surprise: "Teacher, you want me and Little Fatty to leave?"

Hua Feng said helplessly: "You've seen for yourself, when Little Wei, Mu En and Luo Ke Di get together, they have caused so much chaos for our Heavenly Bow Unit. My original intention was to leave you two for another few more months, but now it looks like it'll be better for both of you to leave earlier. Otherwise, our Heavenly Bow Unit will be torn apart soon. It's good that you are back now, both of you should pack up and leave tomorrow. Come with me, I have some things to tell you."

Shangguan Bing'er nodded. She was clear that her teacher never made decisions easily, but once he did, it would be extremely difficult to change his mind. As such, she followed Hua Feng into his wooden house, with a rather sad look in her eyes.

Little Grass looked curiously at Yi Shi and said: "Is Boss really chasing that little brat Zhou Weiqing away?"

Yi Shi replied: "Isn't that what you hoped for? Why? Now that it happened, you can't bear to see them go?"

Little Grass combed her wet hair, muttering to herself: "Although that little brat is rather irritating, but with him around, don't you think our Heavenly Bow Unit is filled with life and laughter?"

Yi Shi let loose a giggle before laughing out loud: "Foolish girl, do

you really think that Boss will chase them away just on your word? He has clearly planned this for a while.”

“You’ve loved Boss for so long, how can you not know how he thinks? Although that little brat Zhou Weiqing is extremely sly and cunning, who amongst us isn’t jealous of his unbelievable talent? In just a short span of two years, he has actually managed to cultivate from the 5th level of Heavenly Jing Energy to the 11th Stage! Furthermore, he has mastered most of old scoundrel’s archery skills, and you should know that even if he continued staying here, he will not be able to learn much else from us. In the first place, with his talent, he would never be destined to stay for long in our Heavenly Bow Unit; Zhou Shui Niu still needs his son to take over his position eventually.”

A hint of worry entered Little Grass’ eyes, and at this moment there was no hint of her usual fiery temper. “Indeed! Our Empire is indeed in worrying straits, especially now that the Bai Da Empire is giving Kalise more and more support. Although I dislike Zhou Shui Niu, I have to admit that without him, our Heavenly Bow Empire would have long been crushed.”

Two years ago, after the battle with the Icy Soul Heavenly Bears, Zhou Weiqing and Shangguan Bing’er had awoken the other members of the Heavenly Bow Unit. They did not reveal the situation with the little white tiger, only telling Hua Feng and the rest that the four Icy Soul Heavenly Bears had just left all of a sudden. When they returned to the Heavenly Bow Unit Camp, they entered two years of tough training and cultivation.

As for Zhou Weiqing, he mainly focused on the exquisitely

painful yet unbelievably quick Immortal Deity Technique, while also learning Mu En's various archery skills, of which he had by now all pretty much learnt. The most shocking thing to all the members was that within these two years, his Heavenly Energy had shot up by 6 whole levels, reaching a stunning 11th Level of Heavenly Energy. Even though Shangguan Bing'er was already considered a rare genius, she had only just reached the 12th level and gotten her third set of Heavenly Jewels, just reaching the Heavenly Shen Energy Stage. It seemed like Zhou Weiqing would quickly catch up.

As such, to allow Zhou Weiqing to focus more on his archery skills, while also afraid that he would bite off more than he could chew and not accomplish anything, as a result, although he had already gotten his 2nd set of Heavenly Jewels, he had not been allowed to Consolidate Equipment or Store Skills as of yet. However, his personal power was already far above what he had been just two years ago. In fact, even now he could face off with Luo Ke Di, who still remained at the 5 Jewel Physical Master stage, without losing. As for the various Skills of his first Elemental Jewel, he was now able to use them freely and easily after much practice. The members of the Heavenly Bow Unit knew that not just Zhou Weiqing, but also Shangguan Bing'er, wouldn't remain for long at the Heavenly Bow Unit or Paradise Strange. As Heavenly Jewel Masters, they belonged on a much grander stage.

...

The next day. Dawn. Front gates of the Heavenly Bow Unit Camp.

Heavenly Bow Unit Leader, Ultimate Assassin – Hua Feng, Vice Leader, Snake Lady Transvestite – Yi Shi, Female Volcano – Little Grass, Arrow Tower – Han Mo, Cannon – Gao Shen, Drunken Rogue – Luo Ke Di and God Eye Scoundrel – Mu En, were all standing in a row.

In front of them stood two youths, one male and one female. The female was of course Shangguan Bing'er, and there were tears brimming in her eyes, with an expression full of reluctance to part. The male by her side, standing at almost 1.9m tall, looking as fit as a young bull, was Zhou Weiqing, a rather sad look on his face as well; the honest looking expression on his face was a lot more realistic than before. Atop Zhou Weiqing shoulders stood the little white tiger, looking no different from two years ago. It still had the same lazy look as before, but if someone examined it closely and carefully, they would notice that the colour of its eyes had changed, from the previous blue to a light purple. Its brilliant white fur now seemed like they were carved from crystal, and if it stood there unmoving, some might even mistake it for a perfect sculpture.

Right behind Zhou Weiqing and Shangguan Bing'er, a pair of black bears with gold fur on their backs lay on the ground. The two fellows were no longer little, their bodies grown to over 2 metres long and were large and stout, especially with their large heads causing them to look charmingly simple and naive. However, if any Jewel Masters spotted them, it would definitely be terror that sparked in them. After all, they were Icy Soul Heavenly Bears! Even if they were still very young, the two bears were already Zun Stage Heavenly Beasts.

In truth, the Icy Soul Heavenly Bears' growth rate shouldn't have

been so fast. The two had grown more than ten years worth of growing in just these two years. Regarding this, the members of the Heavenly Bow Unit were all puzzled as well, but despite their efforts, they were unable to find out the reason for this.

Hua Feng gave a light smile and said to Zhou Weiqing and Shangguan Bing'er: "All good things must come to an end. You both have learnt much in your two years in our Heavenly Bow Unit. I hope that no matter what happens in the future, no matter how powerful you become, you will never forget that your motherland is our Heavenly Bow Empire."

Shangguan Bing'er nodded vigorously, saying: "Teacher, do not worry. For me and Little Fatty, everything we have is given by the motherland. We will not let you down!"

Little Grass said exasperatedly: "Brother Feng, what type of situation is this, yet you are still talking about those big ideals. Bing'er is the kindest, gentlest girl I know, why would she need you to talk about all of that? Bing'er come, let Big Sis hug you." As she said that, she opened her arms and gave Shangguan Bing'er a big warm hug. At that point, Shangguan Bing'er couldn't resist any longer and tears flowed down her cheeks as she hugged Little Grass in return, her head resting on Little Grass' shoulders as she sobbed. Little Grass' eyes were also misty with tears.

After a while, the two separated, and right at that moment, Luo Ke Di opened his arms and hugged Shangguan Bing'er as well. "I want a hug too!"

Indeed, he managed to hug... alas, it wasn't Shangguan Bing'er

who he hugged, but someone much larger than him, with an honest look on his face – Zhou Weiqing.

Luo Ke Di felt as if his bones were creaking after being bear hugged by Zhou Weiqing, and couldn't help but scold out loud: "Damn, you little brat, let go of me!"

Only then did Zhou Weiqing let go of Luo Ke Di, saying with concerned: "Shi Shu, are you alright? I'm just about to leave, I'm just so touched."

Luo Ke Di gave a humph and said: "Stop acting you little brat! I, Your Father, just wanted a hug from Bing'er, it's not like she will lose anything."

Zhou Weiqing nodded his head repeatedly, saying: "Little Grass Elder Sis is allowed to hug, but you aren't. As long as it's female, even if it's a sow, your hugs could possibly impregnate it! Shi Shu, don't forget that your nickname is Rogue! The Ultimate Rogue!"

"You..." Luo Ke Di cried out in anger, jumping up and wanting to teach Zhou Weiqing a lesson. Alas, at the distance they were at, he could only hold back. After all, Zhou Weiqing's strength now was indeed too terrifying, with two Pure Strength Physical Jewels boosting him, just comparing strength alone he was already a match for Mu En, who was a half strength Physical Jewel Master with 6 Jewels!

Although Zhou Weiqing's Physical Jewel was a pure strength Jewel, and his boost should be 1.5 times that of an ordinary

Physical Jewel Master, this shouldn't have happened. However, his strength had also been increased by the black pearl he swallowed, and during the two years of growth, his entire physique had grown by an impressive amount. Normally, during breaks and when he was feeling bored, he played and wrestled with the two baby Icy Soul Heavenly Bears, and in a 1v2 situation!

“Little Wei.” Han Mo walked up to him. He was not a man of many words, and he just gave Zhou Weiqing a hug. “Live Well.”

Zhou Weiqing also grew more serious, keeping his joking smile and hugging him back. “I will.”

Gao Shen walked over next and also gave him a hug. “Little Wei, remember to kill more people. Men should have more killing intent to be more manly!”

He was followed by Yi Shi, but Zhou Weiqing refused to let ‘her’ hug him, causing ‘her’ to pout angrily.

Mu En and Hua Feng also walked over. Hua Feng patted Shangguan Bing'er's head, smiling faintly as he said: “Teacher will always be proud of you.”

“Teacher!” Shangguan Bing'er could no longer control her emotions, and dove into Hua Feng's arms, crying. Zhou Weiqing could only watch from the side, eyebrows twitching, but resisted the urge to do anything.

“Stop looking, little brat. In the future, if you go out and get bullied, you better not let anyone know you’re my disciple!” Mu En said with a humph.

Zhou Weiqing said carefully: “Teacher... it’s not like being your disciple is something of high honour or reputation!”

Chapter 34 – Ring of Concealment (1)

Mu En laughed and said: “Also, didn’t you also acknowledge that Old Huyan Aobo as your teacher? That old fellow has a lot of good stuff, don’t be polite to him! ... Go now! Shoo!”

Zhou Weiqing held Mu En’s hands tightly, taking a deep breath and holding up his head as if calming himself down: “Teacher, I can’t bear to leave you.”

Mu En’s smile froze, and his expression slowly turned warm as well. “Little scoundrel, I also can’t bear for you to leave!”

Zhou Weiqing blinked and said: “Then... shall I just stay?”

All of the members of the Heavenly Bow Unit cried out angrily in unison: “NO!”

Zhou Weiqing and Shangguan Bing’er finally left the camp reluctantly, and as the members of the Heavenly Bow Unit returned to their rooms rather despondently, all of them found a letter on their tables, from Zhou Weiqing.

As Hua Feng opened his letter, he saw only 2 simple lines written on it. “Leader, I know you’ve always liked my dad, but I also know that with my dad’s temper, he would never reciprocate it. However, just to fulfil your wish, I’ll still call you little mother once. Bing’er and I are leaving, but, I’ll still cause one last time of trouble for you. I will prove that, it’s not just because of me that the Heavenly Bow Unit becomes so messy!”

As Hua Feng read the letter, he found himself awkwardly between laughter and tears, when all of a sudden, a knock sounded on his door. “Come in.” he said.

Little Grass entered from the outside, though she was blushing red as she said: “Brother Feng, if you want it, you’ll just have to tell me, how could I not give it to you?”

Hua Feng was puzzled as he asked: “What did I want?”

Little Grass held out the letter in her hands shyly, and when Hua Feng took it, he saw written on it: “Little Grass Elder Sis, actually Leader does like you a lot. Yesterday I saw him stealing your panties that you left out to dry and hide them under his pillow.”

Hua Feng’s hands trembled as he looked at Little Grass, who was looking at him with tenderness and love in her eyes, and three black lines appeared above his head as he gritted his teeth and said: “Zhou... Wei... Qing...!!”

As for the others’ letters, they were as follows.

Gao Shen’s letter: “Brother Shen, did you know that Yi Shi that transvestite is actually in love with you? She actually stole your underwear! I’m not a person who easily stirs trouble, and I don’t know what your temper is like. However, if it were me, I wouldn’t easily stand for that sort of thing!”

Han Mo's letter: "Brother Mo, I'm a little embarrassed to say this, but since I'm leaving I really do have to tell you the truth. The hundred titanium alloy arrows you ordered custom made, I felt they were very good, so I borrowed them to use. I'll just borrow them for a hundred years or so. Between us brothers, there's no need for any thanks right. In truth, I know that you've always wanted to gift them to me, right?"

Yi Shi's letter: "Lord Vice Leader, actually I know your inner heart must be in pain. As a transvestite, and a beautiful one at that, you are so different from everyone! However, I must tell you the truth. My teacher has always liked you so much, but he was always embarrassed to say so. The reason why he's always remained single is because of you! Did you know that he has kept a portrait of you, and deep in the night, he always stares at the portrait and 'trains his hands'. Sigh... Even if you don't like him, you must really let him know. He's already so old, if he keeps 'training his hands' like that so much, it's not good for his body!"

Luo Ke Di's letter: "Shi Shu, that day I unintentionally heard Leader talking to himself in his room. In our Heavenly Bow Unit, only you and he are suave enough, and he also said that my Dad is getting too old already, and that he shouldn't keep dreaming of the impossible. As such, he has decided to change his target, I won't say much more, you know what I mean. Leader is such a great person, with such grace and poise, you two are indeed a good match!"

Mu En's letter: "Teacher, I've left a portrait under your bed, but I accidentally spilled porridge on it. Please help me pass it to Yi Shi."

An hour later, a mass of angry howls arose from the Heavenly Bow Unit. Strangely, all of them sounded very similar, and with gritted teeth! “Zhou—- Wei—- Qing!!!!”

At that time, Zhou Weiqing, who had already walked quite a distance away, suddenly stopped, turning back towards the Heavenly Bow Unit with a huge, wicked grin on his face, giving a small laugh as he muttered to himself: “I’m just afraid you all will forget me, I didn’t mean to prank you all! En... it’s not intentional... definitely not planned... nor was it premeditated. Heh heh.”

Shangguan Bing’er looked at him curiously and asked: “What’s going on? Little Fatty, what are you talking about?”

Zhou Weiqing quickly reined himself in, saying: “Uh, nothing! Bing’er, don’t you think I’m already considered a real man, a grown up now?”

Shangguan Bing’er started, looking at the large and well built, honest but valiant looking Zhou Weiqing, and nodded sincerely while saying: “Indeed. Although you’re only 16 years old, but most adult men wouldn’t be as tall or muscular as you are. Of course you can be considered a real man now.”

Zhou Weiqing was filled with joy, winking to her and said: “In that case... can we do.. it already?”

Shangguan Bing’er asked puzzledly: “What’s ‘it’?”

Zhou Weiqing said abashedly: “You know... it! Since you already said I’m a real man, and you’re a beautiful grown lady, and we’re fiances... that... that...”

Shangguan Bing’er finally understood what he meant, instantly flushing deeply and said: “Dream on! Why is your brain full of dirty thoughts. Hmph, walk further from me. Who’s your fiancée? Have you resolved the situation with Princess Difuya?”

Zhou Weiqing said helplessly: “I haven’t had the opportunity yet... We’re heading back to Heavenly Bow City now, and I’ll handle the matter when we return. I’ll go right to look for Godfather. Although Difuya is rather hateful, I shouldn’t delay it and let her waste her youth as well.”

Shangguan Bing’er rolled her eyes at him, but she clearly looked a lot happier. Zhou Weiqing was attempting to strike while the iron was hot, sidling closer to her to get intimate, but she quickly ran ahead like a Wind Elf, her tinkling laughter trailing her. Zhou Weiqing grinned and chased forward, and just like that, with one chasing the other, they sped through the Stars Forest towards the Heavenly Bow City.

The two poor ‘little’ Icy Soul Heavenly Bears could only run with all their might, panting, as they tried to keep up. Their foolish and simple looking appearance was simply so adorable, while the little white tiger Fat Cat still lay on Zhou Weiqing’s shoulder lazily, as if it would never wake up.

As they closed in on the edge of the Stars Forest, Zhou Weiqing beckoned to the two bears, saying: “Come here, Da Huang, Er

Huang.”

The two tired and panting bears came lumbering to Zhou Weiqing, nuzzling their heads on Zhou Weiqing’s body, with nary the look and pride of a Zong Stage Heavenly Beast. These two little fellows were raised together by Zhou Weiqing and Shangguan Bing’er, but the one they feared most was Fat Cat. Often, if Fat Cat gave a low roar, the two of them would lie down on the ground with their hands covering their heads, looking extremely pitiful.

Zhou Weiqing raised his right hand, and a gold green Cat’s Eye ring on his finger flashed, causing two beams of yellow light to shine upon the two bears. As the light glittered, the two large fellows had disappeared.

This Spatial ring was given to him by Hua Feng, and Zhou Weiqing had to give up all his cuts from the missions throughout these two years. Originally, he wasn’t supposed to get a cut of the salary from the missions, but as his power increased, his Control Skills started to play a larger role and be of critical help during the missions. As a result, the members of the Heavenly Bow Unit had agreed to give him a cut as well. Zhou Weiqing did not know how much it had amounted to after these two years, but for the sake of Da Huang and Er Huang these two large fellows, he had no choice but to give up on his cut and take the Spatial ring, which had about 20 square metres of space within.

In truth, what Zhou Weiqing didn’t know was that he had been given a huge gift. Such a Spatial Ring, was worth at least 200,000 gold coins or more. That was mainly because it wasn’t an ordinary Spatial Ring, and it didn’t just store goods, but had a small and

unique Spatial Realm created which could allow living creatures to stay within. That was its true value, and was considered a rather rare treasure.

After keeping Da Huang and Er Huang into the ring's space, Zhou Weiqing and Shangguan Bing'er headed to the Heavenly Bow City. According to Hua Fen, they would be heading to the Fei Li Empire to undergo their next step of learning and training.

Without question, Fei Li Empire was the only large empire which was on good relations with the Heavenly Bow Empire, and it was also a lot more developed on all fronts. This time, Zhou Weiqing and Shangguan Bing'er were headed to the Fei Li Empire's Fei Li Imperial Family's Military Academy, to learn how to lead and direct armies. This was under the direction of Admiral Zhou, who wanted them to prepare to help out the Heavenly Bow Empire's armies in the future.

There was still 5 more months until the new semester of the Fei Li Imperial Family's Military Academy began, but Hua Feng had them return to the Heavenly Bow City in advance. The main reason was for Zhou Weiqing to head to Fei Li Empire's Flying Hill City first. After all, he was already sixteen years old, and it was time for him to study under Huyan Aobo as promised. Furthermore, he still hadn't Consolidated Equipment or Stored Skills for his second set of Heavenly Jewels.

“Bing'er, let's stay at home for three days, and I'll settle the betrothal with Princess Difuya. After three days, let's head to Flying Hill City together, how about that?” Zhou Weiqing held onto her hands, rather unwilling to part. She had been gone for

quite a while to complete Storing her 3rd Elemental Jewel's Skill, and had finally just returned to his side, and he naturally couldn't bear to part with her for another few days once again.

Shangguan Bing'er hesitated and said: "Little Fatty, we've already spent two years together in the Heavenly Bow Unit, and during this period I haven't spent any time with my mother. I want to seize this chance before we enter the Fei Li Imperial Family's Military Academy to accompany her well. She's my only kin, and this time, we will be spending another few years at the Academy, as it is so far and traveling to and fro will be extremely difficult. Why don't you head to Flying Hill City first, and we'll meet in the Fei Li Empire capital, Fei Li City in 5 months alright?"

"Ah?" Hearing her say that, Zhou Weiqing's face fell and he said dejectedly: "Doesn't that mean we'll be apart for 5 months?"

Chapter 34 – Ring of Concealment (2)

Shangguan Bing'er revealed the struggle in her eyes, but she finally reaffirmed her stance. "Little Fatty, my mom is my only kin, can you forgive me?"

Zhou Weiqing gently held her in his arms, and this time Shangguan Bing'er did not resist as she rested in his broad embrace. "Little Fatty, I also can't bear to leave you. Ever since we met, although you often make me angry, but these few years together, I have grown used to having you by my side. Although you're a little afraid of death, a little shameless, and always such a rascal, but I know that your heart is really kind inside. If our feelings are true, such a separation should not matter much. Once we reach the Academy, won't we be together again?"

Zhou Weiqing put his face to her hair, saying: "Bing'er, how could I stop you from being filial? If only I didn't make the promise to Huyan Teacher... I should also spend more time with my mother. When I'm gone, if you are free, do help me visit my mother as well okay? Uh, no, it's our mother. Dad is often at the front lines, and she's also very lonely."

Shangguan Bing'er nodded and said: "I will. Go quickly, or it'll be even harder to part."

Zhou Weiqing held her shoulders and bent his head low. Looking at her beautiful eyes starting to mist over, he gave a light kiss on her lips and said softly: "When we reach the Fei Li Imperial Family's Military Academy, there won't be anyone to control us anymore, can we do 'it' then?"

“Your mind is always so dirty!” Shangguan Bing’er’s tears broke into laughter and she punched him lightly on the shoulders.

Zhou Weiqing laughed heartily, saying: “It has to do with my happiness, how can I not fight for it. Alright I’m going to head off first.” As he finished speaking, he turned and ran off, quickly disappearing around a corner.

Looking at his disappearing figure, Shangguan Bing’er stood there for a while, tears brimming in her eyes. After a while, she finally recovered and headed back home as well.

Zhou Weiqing ran off very quickly, not because he was in a rush to leave, but because he couldn’t bear to leave as well, couldn’t bear to see Shangguan Bing’er crying, and he was afraid he wouldn’t be able to resist giving up his promise to Huyan Aobo and staying to accompany her.

Returning home for two days and accompanying his mother, Zhou Weiqing finally decided to head to the Palace. First was to visit his godfather, to bid farewell to him, and the other reason was of course regarding his betrothal to Difuya.

“What? You want to dissolve the betrothal? No way.” The Heavenly Bow Empire Palace, study room. Di Fengling was dressed in the royal robes, seated at the dragon seat, and he rejected Zhou Weiqing’s request without hesitation.

Zhou Weiqing gave a bitter smile and said: “Godfather, you know

that Difuya doesn't like me at all, and she looks down on me, furthermore with my looks, I am not worthy of her!"

Di Fengling gave a humph, sizing up Zhou Weiqing before saying: "What's wrong with your looks? You're tall big and strong, what's wrong with that? Anyway, like or not, that's not her choice to make. Furthermore, you're no longer the same as before, you have already Awakened your Heavenly Jewels and become a Heavenly Jewel Master, how could I possibly find a better match than you in the whole empire?! Dissolving the betrothal, that's impossible, don't you know that a King's word isn't easily broken? Hmph, I, your father, being your father-in-law, is it a shameful thing for you?"

"I..." Zhou Weiqing stared at Di Fengling with his mouth agape. Although Di Fengling wasn't a Jewel Master, Zhou Weiqing was still like a little child in front of him. After all, since young, Di Fengling had seen him grown up, and was even more like a father to him than his own father. Even after knowing that his meridians were blocked and he couldn't cultivate, Di Fengling still treated him the same. It could be said that besides his own father, the person Zhou Weiqing feared and respected the most was this godfather, who was filled with the aura and authority of a king. "Godfather... I already have someone I love." Zhou Weiqing said tentatively.

"Oh? Who is it? Can she be prettier than my Difuya? Little Wei ah, I know that Difuya that child hurt you previously, but these few years she has also changed a lot. As a man, you shouldn't be so petty."

“Godfather, I’m telling the truth! I’ve already personally asked for that girl’s hand in marriage and gotten her agreement. Furthermore, we’ve already ... done ‘it’. All that’s left is to give you a bouncing god-grandson. I have to be accountable to her as well.”

“What?!” Di Fengling stared at Zhou Weiqing. Although he knew about Zhou Weiqing Awakening his Heavenly Jewels, regarding what happened between Zhou Weiqing and Shangguan Bing’er, how could Admiral Zhou possibly have the face to tell him that. As a result, he naturally did not know.

“You little brat, how old are you only? And you’ve already done it with her? You... Sigh... “ Di Fengling stood up from his dragon seat. Just as Zhou Weiqing thought he was about to get a scolding, he heard his godfather sigh and say: “Well, I guess I can’t blame you. Kids these days, they grow up so fast. If I had known this would happen, I should have held Difuya’s marriage to you earlier, then you wouldn’t [go out and pluck wild flowers!](#)”

“Ah?” What type of situation was this? For a moment, Zhou Weiqing was bamboozled, wondering if Difuya was really Di Fengling’s daughter or if he was Di Fengling’s son. After all, Di Fengling seemed too obviously on his side.

“Little Wei, you must remember. The most important to a man is power, once you have power, then you can have confidence in yourself. A confident man is attractive to women. Godfather isn’t against you having several wives, but you must remember to have restraint. Doing that too much isn’t good for you as well. Understand?”

Looking at Di Fengling telling him that in a serious face, Zhou Weiqing was twitching in his heart. He suddenly felt that his godfather was almost like his teacher, both supporting him to chase more girls. The only difference was that one was telling him to do so with a perverted face, and the other was telling him in a matter-of-fact way, with a serious, dignified air. Yet, in truth, they were saying the same thing. “Godfather, about the betrothal...” Zhou Weiqing asked hopefully.

Di Fengling gave him a glare: “I, Your Father, already allowed you to marry little wives, you’re still arguing with me? Hmph, shoo! Let me tell you, Difuya is also in the Fei Li Imperial Family Military Academy, you two better get along well. After graduation, I will personally hold the wedding ceremony for you both.” Zhou Weiqing opened his mouth to say something else, but Di Fengling had already swept out of the room, not giving him a chance to speak any further.

Ugh! Zhou Weiqing was rather depressed now. What am I going to tell Bing’er now? Still, he soon came up with another plan. So, Difuya will also be in the Military Academy? Hmph, didn’t she say she would rather marry a pig or a dog than me? I, Your Father, will let you know what a true rogue, a true scoundrel is, and she will know what real pain is! After graduation, she will naturally agree to come with me to dissolve the marriage together with godfather. Worse come to worse, I’ll have to run away with Bing’er. Heh heh.

As for Di Fengling who had just walked out of the study room, he had a faint smile on his face, as he thought to himself. Little Brat, trying to fight with I, Your Father, you’re still too young and naive to do so! Difuya, you can’t let me down. I specially sent you to the Fei Li Military Academy to let you snatch that little brat’s heart.

Hua Feng has already told me that Little Wei's future will definitely outstrip Big Bro Zhou. With my daughter's beauty, how could she not capture his heart?

Alas, if Di Fengling knew who that the girlfriend Zhou Weiqing was referring to was the top beauty in the Empire, Shangguan Bing'er, he probably would not be so optimistic.

After he exited the palace, Zhou Weiqing went straight to Shangguan Bing'er's house. In the two years they were at the Heavenly Bow Unit, they had returned every year, and he had occasionally accompanied her over, and was thus rather familiar with the route.

Shangguan Bing'er stayed in a rather ordinary small house in the commoner part of town; even after she had been awarded the noble title of Viscount, they did not move. Of course, it wasn't that Shangguan Bing'er was unwilling to move, as she wanted to let her mother stay in a better environment. However, Tang Xian insisted that she was used to staying there and refused to move.

When Zhou Weiqing arrived, Shangguan Bing'er was in the garden with her mother planting vegetables. The garden was rather small, taking up about half of their already rather small courtyard. Zhou Weiqing stood at the entrance, looking at the beautiful mother and daughter pair planting in the gardens, and couldn't help but stare entranced.

"Why don't you come in?" Although Tang Xian had not even glanced in his direction, her voice rang forth.

“Hello Aunty.” Zhou Weiqing grinned and entered the courtyard. Seeing him, a joyful look crossed Shangguan Bing’er’s face, but it was quickly replaced by a sad look. After all, they were about to part for a few months, and she was feeling rather gloomy in her heart.

Tang Xian stood up, and even her simple clothing couldn’t hide her beauty. She smiled at Zhou Weiqing and said: “Little Fatty, from what Bing’er said, you’re headed to the Flying Hill City?”

In front of Tang Xian, Zhou Weiqing was always at his most honest and well behaved, and he quickly nodded his head and said: “Yup! I’m already 16 years old, and I promised Huyan Teacher to head over to learn from him.”

Tang Xian nodded and said: “Little Fatty, there are two things that you must remember. First of all, do not spend too much time and energy on learning how to create Consolidating Equipment Scrolls. The sheer amount of time needed to master it is extremely taxing, and it will definitely affect your cultivation. With your Elemental Jewel Attributes, you have just too great a talent to waste.” Zhou Weiqing quickly agreed. Towards Shangguan Bing’er’s mysterious mother, he was rather respectful and fearful, and his mother’s admonishment to him to listen to her was still fresh in his mind.

Tang Xian smiled faintly and continued: “The second thing is... When you Store Skills, do try your best to always store as many Control Type Skills as possible. Remember, you can never have too many Control Skills. Do you understand what I mean?”

Zhou Weiqing said honestly: “Not really.”

Tang Xian laughed and said: “You’re at least honest about that. Simply put, every time a Heavenly Jewel Master uses a skill, there will be a short period of time they will be unable to use it again. For example, with your cultivation level, once you use your Touch of Darkness, within 10 seconds you are likely unable to continue using again. Am I right?”

finding women outside / having mistresses

Chapter 34 – Ring of Concealment (3)

Zhou Weiqing was rather shocked in his heart, as what Tang Xian said was totally correct. After lots of experimentation, he had found out that he indeed required ten seconds after using the Touch of Darkness before he could use it again. This wasn't a matter of a lack of Heavenly Energy, but was the recovery period after the Darkness Attribute was used.

Tang Xian continued saying: “Ten seconds might seem very short to you now, but as your power levels grow higher, ten seconds is more than sufficient to decide your life and death ten times over. The more Control Skills you have, the more they can coordinate and overlap, and the initiative you have in the battlefield against your enemies. If you manage to control your enemies, you will be able to defeat or kill them easily. No matter how strong he is, as long as he is Controlled by you permanently, he will not even have the chance to counterattack. At the same time, a strong Heavenly Jewel Master usually has extremely strong defences. If you Control him and attack him once, you might not be able to kill him off. Under such circumstance, you will need to continue Controlling with different skills. Remember, while companions are important, none can compare in terms of reliability to yourself. Never put your life in another person's hands, if you want to be powerful, you have to first learn how to control yourself.”

“Control yourself” Zhou Weiqing repeated the words, all of a sudden he felt as if a door had been opened in his mind. ‘Control yourself’ those words seemed so simple, yet with so many hidden profound secrets and deeper meaning behind it.

In an abrupt motion, Tang Xian raised her hand and a grey light

shot forth towards Zhou Weiqing. Subconsciously, he raised his hands and caught it, only to see it was a black ring. As he examined it closely, he found it was totally black, not reflecting any light at all, and seemed rather ordinary.

Tang Xian stroked Shangguan Bing'er's hair tenderly as she said: "Little Fatty, that ring is called the Ring of Concealment, and it can be considered Bing'er's dowry that I'm giving you. If you wear it on the ring finger of your left hand, and circulate some Heavenly Energy within, you can change the look of your Alexandrite Cat's Eye into any of your Elemental Attributes, thus concealing its identity."

Zhou Weiqing was overjoyed. This item might be pretty useless to most people, but it was an extreme treasure for him. Not only could he prevent any trouble arising from anyone discovering his Alexandrite Cat's Eye, he could also use it to trick the enemies he was facing but allowing them to surprising them with an Elemental Skill they would never expect. It was as if this item was custom made for him!

"Aunty... uhh, no, Mum, since this is Bing'er's dowry, then I shall not be polite." Zhou Weiqing quickly wore it on his ring finger delightedly, causing Shangguan Bing'er to flush in embarrassment as she hugged her mother's arm.

Tang Xian smiled faintly and said: "Little Fatty, remember, if I find that you hurt Bing'er, I will take back the ring, along with your life."

Although she was smiling as she said that, Zhou Weiqing felt a

chill down his spine and he could only grin foolishly and not speak.

Tang Xian said: “You two chat a while, I’ll head in first.” As she said that, she looked at Zhou Weiqing before heading back inside.

As soon as Tang Xian left, Zhou Weiqing relaxed noticeably. In a few steps, he had ran over to Shangguan Bing’er’s side, hugging her. She cried out in surprise: “Quick let go of me, my mum will see us!”

Zhou Weiqing grinned and said: “Our mother has already confirmed our relationship, she won’t mind seeing us. Come, give your husband a kiss.”

Shangguan Bing’er lifted her hand to cover his mouth. “Don’t play anymore. Little Fatty, let me lean on you for a while okay?”

Zhou Weiqing started, and his gaze turned soft as he put her down, softly enveloping her in a warm hug. He then told her everything that had happened in the palace and his own thoughts.

“If you do not marry Her Highness, can you get pass His Majesty and your father?”

Zhou Weiqing said solemnly: “Bing’er, do not worry. I will do my best to distinguish myself and gain merits for the country. No matter what, I will never marry Difuya. I like you more not because you’re more beautiful than her, but because your character is so much better than hers. In my heart, you are so

much better than her, perfect to me. Bing'er, I love you." Shangguan Bing'er's brow quivered and she hugged him closer.

Zhou Weiqing stayed for almost 4 hours before leaving reluctantly. However, before he left, he passed the Spatial Ring to Shangguan Bing'er. After all, she would have to head to Fei Li Empire alone in a few months time, and he would feel better if she had Da Huang and Er Huang together with her for protection.

After leaving Bing'er's house, Zhou Weiqing returned home to bid his mother goodbye, before packing up his things, shouldering his Black Dawn Bow, and leaving the Heavenly Bow City towards the Fei Li Empire.

Zhou Weiqing's current cultivation was a huge difference from the past, and as soon as he left the Heavenly Bow City, the eleven energy whirlpools from the Death Acupuncture Points he had broken through all started spinning at top speed, greedily drawing in energy from the atmosphere and replenishing his energy while he charged forth into the Stars Forest, taking a straight-line path towards Fei Li Empire. At this time, six Death Acupuncture Points of the second portion of his Immortal Deity Technique had already been broken through.

The second portion of the Immortal Deity Technique were the eight Death Acupuncture Points on the back, and the ones that he had broken through were as follows: The Fei Shu Death Acupuncture Point at the 3rd section of the spinous process of thoracic vertebra, the Jue Yin Shu Death Acupuncture Point at the 4th section, Xin Shu Death Acupuncture Point at the 5th section, Jian Shu Death Acupuncture Point at the 2nd section of the

spinous process of lumbar vertebra, the Ming Men Death Acupuncture Point between 2nd and 3rd portion, and the Zhi Shi Death Acupuncture Point which was 3 inches from the Ming Men Death Acupuncture Point.

As compared to the five Death Acupuncture Points of the first portion, the second portion's Death Acupuncture Points were a lot worse, many of them can instantly cause death. In this two years, although Zhou Weiqing seemed to have cultivated extremely quickly, almost catching up to Shangguan Bing'er, but whenever he broke through a Death Acupuncture Point, it was a painful battle for life and death. Furthermore, the sheer pain he had to go through made him almost feel like ending his own life, torturing all his senses. Luckily, every time he broke through his Death Acupuncture Points, he had Shangguan Bing'er nearby to accompany him. When he was breaking through the Ming Men Death Acupuncture Point, the intense pain had almost made him go crazy and bite his own tongue off, and it was Shangguan Bing'er who shoved her arm into his mouth, and up till now, there was still the bite mark visible due to that incident.

The Immortal Deity Technique was simple to cultivate, and extremely fast, but the pain it brought was the drawback. However, its good points were also clear, currently with his eleven energy whirlpools spinning at the same time, Zhou Weiqing's cultivation rate was many times faster than previously. Even though the amount of Heavenly Energy required was now much larger, but his cultivation rate had not slowed. The greatest benefit was of course the sheer speed at which his energy regenerated; when using skills during battle, his energy reserves could last almost as long as his teacher Mu En, who was already at the 5th level of the Heavenly Shen Energy Stage. From there, you could tell how overpowered the Immortal Deity Technique was.

At the same time, as he broke through more Death Acupuncture Points, the stronger his Immortal Deity Shield was. With eleven energy whirlpools, the shield's defense was much stronger. Since it was automatically triggered upon any attacks, he was nearly immune to any ordinary arrows by now.

“Fat Cat, I say, shouldn't you turn big and let me ride you?” Zhou Weiqing tweaked the ears of the Little White Tiger which was nestled comfortably in his arms, snoozing.

“Wuu wuuu” Fat Cat gave a small cry, then ignored him, going back to rest.

Zhou Weiqing said exasperatedly: “You little thing, you can clearly grow bigger, and there is no one else around now. You better serve your master well now! These two years, I've fed you well, and even accompanied you to sleep every night, yet you're still ignoring me! Hmph, be careful or I, Your Father, will beat you! Look at Da Huang and Er Huang, at least I can ride them, you're so useless compared to them.”

When it heard that, Fat Cat opened its eyes angrily, and gave two furious howls, as if saying How dare you compare me to those two stupid bears!

Alas, Zhou Weiqing could do nothing about Fat Cat. Ever since that day when this little fellow had saved them all, it had never turned big again. Although he said he fed it well, that was rather against his conscience. After all, these two years, that little thing

had not ate or drank a single thing, nor had it grown at all, with the only difference being the change in its fur. By now, Zhou Weiqing had grown used to it being by his side, and playing and teasing it had also become a favourite past-time.

...

7 days later. Flying Hill City.

Rushing at his maximum speed, Zhou Weiqing easily made his way to the city as he was already familiar with the route. Previously, when he had entered the Heavenly Bow Unit, he had written to Huyan Aobo about his circumstances, lest his teacher think he was still in the normal army camp and went looking for him. After entering the Flying Hill City, Zhou Weiqing quickly headed to the little courtyard where Huyan Aobo stayed. However, before he could knock on the door, he heard a loud booming laughter sounding out in pride.

“Wahaha, hahaha! I, Your Father have finally succeeded after two years! Who says that only Zong Stage Consolidated Equipment Masters are able to create Socketing Scrolls! I, Your Father, have also succeeded! Wahaha, if not for the fact that I wasn’t a Heavenly Jewel Master, I would have long become a Zong Stage Consolidated Equipment Master!”

“Old Huyan, you really succeeded?” Another excited voice sounded out.

“Yes! I finally succeeded after two years. This little thing is even

tougher to make than Consolidated Equipment Scrolls.”

Zhou Weiqing tapped on the door, thinking to himself: What did this Huyan Teacher make this time, to be so excited? Taking two years to create a scroll? That must be something good! Could it be for me? Heh Heh!

“Didn’t you see the sign at the door?” Huyan Aobo’s impatient voice came from within.

Only then did Zhou Weiqing see a sign hung at the side of the door, on it was written: “Not selling Consolidated Equipment Scrolls.”

“Huyan Teacher, it’s me, Zhou Weiqing!” He could only shout out helplessly.

Strangely, as soon as he shouted that, silence descended upon the house. After a few seconds, the door opened and Huyan Aobo and Feng Yu’s surprised faces popped out. Huyan Aobo blinked at him and said: “Little Brat, have you taken up fortune telling?”

Chapter 35 – Socketing Scroll (1)

Zhou Weiqing started, then said: “Huyan Teacher, you’ve gotten fatter! What do you mean I’ve taken up fortune telling?” Looking at the round Huyan Aobo, Zhou Weiqing asked curiously.

After two years apart, Feng Yu did not look any different, but Huyan Aobo clearly seemed older, with more white hair and black circles around his eyes.

Feng Yu said: “What he means is, your arrival was just too coincidental. He had just completed making a Socketing Scroll, and you, this little brat, arrived the next moment. Isn’t that some fortune telling?”

Zhou Weiqing beamed and said: “Is it for me? Huyan Teacher, I’ve already gotten my second set of Jewels, but I followed your instructions and did not Consolidate Equipment.”

Huyan Aobo lifted his hand and pulled Zhou Weiqing into the courtyard, while Feng Yu quickly closed the door. “Come in first, then we’ll talk.”

Zhou Weiqing followed the two into Huyan Aobo’s workshop, only to see it was messy with papers and unknown objects strewn all over the place; they were likely used for creating Consolidating Equipment Scrolls.

Zhou Weiqing saw Huyan Aobo’s mysterious and smug look on his face, and asked curiously: “Teacher, you’re already a

Consolidated Equipment Grandmaster, did you need to be so happy about making a Consolidated Equipment Scroll?”

Huyan Aobo gave a humph and said: “What do you know! I, Your Father, did not create any ordinary Consolidated Equipment Scroll! Look!” As he said that, he lifted up his hands, and a small gold shard the size of a fingernail appeared in his hands.

On first glance, the round shaped gold shard did not seem impressive, but as Zhou Weiqing examined it closely, he couldn't help but draw in a sharp intake of breath.

On top of the tiny gold shard, there were many thin and fine lines and various etchings. They seemed to have some sort of rule about them, and there were even extremely tiny gemstones embedded in the midst of the etchings, with rubies, gold-green cat's eyes, and even the Darkness Heavenly Jewel Masters' black opals, as well as some other things Zhou Weiqing wasn't familiar with.

On just that small gold shard, there were more than a hundred tiny gemstones embedded in a unique formation. Zhou Weiqing could sense that a strange energy wave was circulating in this gold shard. Even if he did not know the cost of the shard, just the exquisite craftsmanship alone was worthy of praise. “Teacher, such fine craftsmanship, what is it for?” Zhou Weiqing looked up at Huyan Aobo.

Huyan Aobo held out his chest proudly and said in a smug tone: “That is called a Socketing Scroll. Do not be misled by its small size, it is worth a huge amount, or rather it can even be called priceless. Such a Socketing Scroll would be worth a minimum of a

million gold coins in an auction house. The previous time you came, you saw three Consolidated Equipment Scrolls, and the price of the three of them added together would still be worth less than this Socketing Scroll! The cost of creating this alone took me 200,000 gold coins, and that isn't even including the amount wasted over the two years, which is probably around 100,000 or more gold coins."

Zhou Weiqing said curiously: "It looks very different from the previous Consolidated Equipment Scrolls!"

Huyan Aobo gave a humph: "You ignorant brat, of course it's not the same, that's because it isn't a Consolidated Equipment Scroll. A Socketing Scroll, as the name suggests, will allow you to create an additional socket on your current Consolidated Equipment."

With your Overlord Bow as an example, it originally has one socket, which means you can only socket a single Elemental Jewel. With this Socketing Scroll, you can add another socket, allowing you to socket two Elemental Jewels. With that, when you attack, you will be able to activate two Elemental Skills... That effect of that, you shouldn't need me to describe more right? This is even more useful for a little brat like you who has so many elemental attributes, and having a second socket on an equipment is worth at least ten times more than the first socket.

Zhou Weiqing asked curiously: "Why don't you just create the equipment with two sockets then?"

Huyan Aobo looked at him with a complicated expression on his face, saying: "Do you think I haven't thought of that? It's just that

I am not able to do so. To create a 2 socket Consolidated Equipment Scroll, we need to be at least a Zong Stage Consolidated Equipment Master; that is to say, the minimum requirement is to be a Heavenly Jewel Master. I will never be able to do it, but I hope that you can do so in the future. Zong Stage Consolidated Equipment Master's every creation is like a demi godly weapon, do you think they are so easily obtained?"

"Here, take this and use it on your Overlord Bow." As he said that, Huyan Aobo passed the Socketing Scroll to Zhou Weiqing.

Zhou Weiqing was astounded, saying: "Teacher, this is way too valuable, I cannot accept it." Although he had always felt that a disciple should take advantage of teacher, this Socketing Scroll was just too valuable. Not even counting the price of more than a million gold coins, just the fact that it had taken Huyan Aobo two whole years of labour to craft it, such was the value.

"You fool, don't you understand? I, Your Father, created this specially for you. Otherwise, what did you think I spent so much time, energy and effort for? It's not possible for me to become a Zong Stage Master, isn't it much more relaxing and profitable for me to create the ordinary Consolidating Equipment Scrolls?" Huyan Aobo said exasperatedly.

Zhou Weiqing's eyes widened: "Teacher, you mean, you created this specially for me?"

Huyan Aobo nodded and said: "Since I asked you not to Consolidate any other Equipment for your Physical Jewels, I still need to ensure that you have sufficient self defence capabilities. As

long as you add an additional socket to your Overlord Bow, even though it might not be equal to those demi godly weapons of a Zong Stage Master, but it will at least be close. Alas, I just do not have the vigour remaining to create another one, otherwise you'll be able to have 3 sockets! Hmph!"

Taking in a deep breath, Zhou Weiqing's gaze turned resolute, and with a loud Putong sound, he knelt in front of Huyan Aobo. Receiving the Socketing Scroll seriously, he said in a solemn tone: "I, Zhou Weiqing, swear by my Heavenly Jewels. In this life, no matter what price I pay, I will definitely become a Zong Stage Consolidated Equipment Master or higher and complete Huyan Teacher's wish. If I fail to accomplish this, I will be punished by the Heavens!"

Zen's notes:

It's a rather short release this time, the reason as stated below. I normally do not translate the author's notes, but this one really touched me. I can imagine how much effort it takes to write a story day after day like that, just like how Huyan Aobo used his vigor and life energy creating that Socketing Scroll. I'm not sure how many of you watched Bakuman, but man, that really reminded me of the uncle from the show. teardrop

Author's note:

Hi, I'm San Shao's wife, posting this chapter on his behalf. Extremely sorry that this chapter is much shorter than usual. This morning, he started having a fever. As it was his birthday, he

refused to eat medicine. Alas, his temperature shot to above 39, so he took the medicine. After sleeping most of the day, he actually reached 43 degrees. Even while in a drowsy state from taking medicine, he still told me to remember to post the chapters at 5pm today. Earlier, I saw many of you friends and readers wishing him a Happy Birthday, and I thank you all on his behalf. Looking at him, my heart really hurts, this is his birthday after all! I apologise, my emotions are rather ragged today, but I really wish that you all can wish him a speedy recovery as well. It has been 7 years, and I've seen him writing like this everyday. In the past, he was extremely healthy, but now he is starting to get sick more often. Once again, apologies for the single short chapter today. I really do hope that he does write lesser, I'm sorry, if you must blame someone, do blame me instead...

Chapter 35 – Socketing Scroll (2)

When Huyan Aobo said that he had spent two years creating the Socketing Scroll just for him, Zhou Weiqing felt an uncontrollable warm feeling welling up within him. Looking at Huyan Aobo's clearly aged features and the dim light in his eyes, it tugged deeply at his heartstrings. He did not know how else to express his feelings, and so he knelt down in front of Huyan Aobo and gave a solemn oath. This time, he was a hundred percent sincere, and did not have any sly thoughts in his mind.

Huyan Aobo started a little, a strange gleam in his eyes. However, a moment later, he sighed and helped Zhou Weiqing up. "Little Wei, I'm actually very conflicted in my heart. To be honest, I really do want you to learn from me and to become a Zong Stage Consolidated Equipment. However, I'm also afraid that by doing so, it will ruin your future. With your talent, you can be an unbelievably powerful Heavenly Jewel Master... but if you spend so much time and effort on learning how to create Consolidated Equipment Scrolls, I'm afraid..."

Zhou Weiqing did not expect that Huyan Aobo would warn him like that, saying exactly the same thing as what his future mother-in-law Tang Xian had said.

With a smile, Zhou Weiqing said: "Teacher, it's too late for that. I have already sworn by my Heavenly Jewels, and I will not be able to go back on my word. Furthermore, who knows if your disciple, I, am a genius at creating Consolidating Equipment Scrolls as well? I can do both!"

Huyan Aobo shook his head helplessly, saying: “You, this little brat, are always so optimistic. I really hope you can keep that mentality when you start learning. If it were that easy to become a Consolidated Scroll Master, the price of the scrolls wouldn’t be so high. Come, use this Socketing Scroll first, and we’ll start your lessons tomorrow.”

“Alright.” Zhou Weiqing lifted up his right hand and focused his will, and his Heavenly Jewels appeared. Of course, two sets appeared this time round, instead of the one that he had the last time he was here. On his right wrist, two pure Icy Jade Physical Jewels revolved, and with a quick flash of light, the Overlord Bow appeared in his hand in a small cloud of icy mist.

The current Overlord Bow seemed a little different from its previous look; the entire bow seemed thicker and heavier, and the golden tattoos which were originally only on the body of the bow had now extended even to the bowstring. The now golden bowstring was extremely eye catching, with swirling light around the bow, causing it to seem even more domineering.

Indeed, as Zhou Weiqing got his second set of Heavenly Jewels, his Overlord Bow and all his Stored Skills all evolved once, and were considered ‘leveled up’. With so many Stored Skills for his first Jewel, Hua Feng told him not to rush into Storing more skills for his second Jewel yet.

“So quick? Little Wei, what’s your cultivation level of Heavenly Energy now?” Feng Yu, who was standing at the side, was surprised by his having two sets of Jewels and couldn’t help but ask.

Zhou Weiqing gave a big grin and said: “Level eleven, just one more level and I’ll complete the Heavenly Jing Stage and breakthrough to the Heavenly Shen Energy Stage.”

As soon as he said that, he heard the sounds of two deep breaths, as Huyan Aobo and Feng Yu had shocked expressions on their faces. After the passage of two years, Zhou Weiqing was only 16 years old. To be able to cultivate up to his second set of Jewels in two years was already very good, indeed four levels in such a short time was already considered genius level. However, they truly had not expected that in such a short time he had raised seven levels to eleven! He was just 16 years old! He was just one step away from reaching the Heavenly Shen Energy, which for a Heavenly Jewel Master meant reaching the Zun Stage; and for Heavenly Jewel Masters it was also when they were no longer considered newbies.

Feng Yu muttered: “Old Huyan, I’m starting to think that letting Little Wei learn to create Consolidated Equipment Scrolls from you is a big mistake.”

Huyan Aobo gave a bitter smile and said: “I really do not know if it’s lucky for me to choose this little rascal as my disciple or not.”

While they were speaking, Zhou Weiqing had taken up the Socketing Scroll, and under Huyan Aobo’s directions, he circulated his Heavenly Energy into the scroll.

As soon as his Heavenly Energy entered the small gold shard, it lit up like a glittering gemstone, various colours shining and

mixing, and a torrential energy seemed to surge like a wave through the room.

Huyan Aobo had a very serious look on his face as he waved his right hand, a layer of silver light expanded out from his body, enveloping Zhou Weiqing and preventing the energy from the Socketing Scroll from leaking out. After all, there were many Consolidating Equipment Masters living nearby, and if the energy from the scroll leaked out, it could attract unnecessary attention and cause trouble for them. “Press it to the Overlord Bow, right about an inch above the original socket.” Huyan Aobo cried out.

A flash appeared in Zhou Weiqing’s eyes as he maintained his output of Heavenly Energy into the Overlord Bow and the Socketing Scroll, as he used his left hand to press the scroll to the bow according to Huyan Aobo’s instructions. In the instance when the two met, Zhou Weiqing shuddered, as did the Overlord Bow. Soon after, he could clearly see the Socketing Scroll melting into the Overlord Bow, and gradually a small socket formed in the corresponding position.

One of the reasons why the Socketing Scroll was so expensive was also because of its absolute success rate. Although it was extremely difficult to create, it was rather easy to use, and was thus considered an extremely rare treasure. After all, which Heavenly Jewel Master did not want another socket on their Consolidated Equipment? If cultivation level of Heavenly Energy and number of Heavenly Jewels was the basic hardware of power, then Consolidated Equipment, Stored Skills would be the software. Hardware was extremely important, but often the software was key in determining the outcome of fights, especially in fights between Heavenly Jewel Masters of the same level.

When Zhou Weiqing felt that his Heavenly Energy had been drained by a third, he heard a soft Ting sound, and the entire Socketing Scroll had melded into the Overlord Bow, the thick gold light instantly enveloping the entire bow before spinning around. In the next instant, the Overlord Bow vanished, turning back into the Icy Jade Physical Jewel and returning to revolve around his right wrist.

“Done!” Huyan Aobo exclaimed with relief. Although he knew that in theory his Socketing Scroll was supposed to have a 100% success, it was only until it had actually succeeded that he was reassured. “After adding the socket, you will not be able to use the Overlord Bow for the next 3 days as it needs a period of recovery to complete the 2nd socket.”

Zhou Weiqing laughed heartily and said: “Thank you teacher!”

Huyan Aobo waved his hands and said: “You’ve traveled a long way, go and rest for now. I also need some rest for today.” As he said that, he walked towards his bedroom. Zhou Weiqing could clearly see that even with Huyan Aobo’s high level of cultivation, his steps were rather shaky. That showed how much energy and heart he had expended these two years.

Originally, Zhou Weiqing thought that with Huyan Aobo’s state of exhaustion, he would need to at least rest for a few days. However, early next morning, he was awoken by his teacher at dawn.

After a simple breakfast, Huyan Aobo led Zhou Weiqing to the simple room which he had stayed before. There was a small table with a bunch of materials on it. Zhou Weiqing thought to himself: This teacher sure is eager!

Huyan Aobo was clearly still not in a good state, clearly the day of rest was insufficient for him to recover completely. “Little Wei, your talent is just too outstanding, especially with the Alexandrite Cat’s Eye with that mix of superb elemental attributes. Teacher does not want to waste too much of your cultivation time as well, so I hope that you will only spend 2 hours a day practicing making Consolidated Equipment Scrolls. We will begin your lessons today.”

As soon as he started talking about Consolidated Equipment Scrolls, Huyan Aobo looked a lot more energetic, with a light in his eyes. “Before I teach you how to create Consolidated Equipment Scrolls, let me ask you. Do you know what our personal Power Jewels are? Or perhaps, use a simple line to describe our Power Jewels.”

Zhou Weiqing thought for awhile and said: “Our Power Jewels are part of our bodies.”

Huyan Aobo smiled faintly and said: “You’re right. The Power Jewels are indeed part of our bodies. In fact, they are full of life, and aren’t just simple, dead jewels, no matter Physical Jewels or Elemental Jewels. When our Power Jewels Awaken, it is actually our inborn innate essence being unlocked, granting us the power. I’ll talk about Elemental Jewels later, and concentrate on Physical Jewels first. To me, Physical Jewels are like the meat, bones or

even internal organs of our body, or they can even be likened to an embryo. As for our Consolidated Equipment Scrolls, what they do is to let them grow into their final form. It can be said that we are like an architect, inputting our designs into the Physical Jewel, allowing it to grow and form into their final forms according to our designs, trying our best to let it best release its hidden potential. As for this design, it requires Spatial Energy to be input into the Physical Jewels, that is the reason why the very basis of Consolidated Equipment Masters is the Spatial Attribute.”

“Do you still remember how excited I was when I knew you had both Spatial and Wind attributes? That is because the Wind Attribute will allow you to increase your speed, and it is also much more controllable than just the agility boost from Physical Jewels, as you can control it with your will. As such, as long as you can successfully complete a Consolidated Equipment Scroll, you will always be able to do it with increasing speed, and you will be able to improve more with practice, and it is considered to have the effect of half the work, twice the effect.”

“When many Consolidated Equipment Masters train, they focus and get gridlocked in a rather common misconception. That is the endless chase to improve quality and ignoring speed. However, I personally feel that this method isn’t correct, as my view is that speed and quality are equally important. For example, even if you can make the best Consolidated Equipment Scrolls, but you only make one in your whole life, what use is that? Although the number of Jewel Masters are much lower than any other profession, but they are still substantial, and the requirement for Consolidated Equipment is just too huge. Many Jewel Masters aren’t able to Consolidate Equipment for all their Physical Jewels because they aren’t able to afford the scrolls.”

As he said up till there, Huyan Aobo's voice turned stronger: "My dream is that one day, every Jewel Master will have enough Consolidated Equipment Scrolls to use..."

"Little Wei, now, let me start telling you the basics of creating a Consolidated Equipment Scroll..."